





# HISTORY'S STRONGEST SENIOR BROTHER

BOOK 11

*August Eagle*

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

# History's Strongest Senior Brother

(史上最强师兄)

by

**August Eagle**

(八月飞鹰)

# Synopsis

---

The first time Yan Zhaoge crossed worlds, he landed in a martial warrior civilization that was at the peak of prosperity. He ended up in the book storage building of the the Divine Palace, which collected and preserved the classics of the entire world from all fields of knowledge. However, a world class calamity struck soon after and even the Divine Palace was destroyed.

Yan Zhaoge's soul once again crossed over, but this time he arrived in the same world, except countless years have passed.

With his brain full of rare books and classics from the era of peak prosperity, Yan Zhaoge's second crossing over to the present era was like a gamer who was used to playing hell mode suddenly finding himself playing the game on easy.

That was just way too awesome.

But before that, he needs to fix a certain problem.

“I'm not a main character? In fact, I'm actually the main character's love rival and the antagonistic Mr. Perfect senior martial brother? This script is wrong!”

# Copyright by Lisa Hayes

---

All rights reserved.

English Translation by incarneous @ [Incarneous Wordpress](#), Meh  
@ [Volare Novels](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

# HSSB 1001: Yan Di

---

Hearing Yan Di's words, Yan Zhaoge's gaze involuntarily drifted again to the chaotic clouds of starlight above his head that resembled lotuses.

"It was not you who found it, but it that found you?" Yan Zhaoge repeated, "By its own will?"

Yan Di was silent for a moment before he said, "I do not believe that this was a coincidence."

"...Because?" Yan Zhaoge asked as he pondered.

As Yan Di extended his hand, the Grand Simplicity Splendour Cloud above his head drifted downwards, resembling a small, dim, intricate lotus which silently hovered above his palm.

"The very first time I set eyes on this Grand Simplicity Splendour Cloud, I felt an inexplicable, exceptional sense of closeness to it," Yan Di's expression turned increasingly strange, "Also, I instantly realised its identity right there and then."

"While I am extremely familiar with the Grand Simplicity Splendour Cloud, from what I remember, this should be my first time ever seeing it."

At this point, Yan Di halted slightly.

After a while, he finally ventured slowly, "It sounds rather strange, but I seemed to feel...a mother's embrace?"

Hearing this, a thoughtful look appeared on Yan Zhaoge's head as well as he carefully observed the Grand Simplicity Splendour Cloud above Yan Di's palm.

"After this Grand Simplicity Splendour Cloud ended up with me, without even having to refine it, I could already easily wield it like a part of my body, just as if..." Yan Di considered it before saying, "Just as if it had always belonged to me in the first place."

Yan Zhaoge pondered for a while before suddenly asking, “That time in the Brocade Emperor’s Minor No Hatred dao arena seems to be the first time you headed to extradimensional space?”

Raising his palm lightly as the Grand Simplicity Splendour Cloud returned above his head, Yan Di said, “That’s right, it is precisely so.”

“I too have considered what you speak of. Perhaps it had been waiting for me in extradimensional space all along. When I arrived in extradimensional space, it automatically came to seek me out.”

Yan Di’s expression turned tranquil.

“The problem is, why?” Lightly rubbing his temples, Yan Zhaoge raised his head and looked at his father, “It was waiting for you all along, seemingly being yours in the first place. You feel a sense of closeness and familiarity with it too...”

Yan Di understood what Yan Zhaoge was implying.

He too had been suspecting the same in recent days.

“Back in the Eight Extremities World that year, when the Decimating Abyss rampaged and Broad Creed Mountain suffered a tribulation, there was chaos that occurred within our family as well.”

Yan Di said slowly, “What Yan Wendao and the others said was true.”

“I am not of my parents’ flesh and blood.”

“I learnt of all this a long time ago. Also, it was precisely Father himself who told me the truth.”

“It is just that I have always taken myself as a member of the Yan Family, and others within the family do treat me as family too. To me, that is already enough.”

“Whether or not I am the Family Head is not important to me. However, since Grandfather passed down the position to me, I

would not refuse him and leave him disappointed.”

Hearing his father’s narration, Yan Zhaoge nodded silently.

Those suspecting Yan Di’s identity at the time had possessed a letter personally penned by Yan Di’s father, Yan Zhaoge’s grandfather.

From the handwriting, it had not been forged.

Ever since then, Yan Zhaoge had basically known the truth.

“Back then, our family had still yet to move to the Heaven Domain’s Central Heaven Region as we were still at the Thunder Domain’s Zhaozhou,” A look of reminiscence appeared on Yan Di’s face, “Father picked me up in the wilderness amidst the mountains. Because of what I had on me, he ultimately brought me back to the family.”

Now, he retrieved two jade pendants, placing them before Yan Zhaoge.

These two jade pendants were exactly the same as they formed a pair.

While both were very ordinary and not very precious treasures, they were rather intricate as they possessed a beautiful appearance.

A single character was inscribed on each of these jade pendants.

‘Yan’ and ‘Di’.

Seeing this, Yan Zhaoge smacked his lips, “It may be the surnames of two people.”

He spoke no further.

It was extremely likely that one was a man and the other a woman.

Still, Yan Zhaoge knew that his father had definitely guessed this too.



“Because of this, father brought me home,” Yan Di picked up that jade pendant with the ‘Yan’ character inscribed on it, “At first, he thought that it was a child lost or abandoned by a member of our family. However, following multiple investigations, he confirmed that this was not the case.”

“While I was not a member of the family, father thought that since we were both surnamed Yan, there was fate that existed between us. Therefore, he personally adopted me.”

Now, Yan Di picked up that jade pendant with the ‘Di’ character, “I would obviously be surnamed Yan, and as for my name, this is where it originated.”

Yan Zhaoge received the two jade pendants from him, carefully appraising them one in each hand.

“Father and mother saw me as their own, and I was not unaware of this at all beforehand,” Yan Di exhaled slowly, “It was only when the family encountered danger when moving from the Thunder Domain’s Zhaozhou to the Heaven Domain’s Central Heaven Region that father told me this right before he died.”

Yan Zhaoge nodded, “In other words, Grandfather...he too did not know where you come from.”

Yan Di nodded slightly, looking at the Grand Simplicity Splendour Cloud above his head, “With so many years having passed, I am not concerned with seeking out my true origins. Still, it seems that somehow or other, the answer seems to be getting closer to me.”

Father and son exchanged looks, both shaking their heads.

It would still be fine if Yan Di’s origins were ordinary.

Yet, if there was a greater story behind it, it was very difficult to tell if it spelled calamity or fortune.

The Grand Simplicity Splendour Cloud here was indeed great. Yet, who could know that the roots of trouble were not secretly

concealed within?

Yan Zhaoge ceased in his thoughts as he instead smiled, “With this Grand Simplicity Splendour Cloud protecting you, the attacks directed at you by the myriad arts of this world will all diminish greatly in effectiveness. Many will even fail to exert any effect.”

“With it, you are virtually on undefeated ground even before entering battle with many opponents.”

Having originally already been extremely domineering as his attacks shocked the heavens, as he now gained the protection of the Grand Simplicity Splendour Cloud, Yan Di had become extremely mighty in terms of both offence and defence.

“A battle can see countless variations in an instant, and the Grand Simplicity Splendour Cloud is not absolutely impenetrable,” Yan Di remained calm, “For example, the Heaven Earth Within Sleeve of that Qing Shuzi of the Heaven Emperor’s lineage that you faced last time was considerably difficult to guard against.”

“Trapped within the sleeve, even if one is not injured, they would still have lost the initiative.”

Yan Zhaoge smiled, “With this Grand Simplicity Splendour Cloud present, unless the Heaven Emperor comes to deal with you himself, a supreme martial art like Heaven Earth Within Sleeve that leaves most people helpless would really be useless against you. Still, speaking of the Heaven Emperor...”

“He is currently away from the World beyond Worlds, but he might return after he receives the news,” Yan Zhaoge knit his brows slightly, “After we wrecked his plans in the Royal Reed Sea, in consideration of his status, he only found trouble with the Southeastern Exalt previously, never having targeted us.”

“Now that I have slain Qing Shuzi and Daoist Leading Mist, the Heaven Emperor has a legitimate reason to directly make a move.”

Hearing this, Yan Di said mildly, “Those who kill can themselves

be killed. Since they came to encircle and kill you along with those of Wutong Slope, being slain instead due to inferior skill is just natural.”

“If the Heaven Emperor wants to come, we battle. If I am superior, I kill. If I am inferior, I am killed. This is a principle that all martial practitioners know from the very first day they begin to cultivate.”

Yan Zhaoge said, “Us killing is fine, but being killed probably wouldn’t feel all that good.”

“It is just that time waits for no man. The problem now is that time is likely running out.”

# HSSB 1002: *The momentum lies with me, I am unstoppable*

---

When Yan Zhaoge said that time was running out, it did not merely refer to the matter with the Heaven Emperor.

The Southern Exalt Zhuang Shen now truly had irreconcilable enmity with Yan Zhaoge and Broad Creed Mountain.

Phoenix Ritual Mountain's Wutong Slope's lineage had a total of three ninth level Martial Saints.

'Treasured Branch Suppressing Peak' Zhang Shuren, 'Blazing King' Peng He, and 'Phoenix Crying Southern Territory' Mao Yuansheng.

In the end, two of them had been slain by Yan Zhaoge. Adding on 'Phoenix Pupils' Yuan Xiancheng who was comparable to a ninth level Martial Saint, over half of the peak experts of Phoenix Ritual Mountain's Wutong Slope had perished at the battle at Circumference Mountain.

While one might say that Wutong Slope would never fall so long as the Southern Exalt Zhuang Shen was still around, it had still suffered a great blow to its vitality this time.

It was even the case that Zhuang Shen's own son, Zhuang Chaohui, had been killed by Yan Zhaoge.

Yan Zhaoge had rampaged through the south and slain or wounded countless martial practitioners there. As the lord of the south, it was definitely impossible for Zhuang Shen to let this go so easily.

Currently, he was in a state where no news could get to him. Still, after he received the news, he would probably be murderously charging over to the southeast.

"I will probably need to study your Grand Simplicity Splendour

Cloud more in recent days,” Yan Zhaoge said.

Yan Di said, “This is only natural. Whether you can ascend the Immortal Bridge currently depends entirely on how much you can gain from the Grand Simplicity Splendour Cloud.”

“This treasure possesses miraculous uses. I benefited greatly from it in having been able to attain new heights within such a short time.”

Yan Zhaoge smiled, “With your talents and your connection to this Grand Simplicity Splendour Cloud, you will probably have more gains in the days ahead.”

Yan Di said, “I feel much the same way. Still, it is still a bit too early to speak like this now.”

Father and son immediately sat across from each other, entering the meditative position.

The Grand Simplicity Splendour Cloud above Yan Di’s head bloomed like a lotus, its petals flickering with specks of radiance that were incomparably profound.

Yan Zhaoge raised a hand, a Taiji diagram appearing on the centre of his palm.

The Taiji diagram circulated, all things returning to nothingness as resonance was gradually formed with the Grand Simplicity Splendour Cloud above Yan Di’s head.

Besides the Taiji Yin Yang Palm, the phenomenon of chaos gradually manifested in the acupoints of Yan Zhaoge’s entire body.

The Peerless Heavenly Scripture that was his foundation began circulating as well.

There were some commonalities in the principles of the Jade Clear lineage’s Peerless Heavenly Scripture and the Grand Clear lineage’s Taiyi Fist of Grand Simplicity.

Meanwhile, as Yan Zhaoge simultaneously cultivated in the

Three Purities with the various supreme martial arts all merged into one, less effort was required for him to comprehend the principles of the Grand Simplicity Splendour Cloud at this moment.

Beneath the heavens, besides the owner of the Grand Simplicity Splendour Cloud, Yan Di, there was probably only the Brocade Emperor who might be comparable to Yan Zhaoge in terms of his speed in comprehending this Grand Simplicity Splendour Cloud.

“Pretty unique, and its connection to father is rather profound and mysterious too. Still...”

As Yan Zhaoge was comprehending and cultivating in this, Yan Di was also cultivating quietly.

At this moment, due to Yan Di's Grand Simplicity Splendour Cloud, Yan Zhaoge came into contact with the concept of his martial dao somewhat.

At this, his heart jolted slightly.

The true intent of Yan Di's martial dao was pure and refined, domineering to the extreme.

This martial true intent only belonged to Yan Di himself, seeming as though it had no direct relation to whatever martial art he cultivated in.

This was the case for the Clear Qi Profound Art as well as the Life Creation Heavenly Scripture and the Yin Yang Heavenly Scripture of the Primordial Heavenly Scriptures.

Yan Zhaoge believed that even if Yan Di had cultivated in martial arts of the Grand Clear lineage, the sword dao of the Prime Clear lineage or even devilish martial arts ever since young, things would still not be much different from how they were now.

Whether it was sabre arts, sword arts, spear arts, palm arts, fist arts or rod arts etcetera, it would ultimately still be the same.

When others cultivated in martial arts, they cultivated in them in order to raise their own strength.

When Yan Di cultivated in martial arts, it seemed as though whatever martial art he cultivated in, it would still result in a concept unique to him.

That unstoppable momentum of his resembled the splitting of the heavens and earth to its ultimate destruction with the circulation of the ultimate principles of all creation, presiding over all the other martial arts that he currently cultivated in and ruling over them as he advanced.

The momentum lies with me, I am unstoppable.

Not cultivating in the Primordial Heavenly Scriptures, even not cultivating in the Clear Qi Profound Art which had been a peak art of the Eight Extremities World, cultivating in some casual backward martial art would still not have been able to impede Yan Di's accomplishments.

In that case, while Yan Di's upper limit might have been restricted, his lower limit would still have been very high.

Besides he himself who cultivated in the Peerless Heavenly Scripture, Yan Zhaoge had never met anyone else with this same unique disposition.

No mere dweller of the pond, seeing the clouds does a dragon soar.

Also, as Yan Di's cultivation base rose, this sort of situation was becoming increasingly evident.

Normally speaking, the higher one's cultivation base, the more difficult it would be for them to advance as the time they had to spend would be much greater.

At the Martial Saint realm, any random bottleneck could stop a martial practitioner for decades, perhaps even a lifetime.

Talented geniuses advanced with a fiercer momentum, improving more quickly.

Yet, a rate of improvement like Yan Di's still rendered one gaping and tongue-tied.

His cultivation resembled his sabre, unstoppable and sweeping through all obstacles.

In this process, that rampant martial concept of his was manifested increasingly greatly, becoming clearer, purer and more refined.

Yan Zhaoge had sensed that it had been more powerful when Yan Di had first attained the Seeing Divinity stage than when he had Transcended Mortality and entered Sainthood.

Now, after he had attained the Immortal Bridge stage, it was more refined than when he had just attained the Seeing Divinity stage.

It was just that this caused Yan Zhaoge to feel much like he was getting to the bottom of a mystery.

Yan Zhaoge had already had some guesses when Yan Di had first accomplished the Seeing Divinity stage.

Sensing the true intent of Yan Di's martial dao now that he was at the Immortal Bridge stage, Yan Zhaoge felt that his guesses from back then seemed to now have been verified.

It was just that they were somewhat inconceivable, leaving even him puzzled.

What interested him even more was: Just how had this been accomplished?

Yan Zhaoge appeared to be in deep thought as he looked at the Grand Simplicity Splendour Cloud above Yan Di's head.

This cultivation session for the two of them was not something that could be finished quickly.



Yan Zhaoge would need a long time to slowly decipher and comprehend the Grand Simplicity Splendour Cloud.

In order to have more time, Yan Zhaoge would even often head to the Vast Ocean World where the time flow was faster than in the World beyond Worlds to cultivate in a quiet, peaceful environment.

The rest of the Royal Reed Sea was basically already subordinate to Broad Creed Mountain now. While Broad Creed Mountain did not expand and just stayed quietly there, the other powers still dared not overlook its existence.

During this period of time, two things that Yan Zhaoge was rather more concerned with happened.

Firstly, news had come back from Feng Yunsheng after more than two years of adventuring outside.

Sadly, it was not good news for Yan Zhaoge.

Due to some discoveries, Feng Yunsheng had headed into extradimensional space.

Whether she would meet fortune or calamity and when she might return were all totally unknown.

“This just doesn’t feel right! Isn’t it usually the husband adventuring far away outside, with the wife silently awaiting at home, praying for him?” Yan Zhaoge smiled wryly within his heart.

Of course he knew that for Feng Yunsheng who wanted to temper herself, this was a necessary path. Thus, he could only sigh bitterly to himself and entertain himself with such thoughts.

The second matter that Yan Zhaoge was rather more concerned with was that a guest had arrived from Ingenious Flying Peak.

Yan Zhaoge felt this to be quite strange. Him included, there were only a mere few people from Broad Creed Mountain who

knew about Yan Di having obtained the Grand Simplicity Splendour Cloud. Ingenious Flying Peak would definitely have had no way of learning about it.

# HSSB 1003: Humans versus Immortals

---

It was within expectations that it was not Fu Ting who came.

The aftereffects from a trip to the Immortal Court were not to be underestimated.

Still, the visitor from Ingenious Flying Peak was still rather important, possessing the same seniority as the Brocade Emperor and the Grand Plainness Origin Lady Tao Yu.

After receiving the visitor together, Yan Zhaoge and Yan Di exchanged looks.

It seemed that those of Ingenious Flying Peak were indeed not aware of the existence of the Grand Simplicity Splendour Cloud.

Required pleasantries aside, it was regarding another matter that they had come.

It was about a matter with immense import.

To put it simply, news had returned from the Brocade Emperor who had left for extradimensional space following that previous battle with Mars Halberd.

The battle at Circumference Mountain where Yan Zhaoge had slain personal disciples of the Heaven Emperor and two longtime Elders of the Southern Exalt's lineage was the most game-changing event in the World beyond Worlds in recent years.

When news was finally able to be transmitted smoothly, Ingenious Flying Peak would definitely inform the Brocade Emperor of it as soon as possible.

This was unrelated to how Fu Ting or Tao Yu felt about Yan Zhaoge, instead being a necessary thing.

Rather surprisingly, the Brocade Emperor soon sent a reply.

The contents of his reply also surpassed the predictions of many.

“He will quickly settle his matters on hand and try to return before the Heaven Emperor does. If the Heaven Emperor makes things difficult for us, he will then intervene?”

Yan Zhaoge muttered to himself before looking at his father, Yan Di, who was frowning slightly too.

The Brocade Emperor Fu Yunchi was a close acquaintance of the Southeastern Exalt Cao Jie. Thus, when Cao Jie had been facing pressure from the Heaven Emperor, the Brocade Emperor had been willing to lend his assistance.

Still, it was hard to say if the Brocade Emperor might still make a move if the Heaven Emperor next targeted Broad Creed Mountain instead.

While Yan Zhaoge was on good terms with Fu Ting and the other disciples of Red Lotus Cliff, with the Brocade Emperor having also previously invited him and Yan Di to the Minor No Hatred dao arena as guests due to thinking rather highly of them, no one could be sure how this Emperor really saw Yan Zhaoge and Broad Creed Mountain.

This was especially so when he might have to make an enemy out of another Emperor for the sake of standing up for Broad Creed Mountain.

After all, out of consideration for the stability of the global situation of the World beyond Worlds, the Three Sovereigns and Five Emperors seldom got into conflicts as they generally restricted one another most of the time.

If the Brocade Emperor knew of the existence of the Grand Simplicity Splendour Cloud, also being aware that it was in Yan Di's possession, it would be easy to explain this then.

Previously, it would not have been that easy for Yan Zhaoge to obtain direct lineage martial arts of the Grand Clear lineage from Ingenious Flying Peak's Red Lotus Cliff if he so wanted to.

While the supreme martial arts of the Jade Clear lineage that he possessed would be useful to the Brocade Emperor, they were not essential and necessary.

The current situation, however, was totally different.

Of the Five Cosmos Grand Manifestations, Ingenious Flying Peak's lineage only lacked a supreme martial art of the manifestation of Grand Simplicity.

If they could gather the Five Cosmos Grand Manifestations, the significance of this for the Brocade Emperor and Ingenious Flying Peak was far more than just the acquisition of a single martial art.

It could be said that Ingenious Flying Peak might even be willing to exchange four other of these Earlier Heaven supreme martial arts for a single Taiyi Fist of Grand Simplicity.

Giving the Taiyi Fist in exchange for the Brocade Emperor making a move, obstructing the Heaven Emperor.

It possessed sufficient importance for him to do so.

“Could the Brocade Emperor have sensed the Grand Simplicity Splendour Cloud entering the World beyond Worlds from extradimensional space?” Yan Di frowned.

It was not so important that the Brocade Emperor knew. He was more concerned with how he had learnt about it, if that really was the case.

As the owner of the Grand Simplicity Splendour Cloud, Yan Di wanted to and also had to get to the bottom of relevant issues.

Yan Zhaoge lightly rubbed his temples, “This possibility does exist. Still, there are other possibilities too.”

What Ingenious Flying Peak said was that this was because the Yan father and son had gone to the Minor no Hatred dao arena by invitation of the Brocade Emperor who had failed to show up in the end.

An Emperor failing to show up at a meeting with two Seeing Divinity Martial Saints seemed like no big deal, actually.

Still, when Mars Halberd had attacked the Minor No Hatred dao arena, Yan Zhaoge and Yan Di had been drawn into it for no rhyme or reason.

Afterwards, Yan Zhaoge had ended up in the Immortal Court along with Fu Ting, having helped each other in getting out of that predicament.

Yan Zhaoge had contributed greatly in Fu Ting having been able to quickly return from the Immortal Court.

Therefore, the Brocade Emperor was expressing his apologies and also gratitude with this.

These words did make sense.

While there still seemed to be a gap in their current positions, the Brocade Emperor had always been carefree, acting as he liked. This possibility did exist.

Still, it remained to be seen whether this was actually the case.

Yan Zhaoge did not intend to appraise a noble person with a petty person's eye. Still, it was not his personality to place all hopes on success and failure and life and death on the character of another person.

The Brocade Emperor had left a very good impression on Yan Zhaoge up till now, and it was also true that he was carefree and acted as he liked.

Still, one would be wrong if they believed him to be a good guy who always helped people out with a warm smile on his face.

From appraising him, Yan Zhaoge could vaguely guess that the legacy of the Grand Clear lineage that the Brocade Emperor cultivated in was the path of Grand Forgetting Emotion.

Grand Forgetting Emotion did not leave one heartless, but the

Brocade Emperor was definitely not a very emotional person like many believed him to be.

It was not for no reason that he had given birth to a daughter late, only having sired one single child.

That was likely due to the principles of the fifty positions of divination and amplification. Only forty-nine of them were used as the Grand Unity position was not used.

Fu Ting's birth entailed that the Brocade Emperor's phase of walking the countless meadows without getting stained by a single leaf had progressed to the point of obtaining merely a single vessel out of many, entailing that his cultivation base had become purer.

However, Yan Zhaoge could not predict what path the Brocade Emperor might be walking after this.

This would have a direct effect on the Brocade Emperor's way of doing things.

Considering his current love and concern for Fu Ting, the situation was still rather optimistic.

Of course, Yan Zhaoge still had another guess.

It was also regarding the Grand Simplicity Splendour Cloud, but not the Taiyi Fist.

Yan Zhaoge looked at Yan Di who understood what he meant, "We shall just wait and see."

"We need to be tough ourselves in order to beat iron," Yan Zhaoge nodded, "This is no reason for us to be slacking off."

Yan Di said appreciatively, "That's right."

While the Brocade Emperor's declaration was a pleasant surprise, Yan Zhaoge and Yan Di definitely still had to raise their own abilities.

Trading the Taiyi Fist in exchange for the Brocade Emperor acting would likely succeed. Still, the father and son pair would

not consider this unless it was utterly necessary.

Still, in seeking to face the threat that could come at any time, declaring their determination and yelling slogans were useless.

One needed to have actual plans.

Even as he cultivated diligently everyday, Yan Zhaoge was also unceasingly sorting out his thoughts.

Once one had traversed the boundary between mortals and Immortals and accomplished the realm of Leakless Immortals, they could no longer be harmed by the myriad arts of the mortal realm.

However powerful and capable Martial Saints were, they would still be unable to injure True Immortals with their own power.

The two would no longer be of the same level.

In order to resist Immortals, mortals would have to seek out a different path.

Of course, there were no absolutes in this world.

There was indeed a method that could allow Martial Saints to slay Immortals.

It was recorded in ancient history that four Human Exalts of the Prime Clear direct lineage had once joined forces in establishing the Immortal Executing Formation, successfully slaying a True Immortal.

This sufficiently displayed the high capabilities of the Numinous Treasure Four Swords and Immortal Executing Formation that could extinguish the myriad heavens.

Ever since ancient times, not relying on external objects, there was only this method through which Martial Saints had slain Immortals.

Still, the Immortal Executing Formation had long since been lost.



To the current Yan Zhaoge, this method was evidently of not much help too.

The Nine Bends Yellow River Formation was naturally good. The effects that it was most famous for were how it could dwindle the minds of Immortals as well as disperse their souls, trap their forms, damage their qi, dispel their cores and harm their bodies.

Still, without the core Immortal Bewitching Pill and Secluded Immortal Mantra, one would not be able to do anything to Emperor-level experts with it.

# HSSB 1004: The imperious embryonic Immortal Artifact

---

Yan Zhaoge actually felt that while the Nine Bends Yellow Formation and the Ladies of the Three Skies were powerful, their glorious battle achievements in the era of the Investiture of the Gods should mostly be attributed to that supreme treasure, the Chaotic Origin Golden Cup.

If not for the Chaotic Origin Golden Cup, it would have been impossible to fling so many bigwigs of legend within the Nine Bends Yellow River Formation.

Besides the one controlling it being the Ladies of the Three Skies, the reason for the might of the Nine Bends Yellow River Formation was its core Immortal Bewitching Pill and Secluded Immortal Mantra.

Rather awkwardly, refining the Immortal Bewitching Pill or agglomerating the Secluded Immortal Mantra could only be done by Immortals, being something mortals could not do.

As Yan Zhaoge's cultivation base rose, he would naturally be able to exert more might when wielding the Nine Bends Yellow River Formation.

Still, without the Immortal Bewitching Pill and Secluded Immortal Mantra, its core effects would still ultimately not be achieved.

Moreover, the Royal Reed Sea lacked the necessary geographical conditions for the establishing of this formation.

Yan Zhaoge sat in the meditative position within a secluded chamber, a dark green bamboo cane appearing in his hand.

This was a unique weapon that Yan Zhaoge had forged himself, possessing miraculous effects in countering the weapons of others.

It was currently seven feet long with seven segments, being able to destroy mid-grade Sacred Artifacts with a single blow as high-grade Sacred Artifacts too were hard pressed to withstand it.

Only existences like the Extreme Yang Seal and the Extreme Yin Crown could barely withstand it. This was impossible even for the Evil Sword Taotie.

Still, it was not so awesome when used for hitting others.

Moreover, there was a gap between the mortal and the immortal. The heavenly gulf between these two realms existed between Sacred Artifacts and Immortal Artifacts as well.

While he had never attempted it before, Yan Zhaoge basically knew that the dark green bamboo cane would still not be able to break Immortal Artifacts when it was eight feet long, with eight segments.

While it might still be able to withstand one, it would probably have to be nine feet long and with nine segments for it to properly restrict Immortal Artifacts.

As for how to raise it from having eight feet and eight segments to having nine feet and nine segments, some complicated methods would be required.

This treasure would soon be facing its first real bottleneck.

Having surpassed this bottleneck, there would still be a long way to go.

The path would be difficult, but this did not mean that it could not be walked. It was just that for Yan Zhaoge and Broad Creed Mountain, there were threats they presently faced which required strength urgently.

In comparison, the Extreme Yang Seal would finally be able to exert its true power for the first time.

When Yan Zhaoge ascended the Immortal Bridge, he would be

able to wield its full power.

Amongst all Sacred Artifacts, this treasure was virtually something like a monarch.

“Still, just the Extreme Yang Seal alone is still insufficient...” Yan Zhaoge held the dark green bamboo cane with one hand, tapping down lightly on his other hand.

A moment later, he kept the dark green bamboo cane as space shook slightly above his head.

A massive palace appeared there, the roars of dragons vaguely resounding from within.

The door of the palace opened, revealing layers upon layers of space. Still, in the centre, at an unidentifiable distance, an inconspicuous-looking black metal wheel was hovering silently in the air.

It was none other than the Dim Radiant Wheel that Yan Zhaoge had obtained from the Dim Radiant Mausoleum.

This treasure still showed no reaction to Yan Zhaoge’s attempts to interact with it, seemingly remaining in a deep slumber.

Besides a temporary reaction in the Loathing Square Immortal Realm of the Immortal Court upon being stimulated by the martial dao of the Vast Yang Exalt Pei Hua of Vast Yang Palace’s direct lineage, the Dim Radiant Wheel had continually stayed in an ordinary and innocuous state.

Yet, Yan Zhaoge had never forgotten this treasure.

It was just that there might be a different significance behind this embryonic Immortal Artifact as things were not as simple as that.

As compared to clear, visible risks, the unknown called for more wariness and fear.

Also, Yan Zhaoge was still pondering on how to turn this treasure into a true Immortal Artifact.

Recalling the changes with the Dim Radiant Lamp back then and linking this with the relationship between it and the Dim Radiant Wheel, one would easily be able to guess that if there were twelve high-grade Sacred Artifacts like the Dim Radiant Lamp, the Dim Radiant Wheel would be completed.

When facing the attacks of high-grade Sacred Artifacts, the Dim Radiant Wheel would indeed still act passively by devouring them.

If it were twelve of these which delved into the concepts of light or dimness or those like the Dim Radiant Lamp in which light and dimness both existed, would the effects be better than if it were twelve random high-grade Sacred Artifacts?

“No, probably not...” Yan Zhaoge murmured to himself, “The Dim Radiant Wheel’s foundation is simply the Dim Radiant Twelve Arts, with their concepts all originating from the same legacy.”

After pondering for a time, Yan Zhaoge retrieved an object.

It was a golden wheel whose surface circulated with light, resembling sunlight.

This was none other than the high-grade Sacred Artifact, the Sun Moon Wheels, of the Radiant Light Sect of the Royal Reed Sea that year.

Still, while it had formerly consisted of a pair of sun and moon wheels, only the sun wheel remained as the moon wheel had long since been lost.

Yan Zhaoge hesitated slightly for a moment before retrieving something else.

It was another high-grade Sacred Artifact, a sabre.

It was the high-grade Sacred Artifact, the Golden Crow World Incinerating Sabre, which he had just obtained not long ago. It had originally belonged to Three Foot Mountain.

“It is a pity that the high-grade Sacred Artifact of the Vast Yang

Exalt, Pei Hua, was destroyed by the Little Sword God Long Xueji. Otherwise, it would have been more suitable,” Yan Zhaoge stroked his lower chin, “Still, if he had had his high-grade Sacred Artifact with him back then, I might not have been able to take him down.”

After analysing the Golden Crow World Incinerating Sabre for a time, Yan Zhaoge nodded satisfiedly, “It is indeed more of the blazing of the great sun rather than the concept of the light of the sun. Still, it has deeply grasped the profundities of the principles of the sun, still being suitable.”

It was not that he could not bear to part with this sun wheel.

Instead, he feared that without the moon wheel, possessing only the sun wheel as the Sacred Artifact was deficient, it might be unable to exert sufficient effects to verify his guesses.

The Golden Crow World Incinerating Sabre was complete and without flaw, also being stronger than just the sun wheel alone.

After some consideration, Yan Zhaoge grabbed the Golden Crow World Incinerating Sabre, flinging it towards the Dim Radiant Wheel!

The sabre transformed into a blazing streak of golden flames, resembling the descent of the sun as it smashed down towards the Dim Radiant Wheel that seemed totally inconspicuous.

Sensing the hostility of the Golden Crow World Incinerating Sabre and the destructive power that it possessed as a high-grade Sacred Artifact, the Dim Radiant Wheel that had been silent all this while finally rumbled.

A stream of light shot out from one of its twelve slots, sweeping towards the Golden Crow World Incinerating Sabre.

The Golden Crow World Incinerating Sabre jolted for a moment before the sunlight and flames dissipated completely and it regained its appearance as a sabre.

Next, this high-grade Sacred Artifact slowly flew towards the

Dim Radiant Wheel on its own accord.

Some years back, the King Xuan Spear had nearly been captured by the Dim Radiant Wheel. It was just that Yan Zhaoge had stopped this from happening.

He did not make a move this time, instead just observing patiently.

Then, he saw the Golden Crow World Incinerating Sabre landing in a slot of the Dim Radiant Wheel.

The Dim Radiant Wheel ceased rumbling while the Golden Crow World Incinerating Sabre vanished as well.

After observing for a moment, Yan Zhaoge could not sense the Dim Radiant Wheel having become stronger or more complete.

Instead, sunlight was emitted from that slot which the Golden Sun World Incinerating Sabre had been sucked into.

Upon approaching it, Yan Zhaoge discovered that there seemed to be a whole universe within.

A Golden Crow was struggling unceasingly within, streaks of sunlight essence being drawn away by this universe.

Still, a moment later, this all ceased.

That Golden Crow seemed to have survived a major calamity, yet was still trapped within the space of that universe, unable to extricate itself.

“This is a phenomenon manifested from the Golden Crow World Incinerating Sabre after having been captured by the Dim Radiant Wheel. Yet, it has not been refined and absorbed by the Dim Radiant Wheel,” Yan Zhaoge pondered on this, “From how this went, it actually looks more like...”

It was like the Dim Radiant Wheel was disdainful of the Golden Crow World Incinerating Sabre, refusing to assimilate with it.

At this, Yan Zhaoge did not know whether to laugh or to cry.

# HSSB 1005: Dim Radiant Twelve Arts

---

The Dim Radiant Wheel was not disdainful of the Golden Crow World Incinerating Sabre itself.

Instead, it was disdainful of the concept contained within this Sacred Artifact.

In other words, it was disdainful of the Golden Crow World Incinerating Scripture.

To be fair, though, the Golden Crow World Incinerating Scripture was a fairly profound martial art.

If the Golden Crow World Incinerating Scripture was not okay, the Vast Yang Scripture of Vast Yang Palace was most likely not okay as well.

The Dim Radiant Sect's own comprehensions of the principles of light of the sun were not okay too.

Under such circumstances, how was the Dim Radiant Wheel qualified to be so arrogant?

“What it wants are supreme martial arts which surpass it,” Yan Zhaoge realised, “The Dim Radiant Emperor Yin Tianxia was ambitious indeed. What he wanted was advancing upwards throughout, always aiming higher.”

“Therefore, the Dim Radiant Wheel is attempting to assimilate with martial arts with concepts more profound than those of the Dim Radiant Sect. With that, it will be incomparably powerful on the day success truly comes.”

It was not that it definitely had to surpass the martial dao of the Dim Radiant Sect in all areas.

The Dim Radiant Sect's martial arts were varied and all-encompassing. They had been sorted out and categorised by Yin Tianxia into many categories that touched on many principles.



The dao of the light of the sun was simply one of those.

So long as a martial art was superior to the martial arts of the Dim Radiant Sect in the dao of the light of the sun, the Dim Radiant Wheel would be interested in it.

The sole exception was the Dim Radiant Lamp that belonged to Yin Tianxia himself.

This Sacred Artifact had been used to establish the basic foundation for the Dim Radiant Wheel.

Yan Zhaoge looked at the universe within the slot of the black metal wheel and pondered for a time before retrieving another item.

This was a sword which rippled with lustrous light and flickered with purple radiance. The sound of tides vaguely resounded from within as it was like the vast, mighty sea was merged with it.

This was the Purple Sea Sword of the Purple Tide Sword Sect that had belonged to the 'Purple Tide Swordsman' Zhao Zhen, their Chief. He had come from the Bright Connection Sea to assist Wutong Slope's Yuan Xiancheng, yet had been slain by Yan Zhaoge instead at Vast Spirit Mountain. His high-grade Sacred Artifact had thus naturally fallen to Yan Zhaoge.

During that great battle, this sword had nearly been broken by Yan Zhaoge.

There were still multiple cracks running down its length as it was as if it might break into several segments at any moment if one were not careful enough.

Still, its vast, mighty sword-intent remained majestic.

With a flicking motion of Yan Zhaoge's hand, the Purple Sea Sword transformed into a streak of light, flying towards the Dim Radiant Wheel as well.

In the end, just like the Golden Crow World Incinerating Sabre, it

was devoured by a slot on the Dim Radiant Wheel.

This time, Yan Zhaoge discovered a problem.

While the Golden Crow World Incinerating Sabre and the Purple Sea Sword had not been devoured into the same slot, they both seemed to have gone to the same place.

Multiple purple tides of the sea surged within the slot where the Golden Crow had been earlier, instantly transforming into an ocean.

Yan Zhaoge pondered for a while before realising, “This is the slot where the Dim Radiant Lamp was devoured in the Dim Radiant Mausoleum back then.”

After observing carefully for some time longer, he saw the purple waves manifested of the Purple Sea Sword rising and ebbing, appearing very normal.

The strange part was that the universe within this slot did not draw away the essence of the great purple sea like it had done with the essence of the sunlight of the Golden Crow earlier.

It was not that it was disdainful of it. Instead, it showed no reaction at all.

On seeing this scene, Yan Zhaoge completely understood it all.

The sword-intent of the Purple Sea Sword and the sword-qi of the Purple Tide Sword Sect which manifested as a purple sea delved into the profundities of the vast, mighty sea.

Meanwhile, this was not within the range of martial arts of the Dim Radiant Sect.

Although Yin Tianxia had sought to collect martial scriptures from all around to improve his own in forging the Dim Radiant Wheel, he had never intended to expand blindly.

The legacy of the Dim Radiant Sect’s martial arts was already extremely refined with his efforts. There was no need to continue

branching out as the point was to continue improving ceaselessly.

The purple sea of sword-qi was unnecessary for the Dim Radiant Wheel.

Thus, while the Purple Sea Sword had been ‘devoured’, in truth, the Dim Radiant Wheel had never planned on doing anything to it at all.

This was unlike the Golden Crow World Incinerating Sabre, which it had tried before giving up on.

So in that case, what martial concepts were the Dim Radiant Wheel interested in?

Yin Tianxia’s Dim Radiant Twelve Arts actually already hinted at this.

The former Radiant Light Sect and the Dim Darkness Sect had both been of the Dim Radiant Sect’s orthodox tradition, just that their legacies had been deficient due to various reasons.

The martial scriptures of the two sects had actually originated from those of the Dim Radiant Sect.

Primordial darkness, the absence of light, dim brightness, illusory light, illuminating light...

Extreme Yang with similar principles to the Golden Crow World Incinerating Scripture and the Vast Yang Scripture and the opposing force of Extreme Yin.

All these made up the Dim Radiant Twelve Arts.

Although Yin Tianxia had perished at a young age, his talents and genius had still shocked the world.

“Whether it will absorb and refine the concept contained within a Sacred Artifact is one thing,” Yan Zhaoge muttered itself, “Whether it will collect the Sacred Artifact itself is another thing altogether.”

“These two are actually independent. While the latter services

the former, providing it a foundation, the two are actually unrelated.”

Realising this point, Yan Zhaoge gained a hypothesis.

He cultivated in the Dim Radiant Twelve Arts, though primarily just the last of them.

As for the earlier arts, the eleventh was called Wilderness Devouring.

If a martial practitioner cultivated in this art, they would be able to absorb the strength of their enemies.

This concept might be the reason why the Dim Radiant Wheel had been devouring other Sacred Artifacts.

Yan Zhaoge observed the slot that was manifested as a universe and bore the Purple Sea Sword and Golden Crow World Devouring Sabre after they had been devoured.

“If each slot does not correspond to a high-grade Sacred Artifact, instead corresponding with one of the Dim Radiant Twelve Arts, this slot should correspond to the eleventh art, Wilderness Devouring.”

Fingering the exterior of the Dim Radiant Wheel, Yan Zhaoge thought, “This art is the foundation of the Dim Radiant Wheel that the Dim Radiant Emperor established with the Dim Radiant Lamp.”

Absorbing the Dim Radiant Lamp had not been accomplished by the Wilderness Devouring art, instead having been caused by the mechanism for the forging of the Immortal Artifact established by the Dim Radiant Emperor at the start.

The capturing of the other Sacred Artifacts would have been caused by the Wilderness Devouring art that had already been inscribed on the Dim Radiant Wheel.

In the many long years thereafter, even if Yin Tianxia himself

died, the Dim Radiant Wheel would still have the possibility of growth.

The growth of the Dim Radiant Wheel would be accomplished by the addition of various martial arts that would allow the legacy of the Dim Radiant Sect to reach a whole new level as the Immortal Artifact was further refined, being unrelated to the high-grade Sacred Artifacts themselves.

With that, when the Dim Radiant Wheel was completed, its Dim Radiant Twelve Arts would all have attained new heights.

The Dim Radiant Wheel would also be vastly superior.

Yan Zhaoge pondered for a moment before extending a palm towards the slot that represented the Wilderness Devouring art.

The Golden Crow World Incinerating Art could not cut it, and it was the same for the Vast Yang Scripture too.

Still, he should give it a go with the Extreme Yang Scripture.

Yan Zhaoge did not intend to send the Extreme Yang Seal within as he simply projected the concept of the Extreme Yang Seal with his true essence.

The Dim Radiant Wheel showed no reaction at first.

It was no different from when Yan Zhaoge had previously experimented by infusing his true essence within countless times.

Yan Zhaoge retracted his palm before considering for a moment. He grabbed the high-grade Sacred Artifact, the Sun Moon Wheels, next abruptly smashing it towards the Dim Radiant Wheel.

This time, the black metal wheel finally reacted, light flying out from a slot that swept along the sun wheel.

Yan Zhaoge did not resist this but did not let go as well as he gripped the sun wheel, making use of this chance to send his palm in as well.

At the same time, he circulated the techniques of the Extreme

Yang Scripture.

The next moment, glorious sunlight flickered amidst the illusory space of the universe as a great amount of the essence of sunlight was sucked and absorbed unceasingly by a formless existence!

# HSSB 1006: Ten great Sacred Artifacts

---

The Extreme Yang Scripture had originated from Vast Yang Palace's Vast Yang Scripture.

Still, having been developed and refined by some legendary bigwigs who were geniuses of their times, also having referenced the likes of the Cyclic Heavenly Scripture and the Yin Yang Heavenly Scripture, the current Extreme Yang Scripture that had achieved major completion could be said to have surpassed it.

The Vast Yang Scripture and the Golden Crow World Incinerating Scripture could not satisfy the needs of the Dim Radiant Wheel that had been forged by the Dim Radiant Emperor Yin Tianxia.

Still, the Extreme Yang Scripture could.

Still, as it refined and integrated the concept of the Extreme Yang Scripture, the Dim Radiant Wheel was also unceasingly absorbing all the radiance of the sun manifested of Yan Zhaoge's true essence.

Since it could even refine high-grade Sacred Artifacts, the essence and qi it required would definitely be crazily high.

Many Immortal Bridge Martial Saints whose martial arts were not renowned for their abundant true essences would virtually be sucked dry by the Dim Radiant Wheel.

This was an Immortal Artifact, a treasure that could only be refined by an Immortal in the first place.

There was a gap between mortals and immortals. Even though the Dim Radiant Emperor had already established a foundation, what would come next was not something that any ordinary person might be able to do.

Even with Yan Zhaoge's strength, he could feel a large amount of his true essence just ebbing away.

The depletion was even greater than when he had previously fought with that late Immortal Bridge Martial Saint longtime Elder of Wutong Slope, Zhang Shuren.

With a tranquil expression on his face, he quietly circulated his vigorous true essence and his breathing, constantly supplying power to the Dim Radiant Wheel in an endless stream.

A glow was emitted from one of the slots of the black metal wheel which grew increasingly brighter.

The black wheel which usually looked simple and innocuous as no sound resounded from it whatsoever gradually emanated a momentous feeling at this moment!

Extremely hot, blazing radiance filled the space within the Myriad Dragon Palace, resembling the large, actual sun.

“I believe that this slot corresponds to the sixth of the Dim Radiant Twelve Arts, extreme Yang,” Yan Zhaoge thought.

The Wilderness Devouring Art could devour the strength of other people.

Meanwhile, the art of extreme Yang of the legacy of the Dim Radiant Sect mainly drew out on the majestic intent of the sun, guarding the righteous and avoiding the immoral so as to stabilise itself.

It contained an external combat technique that attacked in wide, aboveboard movements, offence and defence both in one.

However, it was most renowned for its inner cultivation technique with sunlight illuminating all as no evil could encroach, one's mind being safeguarded.

When cultivating normally, there would be a greater efficiency. At the same time, it would be able to resist those sinister bewitching arts that were used on the mind as well.

This technique was currently inscribed on the Dim Radiant



Wheel. This treasure could thus suppress evil and filth, specifically restricting those sinister means.

Yan Zhaoge appraised the Dim Radiant Wheel in a new light at this moment, “My hypothesis was right. In that case, when this Dim Radiant Wheel reaches its peak, the Dim Radiant Twelve Arts manifesting, it will be able to exert twelve different functions on its own!”

Also, all of them would be refined rather than insubstantial.

This would be the case if it was completed according to the intentions of the Dim Radiant Emperor, Yin Tianxia.

“The Dim Radiant Emperor Yin Tianxia was really someone with novel thoughts indeed,” Yan Zhaoge clicked his tongue in praise, “If he had not died young, his fame would surely be far greater than how it is now.”

Of course, this was with an underlying assumption.

Yan Zhaoge could not be clearer on the fact that if Yin Tianxia had not died and he sought to improve, there was first a problem which he would have to face.

His Dim Radiant Twelve Arts had connections with the true intent of peerless infinity.

Meanwhile, the first scripture of the Jade Clear lineage’s Primordial Heavenly Scriptures, the Peerless Heavenly Scripture, would be weighing down on him like a mountain, blocking his path so that it was incomparably narrow, with each step being difficult to take.

Unless Yin Tianxia obtained the Peerless Heavenly Scripture, it would be far more difficult for him to continue advancing than for others.

He might even be stuck in the Leakless Immortal realm for the rest of his life as a result.

The concept and path of the Dim Radiant Wheel might be a form of consideration and attempt by Yin Tianxia with regard to his own path.

Could he not know that the path he had chosen was an extremely tough one?

Yan Zhaoge believed that he had known it.

And yet, Yin Tianxia had still chosen this path.

While it was difficult with hope ephemeral, he was still constantly attempting to break free of the restrictions on him, seeking an effective method.

“Peerless infinity...” Yan Zhaoge muttered to himself.

He had previously cultivated primarily in the last of the Dim Radiant Twelve Arts.

This art was none other than peerless infinity.

Yan Zhaoge’s initial rationale for this was making use of the Dim Radiant Sect’s art of peerless infinity to conceal his foundation of the Peerless Heavenly Scripture.

According to Yin Tianxia’s rationale in forging the Dim Radiant Wheel, he would naturally have hoped to absorb an art of peerless infinity that was superior to the Dim Radiant Sect’s too.

Ever since ancient times, beneath the myriad heavens, which lineages which analysed the true intent of peerless infinity surpassed the Peerless Heavenly Scripture?

As the Dim Radiant Wheel refined the concept of the Extreme Yang Scripture with the sun wheel as an intermediary, a pattern which represented the art of extreme Yang was inscribed on it even as Yan Zhaoge’s true essence also flowed away in great amounts.

He vaguely felt drained of strength just like when he had still been in the fifth level of the Martial Saint realm, following his

battle with the Star Plucking Practitioner Guan Lide.

To Yan Zhaoge who possessed numerous supreme martial arts and vigorous true essence and had a rapid qi returning speed, this was an extremely rare situation.

Still, the results were soon visible as well.

Yan Zhaoge retracted his palm as the Dim Radiant Wheel before him gradually regained its normalcy.

It was just that one of the slots of the black metal wheel currently emitted mild, calm sunlight.

The concept within was not completely the same as that of the Extreme Yang Scripture.

In terms of foundation, it was still the concept of the sixth art of the Dim Radiant Twelve Arts, extreme Yang.

Atop its original foundation, however, it was more profound as well as refined.

Yan Zhaoge felt comforted by the fact that as he approached the Dim Radiant Wheel again now, this treasure showed a faint reaction as it no longer seemed to be in a deep slumber as it had previously.

“From this moment onwards, I have truly formed a connection with this Dim Radiant Wheel. This can be considered as me officially beginning to refine this treasure from where the Dim Radiant Emperor left off,” Yan Zhaoge stroked his lower chin, retrieving another object.

This was the Five Phoenix Fan, a high-grade Sacred Artifact which had originally belonged to Wutong Slope’s ‘Phoenix Pupils’ Yuan Xiancheng.

After Yuan Xiancheng had died, this Sacred Artifact had fallen into Yan Zhaoge’s hands.

When martial practitioners fought, their weapons being damaged

was not uncommon.

Still, Yan Zhaoge's dark green bamboo cane was extremely well-endowed in capturing the treasures and weapons of others.

In the battle of Circumference Mountain, beneath the effects of the Nine Bends Yellow River Formation, besides those three late Immortal Bridge Martial Saints, those other enemies had basically been defeated without a fight.

Thus, even as Yan Zhaoge had seen great battle achievements from rampaging across the southern Blazing Heaven Territory this time, he had also gained quite a lot, acquiring countless spoils of war.

Not including those killed in the Daoist temple, even only considering those starting from the Endless Mountain Range of the southern Blazing Heaven Territory, he had still slain over ten Immortal Bridge Martial Saints of the south throughout.

Due to the deficiency of materials, high-grade Sacred Artifacts were hard to come by. Many Martial Saint experts who had ascended the Immortal Bridge could only continue to use mid-grade Sacred Artifacts.

Fortunately, his foes in the battles at Vast Spirit Mountain and Circumference Mountain had not been weak as they had possessed abundant wealth.

In the end, seven people, including Daoist East Spring, Zhao Zhen, Yuan Xiancheng, Zhang Shuren, Peng He, Daoist Leading Mist and Qing Shuzi had each provided Yan Zhaoge with good war spoils.

Besides them, before the battle at Vast Spirit Mountain, as Yan Zhaoge had rampaged over to the Endless Mountain Range, he had also killed countless martial practitioners of the south, obtaining two high-grade Sacred Artifacts.

Adding on Three Foot Mountain's Golden Crow World

Incinerating Sabre which he had obtained at the Daoist temple, he had netted a total of ten high-grade Sacred Artifacts this time!

# HSSB 1007: A newly ascended legend or a fleeting shooting star

---

Not considering Three Foot Mountain's Golden Crow World Incinerating Sabre, Qing Shuzi's Dragon Sceptre Whip and Daoist Leading Mist's Bright Barbaric Daoist Robe, Yan Zhaoge had netted seven high-grade Sacred Artifacts from the martial practitioners of the south.

Not mentioning those he had slain, just considering these spoils of war which he had taken away from the south, the southern Blazing Heaven Territory had already suffered a huge blow to its vitality.

Beneath the lead of Golden Court Mountain, the martial practitioners of the southeastern Yang Heaven Territory had expanded on an attack into the south which had been extremely successful.

Not only had Golden Court Mountain completely suppressed and thrashed Wutong Slope, the other martial practitioners of the southeast had been completely at the upper hand against the southern martial practitioners too.

This was especially so along the route from Circumference Mountain to the Announcing Peace Mountain Range to the Broad Dong Mound Plains and further west. Retracing Yan Zhaoge's footsteps, the martial practitioners of the southeast had it relaxed and joyful throughout.

Having already been swept through by Yan Zhaoge once, the southern martial practitioners were hard pressed to organise any real resistance.

"It's quality is really not bad," Looking at the Five Phoenix Fan that he held, Yan Zhaoge could not help but smile, "I'm too used to it, but a wastrel like me would probably attract a lot of criticism."

After cultivating for some time, Yan Zhaoge gradually recovered his vitality.

Sensing that he had finished his preparations once more, Yan Zhaoge sent the Five Phoenix Fan within the slot of the Dim Radiant Wheel with the Wilderness Devouring Art inscribed on it too.

At of now, Yan Zhaoge no longer had to launch an attack in order to stimulate the Dim Radiant Wheel into retaliating.

He had already gradually come to establish a bit of a connection with the Dim Radiant Wheel.

With just a mere thought on his part, the Dim Radiant Wheel shook slightly. While it did not wholly abide by Yan Zhaoge's orders, this time, it took the initiative to devour the Five Phoenix Fan that was served on a platter.

The concept contained within the Five Phoenix Fan manifested as the silhouette of a phoenix amidst the space of the universe within the slot.

While the Dim Radiant Wheel did react somewhat, it was not intense.

Yan Zhaoge knew that it was the Perpetual Illumination art of the Dim Radiant Twelve Arts at work.

Perpetual Illumination was the eighth art of the Dim Radiant Twelve Arts.

Light Illuminates All from the Radiant Light Sect of the Royal Reed Sea had originated from here.

Other martial arts like the Inextinguishable Light Body and the Infinite Brightness Palm had been birthed from this too.

Light Perpetually Illuminates, Eternally Never Extinguished.

Martial practitioners had long breaths and vigorous true essence which made them proficient in drawn-out battles, also gifting

them mighty defensive power.

The characteristics of its concept were similar to the miraculous aspects of Wutong Slope's Phoenix True Form Scripture. Although it was still inferior to that scripture, it was still extremely outstanding.

Still, while their external characteristics were similar, their underlying principles were different.

Therefore, after being shaken, the Dim Radiant Wheel regained its initial silence.

The forging of this Immortal Artifact came from analysing and refining the concept of other supreme martial arts in order to improve itself, not being from breaking down and taking in those martial arts.

Therefore, when the targeted Sacred Artifact was unable to strengthen it, it would not act.

This was what had happened with the Five Phoenix Fan now and the Purple Sea Sword previously.

Still, Yan Zhaoge was actually just using this Five Phoenix Fan as an intermediary and medium in order to supply his own martial concept to the Dim Radiant Wheel.

It was just that it was not that of the Peerless Heavenly Scripture.

There was no other reason for this but the fact that the Peerless Heavenly Scripture was just too abstruse and profound.

Firstly, Yan Zhaoge himself was still constantly in the midst of comprehending it. Secondly, the Peerless Heavenly Scripture surpassed the twelfth art of the Dim Radiant Twelve Arts, that of Peerless Infinity, by just far too much.

If he were to blindly integrate this, things would likely end with the Peerless Heavenly Scripture gaining dominance and trying to take over control.



Yet, the foundation of the Dim Radiant Wheel was the Dim Radiant Twelve Arts at the end of the day.

It would be impossible for Yan Zhaoge who had yet to attain Immortality to successfully forge an Immortal Artifact which had the Peerless Heavenly Scripture as its foundation.

The wresting for control would only end up with both sides losing and going their separate ways.

Still, as the cultivation base of Yan Zhaoge himself rose and the Dim Radiant Wheel neared completion, hopefully reaching just that one step away, an opportunity might still arise then.

Therefore, it was another supreme martial art that Yan Zhaoge was supplying the Dim Radiant Wheel with at this moment.

The Dark Moon Pill Scripture.

This time, he was aiming for the fifth of the Dim Radiant Twelve Arts, the art of extreme Yin.

When cultivated by martial practitioners, with the cold desolation of Extreme Yin, this art would cause life force to run dry and the soul to shrivel as it was one of the few venomous arts of the Dim Radiant Twelve Arts, being close to a devilish art.

Used against enemies, it would formlessly inflict harm on them.

It was worth mentioning that to some extent, it was countered by the art of Extreme Yang of the Dim Radiant Twelve Arts.

Also, a portion of the techniques of the Dark Moon Pill Scripture possessed similar effects.

Yan Zhaoge possessed a comparatively limited understanding towards the internal history of the Dim Radiant Sect in post-Great Calamity times.

Still, after gaining an understanding of the art of Extreme Yin of the Dim Radiant Twelve Arts, he vaguely realised something.

A past senior of the Dim Radiant Sect, maybe Yin Tianxia

himself, had likely gotten his hands on a fragmented version of the Dark Moon Pill Scripture. From combining this with their dao tradition, the art of Extreme Yin had ultimately been born.

The Dark Moon Pill Scripture did not just delve into those brutal, vicious concepts.

Still, the fragmented version which the Dim Radiant Sect had obtained seemed to only delve into these.

Now that Yan Zhaoge was supplying the full Dark Moon Pill Scripture, the fifth of the Dim Radiant Twelve Arts could reach a whole new level, gaining a more abundant foundation rather than only perpetually walking a side path.

Seeing a tragic white cold light emitted from another slot of the black metal wheel, the corners of Yan Zhaoge's lips arched upwards in a smile.

Of these two slots which were closely adjacent, one emitted vast, majestic sunlight while the other emitted cold, tranquil moonlight, emanating a rather unique vibe.

Yan Zhaoge's upcoming days were very substantial indeed.

He spent his time either analysing Yan Di's Grand Simplicity Splendour Cloud and cultivating diligently or attempting to further refine the Dim Radiant Wheel.

Ever since returning to Broad Creed Mountain, Yan Zhaoge had virtually just remained there, cultivating in peace.

Those momentous tides of change that he had caused within the World beyond Worlds instead quelled.

Broad Creed Mountain seemed to have become low key too as not only did it seldom participate in the blows of the southeastern Yang Heaven Territory towards the southern Blazing Heaven Territory, it even made no big movements within the Royal Reed Sea.

The sole disturbance that was comparatively greater was the fact that Broad Creed Mountain's Chief, Yan Di, had successfully ascended the Immortal Bridge.

Apart from that, things were exceptionally calm.

It was just that presently, no one in the entire World beyond Worlds would dare underestimate Yan Zhaoge and Broad Creed Mountain any longer.

At the same time, many people were actually waiting.

They were waiting for the Southern Exalt Zhuang Shen to return to Phoenix Ritual Mountain's Wutong Slope.

They were waiting for the Heaven Emperor to return to Kunlun Mountain's Illusory Coming Peak.

At that time, they would truly know if Yan Zhaoge and Broad Creed Mountain were really a newly ascended legend or a fleeting shooting star.

Whether it was Wutong Slope that was currently being owned by Golden Court Mountain or Illusory Coming Peak that had not done anything since the deaths of Qing Shuzi and Daoist Leading Mist, all of them would surely be waiting for that moment too.

Five years after the battle at Circumference Mountain, World beyond Worlds time.

Yan Zhaoge and Yan Di were sitting across from each other within a cave manor atop Broad Creed Mountain.

"I intend to make another trip to the Vast Ocean World," Yan Zhaoge said calmly, "I cannot be certain when the Heaven Emperor will return, and cannot be certain of the same for the Southern Exalt too, but I will be fast as I can."

Yan Di nodded, "Go then."

Yan Zhaoge said, "During this time, I will have to trouble you and the sect to investigate one thing for me."

He passed Yan Di a jade slip, “According to the methods and steps laid out here, carefully measure the flow of the earth veins within the Royal Reed Sea and see if you can discover anything unique.”

“Principles similar to that of the Heaven Bearing Efficacy Formation...” Yan Di raised his brows as he browsed through it and realised this.

Yan Zhaoge lightly tapped his temples, “Many a times, return to the beginning, and the solution to the problem might just be hidden there.”

# HSSB 1008: The Yan Family's wives

---

When Yan Zhaoge had just arrived in the Royal Reed Sea that year, his cultivation base had still been low as he possessed meagre strength.

There had been the threat of their major enemy, the Radiant Light Sect. It had seemingly hung over the Eight Extremities World like a butcher's blade, seeming like it could descend and sever them at any moment.

Back then, Yan Zhaoge had moved amongst the powers of the Royal Reed Sea in order to expand space in which he could be active.

During this time, he had wrecked the Grand Xuan Dynasty's setting up of the Heaven Bearing Efficacy Formation and slain many of their people, thus having sowed increasingly greater enmity with them to the point where they were irreconcilable enemies.

Back then, Yan Zhaoge had not been concerned about why the Heaven Emperor had secretly dispatched Shen Lingzi's lot to the Royal Reed Sea to establish the Heaven Bearing Efficacy Formation, also having been unconcerned about why that Emperor was so persistent on seeking the legendary Earth Queen, one of the Four Imperials of Daoism.

That was a problem for the Southeastern Exalt Cao Jie to consider.

Yan Zhaoge had just needed to worry about how to raise his own strength so as to face the threat of the Grand Xuan Dynasty.

However, now that Yan Zhaoge would have to directly face the Heaven Emperor, matters regarding the Heaven Bearing Efficacy Formation that he had previously been unconcerned with had become significant for him again.

Why had the Heaven Emperor dispatched people to establish the Heaven Bearing Efficacy Formation in secret?

Why had he seemed adamant on doing so in the southeastern Yang Heaven Territory's Royal Reed Sea?

Why was it that after having been obstructed, this great Emperor of Daoism had been so put off, finding it so difficult to accept it?

The Heaven Emperor aside, others had acted rather strangely as well.

While the Southeastern Exalt Cao Jie was a sword cultivator, he was very moderate most of the time as he seemed to have an attitude of letting others do whatever they wanted.

Still, as the ruler of a Territory and a sword cultivator, if he were really to be provoked by someone, he would definitely hold steadfast and resolute to the end.

He would not give in even if he was facing a true Immortal.

However, after he had first learnt of the existence of the Heaven Bearing Efficacy Formation, Cao Jie had still silently allowed Kang Ping and the others of the Grand Xuan Dynasty to remain in the Royal Reed Sea, continuing to maintain it.

It was simply because of Broad Creed Mountain and Yan Zhaoge that the Grand Xuan Dynasty had ultimately been hard pressed to succeed.

Yan Zhaoge was on good terms with Golden Court Mountain, who leaned towards him and Broad Creed Mountain to some extent in secret.

It just so happened that a battle between the southeastern Yang Heaven Territory and the southern Blazing Heaven Territory had been set to commence, with Phoenix Ritual Mountain's Wutong Slope also seeking to destroy Yan Zhaoge to vent their anger.

In the end, the Heaven Emperor had tied down the Southeastern

Exalt Cao Jie when the battle between the south and southeast had broken out, borrowing the hand of Zhuang Shen to deal with Yan Zhaoge and Broad Creed Mountain even as he took care of the martial practitioners of the southeast.

This had instead enraged the Southeastern Exalt Cao Jie, who had borrowed the assistance of the Brocade Emperor and ultimately repelled the Heaven Emperor and the Southern Exalt Zhuang Shen.

The other peak experts of the World beyond Worlds had neither supported nor intervened in this.

Logically speaking, finding information on the Earth Queen who had not been heard of ever since the Great Calamity should be a major matter for the whole of Daoism.

Yan Zhaoge believed that Daoism's peak experts would all attempt to do so if they had a method to.

Yet, as seen by the other peak experts of the World beyond Worlds, the Heaven Emperor's actions were viewed more as his own private affairs.

As a result, there was only the Brocade Emperor who had intervened in this matter due to his personal friendship with the Southeastern Exalt.

Since it was a private matter, what sort of a reason could there be?

Having to face the wrath of that Emperor head-on now, Yan Zhaoge was very interested in this.

"I will personally take charge of this matter," Yan Di gained interest as well as he kept the jade slip.

Yan Zhaoge stood up, "In that case, father, I will be going down to the Vast Ocean World now then."

Yan Di nodded, "Yes, rest assured and go."

“To be honest, I can’t rest assured, though not for things over here,” Yan Zhaoge forced a smile, “Miss Guan Yuluo sent news over from the north that there will only be a chance for that ‘door’ Yunsheng entered to reopen a few years later.”

Feng Yunsheng had effectively cut off her own path of retreat to some extent with this.

With that, Yan Zhaoge was unable to determine how she was currently doing.

Even though he knew that this was actually a normal thing for ambitious, resolute martial practitioners, with Feng Yunsheng being supremely talented as she also possessed two mighty weapons, the Extreme Yin Crown and the Cold Sun Divine Sabre, it would really be impossible for Yan Zhaoge not to be worried at all however confident he was in Feng Yunsheng.

“As the Chief of a sect, I would rejoice greatly at how we have a descendant such as this,” Yan Di said, “Still, I can understand your mindset too.”

Yan Zhaoge sighed soundlessly towards the heavens, “Oh father, these wives that we men of the Yan Family find really make one worry indeed!”

Yan Di replied exasperatedly, “Why do you say that?”

“Let alone how your hair’s nearly turned white looking for your wife, with the search still yet to see any success, even mine’s missing now,” Yan Zhaoge shrunk his neck back, but still muttered softly.

Yan Di was aggravated by his lackadaisical look as he just pointed at him, unable to say anything at all. He raised a hand as if to hit him, but Yan Zhaoge had already scampered away from the secluded chamber by now.

Looking at the fleeing figure of his son, Yan Di did not know whether to laugh or to cry.



A few moments later, Yan Zhaoge peeked back into the room, “Right, father, how’s that junior apprentice-brother Xia doing?”

Five years ago, Xia Guang who had returned to the southeastern Yang Heaven Territory along with Yan Zhaoge had successfully become a disciple of Broad Creed Mountain just like he wished.

To him, the various tests had not been difficult to pass.

While he had started out as a white-clothed disciple as per sect rules, he had quickly donned a blue robe and afterwards one which was black-bordered as he thus became a core disciple of Broad Creed Mountain.

Also, the master whose tutelage he had gone under in the end was Yan Di.

“Shocking talent, unordinary comprehension, painstaking diligence,” Yan Di evaluated.

As for Xia Guang’s easy-to-flare up temper and unswerving personality that might make it easy for his path to be impeded, he was not too concerned with it.

Yan Di was actually someone with a similar temperament as well, just that it was not exhibited as outwardly as Xia Guang.

Yan Zhaoge asked, “Has he not found his kin yet?”

Yan Di shook his head, “Not yet.”

Besides Xia Guang, two other descendants of the Listening Thunder Peak’s Xia Family had been out adventuring back then, thus having survived the tragic decimation of the family in the Consecutive Drum Mountain Range.

After returning to the southeastern Yang Heaven Territory with Yan Zhaoge and becoming a disciple of Broad Creed Mountain back then, he had returned to the Consecutive Drum Mountain Range to look for them as soon as he could.

Yet, he had received news that his elder brother and sister had

both not returned from their trip.

Over the past five years, Broad Creed Mountain had secured Golden Court Mountain's help and searched within the domain of the southeastern Yang Heaven Territory but to no avail.

Xia Guang had originally feared that the two had fallen into the hands of Three Foot Mountain.

Still, investigations from many sources had gradually confirmed that Three Foot Mountain too possessed no hold on their whereabouts.

Xia Guang could only temporarily quell his anxiety. He thought that the two of them might have heard about what had happened with the family back then. Being worried about being silenced by Three Foot Mountain, they were temporarily hiding outside, having changed their names and altered their identities.

Therefore, after settling down in Broad Creed Mountain, he had constantly ventured outside from time to time.

The fame of 'Blood Thunderbolt' Xia Guang was currently also not just limited to the Royal Reed Sea as he had become yet another rather renowned martial practitioner of Broad Creed Mountain after Yan Zhaoge and Yan Di who had been cultivating and not moving around outside in recent years.

Xia Guang had no desire to spread his fame, just wishing that his kin could hear of him and come seeking him in the Royal Reed Sea.

"Junior apprentice-brother Xia is exerting great pains indeed. I hope that his elder brother and sister were blessed by fortune and can reunite with him soon," Yan Zhaoge sighed, Yan Di nodding as well.

This newly entered disciple could be considered as being afflicted with similar sad circumstances as they father and son.

After drifting about momentarily, Yan Di's gaze became resolute once more, "Human Exalt stage..."

# HSSB 1009: Martial Saint retainer

---

Yan Zhaoge too desired to ascend the Human Exalt stage as soon as possible. Still, this was the pursuit of a martial practitioner.

He would not have to wait so long regarding the matter of his mother, Xue Chuqing.

Having already been to the Immortal Court, in the eyes of those like Cao Jie and Liu Zhenggu, he could already be considered a 'gone case' anyway as there was no point in still keeping it hidden.

Of course, the return of Cao Jie and the others would also entail the return of the Southern Exalt Zhuang Shen as well as the Western Exalt who was on bad terms with Cao Jie.

When the conflict between the Immortal Court and Buddhism had gradually died down and a bit of closure had been achieved, there was the possibility of the Heaven Emperor returning to the World beyond Worlds as well.

Yan Zhaoge and Broad Creed Mountain needed to make preparations as soon as they could.

After officially taking his leave of Yan Di, Yan Zhaoge headed to the Vast Ocean World.

This time, there was no need to leave manpower in the World beyond Worlds. Pan-Pan accompanied him down to serve as a guard for him.

Ah Hu and Xiao Ai stayed behind in the World beyond Worlds to cultivate where the environment was better.

In recent years, Ah Hu had finally successfully Transcended Mortality and entered Sainthood.

Ying Longtu and Sikong Qing had achieved this too, with it being a bit earlier for the latter.

It was worth mentioning that Ying Longtu had entered

Sainthood at twenty-seven years of age, having refreshed Broad Creed Mountain's internal record.

Considering how he had come to the World beyond Worlds when already a Martial Grandmaster, this was definitely top-tier within the entire World beyond Worlds.

Besides them, Xiao Ai and Shi Jun had already entered the Transcending Mortality stage as well as they were currently aiming for a breakthrough into the Martial Saint realm.

As a fourth generation disciple of Broad Creed Mountain, Shi Jun had already reached such a level. Yuan Zhengfeng, Yan Di, Fang Zhun, Fu Enshu and those other seniors were all feeling joyful at this.

While Yan Zhaoge and Yan Di had seldom travelled outside in recent years as Broad Creed Mountain had been on the quieter side, the accumulation of the entire sect had grown increasingly abundant.

One year after Yan Zhaoge entered secluded cultivation in the Vast Ocean World, his father Yan Di advanced further, ascending into the eighth level of the Martial Saint realm. The outside world paid even more attention to them with that.

Presently, the time was already ripe for Broad Creed Mountain to officially launch their opening ceremony and open their doors to accept disciples.

Everyone was still focusing on things on the level of large scale powers and peak experts.

After the collision with the likes of the Heaven Emperor and the Southern Exalt, they would be able to see if Broad Creed Mountain was truly a dragon or a snake.

Still, those middle and lower-tier martial practitioners, especially those ordinary people who were not in the know at all, would not know about what Broad Creed Mountain would soon be facing.

They only knew that a new legend was currently arising within the southeastern Yang Heaven Territory's Royal Reed Sea.

These people were who Broad Creed Mountain was trying to attract as disciples.

Despite being joyful at Yan Di's advancement, Broad Creed Mountain was not in a rush to officially launch the opening ceremony.

It was not that they were fearful of bigwigs like the Heaven Emperor and the Southern Exalt or believed that their foundation was still unstable.

There was only one reason for this.

Yan Zhaoge was still in secluded cultivation in the Vast Ocean World.

"Over half our sect's current reputation in the World beyond Worlds was built up from scratch by Zhaoge," Yuan Zhengfeng firmly made the decision, "How can we not wait for him for the opening ceremony?"

Yan Di did not act humble as he simply nodded, replying, "It is as Master says."

Fang Zhun smiled, "With Zhaoge's current cultivation base and experience, he has never yet accepted a disciple. I wonder if anyone will attract his attention when we accept disciples?"

Over the past ten plus years in the World beyond Worlds, while he had still had to preside over much of the daily affairs of the sect, Fang Zhun had spent most of his time cultivating, now having gradually regained his vitality.

While his cultivation base did not soar by leaps and bounds like Yan Di, he had already successfully broken through space and achieved true Divinity not long ago, giving Broad Creed Mountain a new Seeing Divinity Martial Saint.

Considering that huge blow to his vitality from back then, his current progress was rather dazzling.

The Hidden Dragon of the Eight Extremities World vaguely showed some signs of soaring out from the abyss in the World beyond Worlds.

“The matter that Zhaoge mentioned before going to the Vast Ocean World has already seen results too,” Yuan Zhengfeng said, “I just do not know how much what we have learnt can benefit us.”

While Yan Zhaoge and Yan Di had surpassed him, over the years, Yuan Zhengfeng had now reached the late Seeing Divinity stage too, also possessing remarkable strength as he was a match for many seventh level Martial Saints.

When his accumulation was sufficient, he would be able to attempt a breakthrough into the Immortal Bridge stage.

Yan Di said, “I have already sent Huting to bring that to the Vast Ocean World and hand it to Zhaoge. I trust that there will be an answer when he emerges from seclusion and returns to the World beyond Worlds.”

Just like he said, Ah Hu had already arrived in the Vast Ocean World at this moment.

Over the years, the global situation of the Vast Ocean World had already changed once more.

While Broad Creed Mountain had not officially tried to take over the Vast Ocean World, Yan Zhaoge and the others had still formlessly influenced everything there.

Changli Mountain had already gradually become the most flourishing power of the Vast Ocean World.

With the faster timeflow of the Vast Ocean World, thirty years had already gone by since Yan Zhaoge had been active there.

The former Chief Gao Tianzhong of Changli Mountain was the current number one expert of the Vast Ocean World. In recent years, he had passed down his position to his disciple and then entered secluded cultivation, hoping to achieve his breakthrough into the late Merging Avatar stage.

Still, none of this had affected the disciples of Broad Creed Mountain who were active there.

After Ah Hu descended from the World beyond Worlds and saw the Elder of Broad Creed Mountain who was presiding over the area, he prepared to head over to the Bewildering Maze Sea.

Yan Zhaoge had still chosen this as the location for his secluded cultivation this time.

Learning that someone of Broad Creed Mountain had descended from the World beyond Worlds, the current Chief of Changli Mountain immediately sent someone over with an invitation.

The Martial Grandmaster who had come was very young, being around thirty.

A Martial Grandmaster at this age was indisputably a genius in the Vast Ocean World.

This youth was a disciple of the current Chief of Changli Mountain, having only risen to prominence within the Vast Ocean World in recent years.

Still, he was full of courtesy towards Ah Hu.

Changli Mountain had been on rather good terms with Broad Creed Mountain all these years. Ah Hu did not slight them as he followed him to pay a visit to Changli Mountain.

Having once met him before, realising his identity, the current Chief of Changli Mountain was slightly shocked, "Congratulations on Transcending Mortality and entering Sainthood, Mister Hu."

"Still, so you have actually come personally to the Vast Ocean

World? Could it be that there are some instructions from the Traceless Cloud Dragon King? Or is it that he himself is in the Vast Ocean World now?”

Ah Hu chuckled, “Yes, I have indeed come down on an errand this time. It has nothing to do with the Vast Ocean World. There is no need to worry about this, Chief Song.”

Chief Song asked with a solemn expression on his face, “Is there any area where you might need the help of my Changli Mountain?”

Ah Hu shook his head, “There is no need for that. I alone am necessary. Give greetings to your Master, old Chief Gao for me.”

Hearing this, Chief Song nodded, asking no further. He wanted to invite Ah Hu to a banquet. However, Ah Hu did not linger as he immediately took his leave and departed.

After personally seeing Ah Hu out, Chief Song gazed into the distance after him, murmuring to himself, “I wonder what the Traceless Cloud Dragon King wants to do...”

Beside him, his disciple asked curiously, “The first person to ascend to the World beyond Worlds in our Vast Ocean World that year was that Traceless Cloud Dragon King? I wonder how things are with him right now.”

“How things are?” Chief Song glanced back at his disciple, “That Mister Hu who just left is his servant and retainer.”

The youth opened his mouth wide, “Retainer...a Mar...Martial Saint?!”



# HSSB 1010: A terrifying person

---

The youth leapt up in fright, unconsciously looking in the direction that Ah Hu had vanished in. He was already long since nowhere to be seen.

It was just that what his Master had said had him so shocked he was unable to close his mouth.

The reason was precisely the fact that the current Ah Hu was shockingly already a Martial Saint.

Even though the current global situation of the Vast Ocean World was already vastly different from back when Yan Zhaoge had been active there, a Martial Saint expert was still indisputably a bigwig of a region.

The youth had previously gone to invite Ah Hu on behalf of Chief Song, having been respectful as he had not dared to slight him in the least.

Even if Ah Hu was unrelated to Broad Creed Mountain, there would not be any change to this at all.

Just he alone was already sufficient to stir up massive tides that surged to the heavens in the World beyond Worlds.

This was when no one knew how strong Ah Hu was for his cultivation level since he had never made a move in the Vast Ocean World before.

In truth, it was unknown even whether their former Chief, Gao Tianzhong, was a match for Ah Hu whose cultivation base was lower than his.

“That Mister Hu, isn’t he an Elder of Broad Creed Mountain?” The youth asked dazedly.

Looking at his disciple, Chief Song sighed, not blaming him for losing his composure.

“I cannot blame you for being so shocked. When I, your Master first saw Mister Hu, he was still a Martial Grandmaster,” Chief Song sighed, “Still, he is very young in relation to his cultivation base.”

“I originally believed that he was one of the core descendants of Broad Creed Mountain whom they have devoted great resources to. Never did I consider and only now do I know that he is actually the retainer of the Traceless Cloud Dragon King!”

Chief Song just shook his head a few times.

The disbelieving look on his disciple’s face had still yet to fade now, “Even for a Martial Grandmaster, being a retainer would still be too...too...”

“Too humiliating, too spineless, too inconceivable?” Chief Song slowly asked, “Especially with how this person has actually already Transcended Mortality and entered Sainthood yet seems willing to stay as the retainer of another, which makes it even harder for you to accept?”

The youth nodded.

Chief Song continued, “Think about it from another perspective. What sort of figure would someone that a Martial Grandmaster and even a Martial Saint would be willing to serve as a retainer be like?”

“The Traceless Cloud Dragon King is actually that...that terrifying?” The youth felt like only the word ‘terrifying’ could be used to describe someone like that.

Due to the fast timeflow in the Vast Ocean World, this youth had only been born after Yan Zhaoge had left the Vast Ocean World.

When he had entered Changli Mountain to learn martial arts, Yan Zhaoge had already long since not been active in the Vast Ocean World aside from his secret secluded cultivation sessions there.

He had heard of the many rumours regarding Yan Zhaoge.

Still, these just being rumours, they were still insufficient for him to have an actual understanding and grasp of Yan Zhaoge's true might.

Broad Creed Mountain had had disciples down in the Vast Ocean World in recent years, including outstanding talents like Xu Fei, Shi Jun, Ying Longtu and Sikong Qing who possessed shocking might.

Still, most of them had already left the Vast Ocean World before their cultivation base had reached the peak.

All along, Broad Creed Mountain had only ever used this location to temper their younger disciples.

Of the experts of Broad Creed Mountain who were presiding over this place, the strongest was their Grand Elder Zhang Kun who had finally broken through his bottleneck of several decades a couple of years ago, Transcending Mortality and entering Sainthood.

Martial Saints were not to be underestimated for sure. Still, Zhang Kun was someone who kept a low profile as he simply advanced and retreated alongside Changli Mountain most of the time.

The current Changli Mountain was the greatest power within the Vast Ocean World as it was often the case that the other sects had to join forces in order to be able to restrict them.

As a disciple of Changli Mountain, while this youth too was in admiration of the outstanding martial practitioners of Broad Creed Mountain, he still felt a great sense of pride with regard to himself and Changli Mountain.

He was confident of himself and proud of the glory of his sect.

Hearing the many legends of Yan Zhaoge, he had thought more of him as a goal to strive towards, firmly believing that he too would be able to achieve such heights one day.

It was very normal for confident and ambitious martial practitioners to have such thoughts, really.

Yet, at this moment, as the tip of the iceberg that was Ah Hu was revealed, this youth was instantly rendered stunned.

What sort of a person could have a Martial Grandmaster and even a Martial Saint willingly being his servant and retainer?

Just trying to consider this matter in greater detail, his head felt like it was spinning as he dared not think any further.

Glancing at his disciple, Chief Song sighed inwardly.

He had not dealt such a blow to his disciple deliberately, of course. That was the most outstanding disciple of his Changli Mountain's younger generation who was set to become a pillar of their sect.

Still, some horizons had to be expanded at the end of the day, some experiences ultimately being necessary.

The same had happened before for him that year.

Turning and gazing in the direction that Ah Hu had left in, Chief Song had a complex expression on his face, "While both of us bear the name of one of the Five Peaks of Daoism of pre-Great Calamity times, our fates are so vastly different..."

"The World beyond Worlds mentioned by those of Broad Creed Mountain-I wonder just what sort of miraculous land that is. How I wish I could experience it for myself!"

Just as he was feeling endlessly emotional, all-encompassing light suddenly surged out from the ground in the depths of Changli Mountain, shooting up into the horizon.

Chief Song and his disciple were both shocked at first before their rejoiced greatly.

"Master has left seclusion!"

"Grand Master has left seclusion!"

The former Chief of Changli Mountain and the current number one expert of the Vast Ocean World, Gao Tianzhong, had finally emerged from seclusion today after many years of secluded cultivation.

All of Changli Mountain felt even more joyful at the fact that Gao Tianzhong had successfully attained the third level of the Martial Saint realm, the late Merging Avatar stage.

With that, Changli Mountain's position as the number one sect of the Vast Ocean World was completely solidified.

With that, even if the other powers of the Vast Ocean World all joined forces, they still might not be able to resist the pressure exerted by Changli Mountain.

“Speaking of this, we really have to thank Broad Creed Mountain,” Regaining his wits, Chief Song said emotionally, ‘If not for treasures from our transactions that are only available in the World beyond Worlds, Master would probably not have been able to succeed so quickly.’”

The youth beside him said excitedly, “According to the words of those of Broad Creed Mountain, Grand Master only has to advance one step further before he can ascend to the World beyond Worlds!”

“At that time, our Changli Mountain will have far-reaching prospects, everything becoming possible!”

Chief Song said, “How could it be that easy? There are as many experts in the World beyond Worlds as there are clouds. Let us first just speak of Broad Creed Mountain's ‘Heavenly Roc’ Elder Xu who once took up residence at our Changli Mountain. When leaving the Vast Ocean World that year, he was still a Martial Grandmaster. Back then, Master had already Transcended Mortality and entered Sainthood.”

“A few years ago, however, news from Broad Creed Mountain

indicated that Heavenly Roc Xu had already attained the third level of the Martial Saint realm, even faster than Master has.”

Hearing his words, the youth had just been about to say something when his body suddenly shook.

He was currently already a Martial Grandmaster as he could still maintain his stability even amidst turbulent tides and tempestuous storms.

A moment ago, however, he had nearly toppled down to the ground.

Even Chief Song had wobbled, nearly falling!

It was not Changli Mountain beneath their feet which had been shaken, nor was it just limited to the Directionless Sea where Changli Mountain was located.

Instead, the entire Vast Ocean World had quaked simultaneously and trembled at this moment!

All martial practitioners of the Vast Ocean World felt an immense fear which was difficult to suppress arising within their hearts.

It was like the end of the world was here!

In truth, if this quaking went on without respite, the Vast Ocean World would face great waves that were even more terrifying than the quaking of the dragon tomb that year.

Once, every time the dragon tomb quaked, the Vast Ocean World would experience a massive tribulation, falling into devastation and ruin.

Presently, the dragon tomb had been destroyed, that tribulation never again to descend.

The quaking at this moment, however, would be able to cause the collapse of the entire Vast Ocean World, transforming it back into ashes and dust!

# HSSB 1011: Seventh level of the Martial Saint realm, early Immortal Bridge stage

---

“What exactly has happened?”

Chief Song and his disciple were both incomparably shocked, yet had the despairing feeling of being too weak and helpless to resist the grand will of heaven.

“Has anything special happened in recent days?” A deep, sonorous male voice suddenly resounded.

They looked over and saw that it was shockingly the old Chief of Changli Mountain, Gao Tianzhong!

There was no time to congratulate his Master on his breakthrough as Chief Song hurriedly said, “If there was anything special, it was that the Traceless Cloud Dragon King’s retainer, Mister Hu, came to our Vast Ocean World, only having departed just a while ago.”

“Huang Huting would have come here either on orders of Traceless Cloud Yan or because...” Gao Tianzhong’s pupils dilated slightly, “Or because Traceless Cloud Yan is in the Vast Ocean World.”

That youth was panicked, “This disturbance is being caused by the Traceless Cloud Dragon King? Does he want to destroy the Vast Ocean World?”

Chief Song rebuked, “He has no reason to do so.”

“There was once a similar incident before, just that the disturbance caused was not so great,” Gao Tianzhong gazed over in the direction of the Bewildering Maze Sea.

At that time, Yan Zhaoge had been in secluded cultivation there.

On that day, a light pillar had connected to the skies over the Bewildering Maze Sea, illuminating the world.

The people of the Vast Ocean World had all collectively witnessed the grand event that was Yan Zhaoge's ascension.

It was just that today, the quaking was not coming from the Bewildering Maze Sea or any single, specific place.

Instead, the entire Vast Ocean World was quaking all at once.

Yet, Gao Tianzhong was still gazing over in the direction of the Bewildering Maze Sea.

Chief Song and his disciple both realised, "Was it when Traceless Cloud Yan transcended the third level of the Martial Saint realm and ascended to the World beyond Worlds here that year?"

Gao Tianzhong said, "This might be a similar situation. Let us just await patiently."

They were helpless to do anything anyway, even if they so wanted to.

If this was really a tribulation that would destroy the Vast Ocean World, Gao Tianzhong who had just emerged from seclusion a late Merging Avatar Martial Saint would also be unable to survive himself.

Even the combined strength of all the current experts of the Vast Ocean World would be pointless. There would only be waiting for death.

A tribulation of the heavens collapsing and the skies breaking apart would only end in destruction for all living beings beneath this same sky.

Still, this potential tribulation did not last for an extended period of time.

Soon, the quaking subsided.

Everything regained its normalcy as everyone's fear from earlier seemed like an illusion.

"It really is Traceless Cloud Yan who has descended to our Vast



Ocean World!” Gao Tianzhong became increasingly certain of this fact.

Everyone of Changli Mountain exchanged looks, their expressions mostly complex as they ultimately just sighed in unison.

As those who had seen Yan Zhaoge in person before in the past thought back on those times, they all felt as if that had been a dream as it felt even more surreal than that great earthquake earlier.

Ah Hu who had previously taken his leave of Chief Song and his disciple and departed for the Bewildering Maze Sea naturally felt the changes in the Vast Ocean World too.

He was momentarily taken aback before he grinned widely and chuckled, feeling overjoyed, “Young Master has succeeded!”

After the quaking subsided, Ah Hu hurried over to the Bewildering Maze Sea.

At this moment, this place was not filled with all-encompassing light just like when Yan Zhaoge had previously broken through space and seen true Divinity.

After the quaking throughout the entire Vast Ocean World had subsided, the Bewildering Maze Sea seemed to have regained its usual quiet.

As Ah Hu shaded his eyes with a hand, gazing into the distance, a voice suddenly resounded behind him, “Why have you come down as well?”

“Young Master!” Ah Hu turned and saw Yan Zhaoge standing just behind him.

Ah Hu asked excitedly, “Young Master, have you ascended the Immortal Bridge like Family Head?”

Yan Zhaoge just smiled, not saying anything.

Still, in the eyes of Ah Hu, Yan Zhaoge's figure seemed to have vanished before him, having been replaced by the starry space of a universe.

As the numerous stars of that universe circulated, they crisscrossed and formed their trajectories, yet also influenced one another.

While the birth and destruction of stars could not be seen, it was as if he was facing a real universe and its sea of stars!

On this day, Yan Zhaoge had successfully ascended the Immortal Bridge, attaining the early Immortal Bridge stage as he officially began his path towards the Immortal realm.

Ah Hu was filled with admiration upon seeing this, only regaining his wits after a long time as he hurriedly said, "Family Head said that the matter you asked him to investigate before entering secluded cultivation has seen some results, Young Master, asking me to send it down to you."

"Oh?" Hearing his words, Yan Zhaoge's eyes lit up.

Ah Hu handed a jade slip over to Yan Zhaoge, who recognised it as the one he had given Yan Di in the past.

After basically browsing through its contents, light flashed in Yan Zhaoge's eyes as he fell into deep thought.

After a long while, Yan Zhaoge stroked his lower chin, murmuring to himself, "There is potential..."

Now, as time passed, following the subsiding of the quaking of the Vast Ocean World, the martial practitioners of the various lands were all calming down as the scenes from the end of the world vanished.

While there seemed to be no abnormality over at the Bewildering Maze Sea this time, everyone all rushed over to the Bewildering Maze Sea together.

Gao Tianzhong, the strongest expert of the Vast Ocean World as a newly ascended third level Martial Saint, was the first to arrive despite not having been geographically closest.

When he saw Yan Zhaoge, Gao Tianzhong was shocked.

At this moment, Yan Zhaoge who had appeared before him was just like a mortal as he was ordinary and innocuous. Not only did no true essence emanate from him whatsoever, the qi and blood of his entire body seemed slow too, not as strong as that of someone who cultivated in martial arts at all.

It was like even a martial practitioner who had only been cultivating for a few months with the most basic of foundations would be stronger than Yan Zhaoge.

Yet, someone like this was nonchalantly standing on the air above the Bewildering Maze Sea as if it was flat ground.

Gao Tianzhong himself could lock down his true essence and prevent it from leaking out with the look of having returned to simplicity as he casually stood in the air.

Still, he was aware that he would actually still have to utilise his true essence in order to do so.

It was just that he could use the smallest force to easily achieve what others would have to endeavour with all their might to succeed in.

It was very mystical, this subtle achieving of a big feat with a small force.

At the end of the day, however, force would still be needed in order to achieve that feat.

Yet, Yan Zhaoge was truly not emitting any true essence at all right now.

Such a feat completely went against the natural laws.

Seeing such a Yan Zhaoge, Gao Tianzhong was rendered

somewhat speechless for a time, not knowing what he should say.

Other martial practitioners of the Vast Ocean World successively arrived. At first, they were not much concerned with Yan Zhaoge's current appearance.

Still, after they had gradually come to realise this, shocked looks appeared on all their faces.

It was instead Yan Zhaoge whose expression was as per usual as he smiled and nodded towards them, "Long time no see, everyone. How have you been?"

He extended a hand, making a grabbing action amidst space.

The space of the surrounding heavens and earth instantly distorted.

"This Yan has some matters that I am heading to the World beyond Worlds to settle. I will not be reminiscing on old times with everyone here. Let us slowly chat again next time when there's time."

The world changed before the eyes of Gao Tianzhong and the others as an endless mountain range appeared out of thin air.

An endless chain of mountains appeared above the surface of the Bewildering Maze Sea!

Atop one of the mountain peaks, terrifying storms were rampaging.

This was precisely Tribulation Wind Mountain.

The wound of the sky that led from the Vast Ocean World to the World beyond Worlds was located in the sky above Tribulation Wind Mountain.

All Martial Saints were able to shift mountains and move seas.

Still, this was within a relatively close range.

Gao Tianzhong and the others were shocked because Tribulation

Wind Mountain was far away on the mainland as compared to the distant Bewildering Maze Sea that existed amongst the oceans.

At this moment, however, it had actually been shifted above the Bewildering Maze Sea by Yan Zhaoge!

“Wasn’t it said that when they descend, their cultivation bases are always restricted to the third level of the Martial Saint realm?” The martial practitioners of the Vast Ocean World all had blank looks on their faces at this moment.

# HSSB 1012: Official opening ceremony, Broad Creed Mountain gives invitations

---

Yan Zhaoge's cultivation base was indeed currently restricted to the third level of the Martial Saint realm.

Still, with his discernment, knowledge and miraculous methods, he had never been at the level of ordinary third level Martial Saints, surpassing even himself in the past.

As his cultivation base grew, Yan Zhaoge's powerful theoretical knowledge was ceaselessly being transformed into actual experience, no longer just being left on paper.

There was a qualitative difference between the two which was converted as Yan Zhaoge himself grew over time.

The sturdiness of the spatial boundaries of the Vast Ocean World was far from comparable to those of the World beyond Worlds.

Therefore, Yan Zhaoge could easily distort the distance in space and let Tribulation Wind Mountain that was far away appear atop this Bewildering Maze Sea.

After all, if the current Yan Zhaoge were to slightly release his power, he would be rejected by the power of dimensions, being unable to linger. Still, with just a thought on his part, this place would hence be reduced to nothingness.

Gao Tianzhong and the others waved goodbye as Yan Zhaoge strode forth and arose, next already having headed above the sky into the massive crevice that resembled a canyon.

Ah Hu followed closely after him, using a Heavenly Connection Jade as he entered the wound of the sky too.

As the figures of the two disappeared, the wound of the sky in the sky up above disappeared as well.

Tribulation Wind Mountain which had just been above the

Bewildering Maze Sea disappeared too.

Space seemed like an unfurled painting which contracted.

A short while later, all regained its normalcy as dense fog returned above the Bewildering Maze Sea and tides surged below, everything being as it had been before.

Only now did Gao Tianzhong and the others feel as if they had awoken from a dream.

While they could no longer see Yan Zhaoge, they simultaneously bowed towards the sky above.

It was as if they were paying respects to a deity.

“What cultivation base has the Traceless Cloud Dragon King currently attained?” This thought simultaneously arose in all their minds, not fading for a long time.

There were some hated enemies here.

At this moment, however, no one had thoughts of finding trouble for anyone else as they all had complicated moods that were difficult to elucidate.

“We...” Gao Tianzhong surveyed the surroundings, finally breaking the silence, “...We just witnessed a living legend.”

.....

Having already passed through the wound of the sky and returned to the World beyond Worlds, Yan Zhaoge was unable to hear the startled exclamations of those of the Vast Ocean World.

Currently, he was pondering on the affairs of the World beyond Worlds' Royal Reed Sea.

This was regarding the matter that he had entrusted his father and the sect with before descending to the World beyond Worlds previously.

As results had already been attained in this, this was double happiness for Yan Zhaoge who had just happened to emerge from

seclusion, successfully ascending the Immortal Bridge.

“Thinking about it now, as the location where the southeast and the south intersect, the spiritual qi veins of this Royal Reed Sea being out of the ordinary is not an unexpected thing.”

In entering the World beyond Worlds once more, Yan Zhaoge did not cause as great a disturbance as when he had seen Divinity and ascended previously.

Everything appeared peaceful and natural.

Looking at the region of sea of the Phoenix Bearing Region that rippled slightly before him, Yan Zhaoge pondered, “Be it the southern Blazing Heaven Territory or the southeastern Yang Heaven Territory, their spiritual qi veins are both on the tough, blazing side. This is exacerbated where the two Territories meet.”

The situation should originally have been similar for Circumference Mountain of the southern Blazing Heaven Territory.

However, the Dynasty River that ran southwards and passed through Circumference Mountain affected the spiritual qi circulation of the local earth veins through its abundant qi of water.

With that, the situation over there was different from here in the Royal Reed Sea.

“It was not for no reason that this place was selected for the Heaven Bearing Efficacy Formation to be established...” Yan Zhaoge muttered to himself.

Ah Hu asked, “Young Master, are you going to look around in the Royal Reed Sea after this?”

Yan Zhaoge nodded, “That’s right. I still need to investigate on-site a bit in order to better ready my preparations.”

“I was only tasked with sending that to you this time. I never



expected that you would coincidentally emerge from seclusion too,” Ah Hu scratched his head, “Family Head and the old Chief previously decided that we would wait for you to leave seclusion and return to the World beyond Worlds before officially hosting Broad Creed Mountain’s opening ceremony.”

Yan Zhaoge smiled, “Oh, is that so?”

Ah Hu gave a simple and honest smile, “Family Head successfully advanced further a while back. He has already attained the eighth level of the Martial Saint realm, the mid Immortal Bridge stage.”

“Things really couldn’t have been any better,” A look of joy appeared on Yan Zhaoge’s face.

He looked up and thought for a moment before saying, “The situation is still unclear now. We should act with due haste. Still, we need not let our preparations and arrangements get affected by others.”

“If troops come, we block them with generals. If water comes, we block it with a dam of earth. The time has long since come for our sect to officially open its doors in the World beyond Worlds.”

Yan Zhaoge told Ah Hu, “Let’s see. I will travel around the Royal Reed Sea myself and return to the Mountain when everything is settled and ready.”

“You should first return and report to my father and Grand Master. Do whatever needs to be done. Everything can be arranged for earlier. The invitations for guests can also already be delivered now.”

Ah Hu responded, “Yes, Young Master.”

As Yan Zhaoge traversed the Royal Reed Sea, Ah Hu returned alone to Broad Creed Mountain in the Spirit Inheritance Region.

Receiving news from Ah Hu, all of Broad Creed Mountain was naturally joyful indeed.

Broad Creed Mountain now had its second Immortal Bridge Martial Saint after Yan Di, this also being Yan Zhaoge who possessed shocking strength.

In recent years, the entirety of Broad Creed Mountain had been developing steadily upon its stablest of foundations, increasingly showing the momentum of soaring to prominence.

Yan Zhaoge's strength and potential had always left everyone amazed.

As his potential was gradually converted into greater and greater strength, his authority grew as well as the faith in him by everyone grew increasingly stable.

After hearing about Yan Zhaoge's current plans, Yan Di, Yuan Zhengfeng and the others did not voice any objections.

The threat of powerful enemies like the Heaven Emperor and the Southern Exalt still remained as it was unknown when they might come.

While it was said that they should do things at their own pace and not easily waver due to external factors, Yan Zhaoge and all of Broad Creed Mountain could not possibly ignore this latent threat.

Officially opening its doors was the event that possessed the most significance for Broad Creed Mountain now.

For everything to go successfully, more preparations were naturally needed for them to be more confident.

As Yan Zhaoge travelled in the Royal Reed Sea, all of Broad Creed Mountain began getting busy.

Messengers began to be dispatched to the various lands, delivering invitations for the opening ceremony to the guests.

News that Broad Creed Mountain would be officially opening its doors and accepting disciples very soon began spreading into the surroundings with the Royal Reed Sea as its centre.

It was not just within the southeastern Yang Heaven Territory as the news similarly came to be very widely known within the neighbouring southern Blazing Heaven Territory too, about Circumference Mountain and elsewhere.

Being the masters of the southeastern Yang Heaven Territory, also having always been on good terms with Broad Creed Mountain, Golden Court Mountain was naturally invited as well.

The Southeastern Swordsmistress who guarded over the border regions immediately received the news.

Even she who was well experienced and valiant was slightly astonished on receiving the invitation.

The Golden Court Mountain martial practitioners who were beside her exchanged looks, rendered speechless as they looked at one another.

“These people from Broad Creed Mountain are really fearless indeed,” A while later, someone spoke incredulously, “The Heaven Emperor and the Southern Exalt will definitely come to find trouble for them as soon as they get back. So blatantly and overtly opening the doors of their sect under such circumstances, aren’t they totally not putting these bigwigs in their eyes at all?”

# HSSB 1013: The Exalts return

---

The Golden Court Mountain martial practitioners first fell silent after receiving the news of Broad Creed Mountain's upcoming opening ceremony before an uproar ensued.

“Could it be that Broad Creed Mountain wants to move their entire sect over to the Circumference Mountain Range in the southern Blazing Heaven Territory? It would be impossible for them to set up the Nine Bends Yellow River Formation here in the Royal Reed Sea.”

Someone enquired, “Still, even establishing the Nine Bends Yellow River Formation, they still might not be able to resist the Heaven Emperor and Southern Exalt right?”

Someone beside him wondered aloud, “It is said that the Dim Radiant Emperor's Immortal Artifact fell into the hands of Broad Creed Mountain, this being something they have never denied. Could this be where the basis for their confidence lies?”

Everyone had heard rumours of the Immortal Artifact of legend that Broad Creed Mountain had obtained before, a relic of the Dim Radiant Emperor.

It was just that no one had ever seen it for real before.

During the battle of Broad Creed Mountain that year, Yan Zhaoge, Yan Di and the rest had joined forces and slain Guan Lide, Shen Lingzi, King Xuancheng and Daoist Shi, obtaining splendid battle results that bystanders would find difficult to believe.

Many had attributed this to the Immortal Artifact back then.

Still, after Yan Zhaoge had rampaged through the south and killed his way back to the southeast, shocking the world in those battles at Vast Spirit Mountain and Circumference Mountain, most people had begun appraising his strength seriously.

Along with that, they analysed Yan Di and other Broad Creed

Mountain martial practitioners, growing increasingly vigilant as a result.

More and more details were unearthed, such as how Yan Di had slain King Xuanmu of the sixth level of the Martial Saint realm right after having ascended to the World beyond Worlds back then.

With that, everyone had been stunned to discover that Yan Zhaoge was not Broad Creed Mountain's sole powerful figure.

In recent years, young martial practitioners of Broad Creed Mountain like Xu Fei, Xia Guang, Ying Longtu and Sikong Qing had similarly attained splendid battle results in walking the outside world.

Everyone had gradually gotten used to the strength of Broad Creed Mountain martial practitioners.

Thinking back again on that great battle at Broad Creed Mountain, many guessed that an Immortal Artifact had not played a part then.

Seeing as Yan Zhaoge rampaged from the south back to the southeast similarly without any trace of an Immortal Artifact, everyone began feeling restless once more.

Perhaps the news spread by the Radiant Light Sect back then had been fake?

The Radiant Light Sect was of the direct lineage of the Dim Radiant Sect. Still, their relationship with Broad Creed Mountain had been terrible back then as the possibility that they had deliberately tried to malign and harm them did exist for sure.

It was just that Broad Creed Mountain had never denied this. Therefore, to many, it was a mystery if they did possess an Immortal Artifact left behind by the Dim Radiant Emperor.

Still, all of Golden Court Mountain knew that Yan Zhaoge had really gained a relic of the Dim Radiant Emperor in the Dim

Radiant Mausoleum.

Therefore, they all thought of this now.

“It is not an Immortal Artifact. I heard it is only an embryonic Immortal Artifact,” The Southeastern Swordsmistress shook her head now.”

Hearing this, the others all frowned, “A long path has to be traversed for an embryonic Immortal Artifact to become an Immortal Artifact. That is something only True Immortals can forge in the first place. Even if ordinary people obtained one, they would still not be able to refine it completely, right?”

The Southeastern Swordsmistress slowly said, “Normally speaking, that is indeed the case.”

She gazed towards the horizon in the direction of Broad Creed Mountain.

“Besides Broad Creed Mountain’s upcoming official opening ceremony, the news also mentioned that the Yan father and son have both already ascended the Immortal Bridge.”

Everyone else nodded with admiring whilst also rather complex expressions on their faces.

Everyone present had virtually personally witnessed Yan Zhaoge progressing up to this point from when he had first arrived in the Royal Reed Sea of the World beyond Worlds that year.

Within less than twenty years, he had already traversed a path that most people would be unable to complete throughout their entire lives.

Relative to the longevity at his current cultivation level, the time he had used was extremely short.

Someone said, “Considering Yan Zhaoge’s strength when he was a late Seeing Divinity Martial Saint, now that he has ascended the Immortal Bridge, if he were to set up the Nine Bends Yellow River

Formation at Circumference Mountain, he might be able to protect himself from the Southern Exalt. Still, he would probably not be a match at all for the Heaven Emperor.”

“The location indicated on the invitation we were given is Broad Creed Mountain, Spirit Inheritance Region, Royal Reed Sea,” The Southeastern Swordmistress slowly said.

The martial practitioners of the southeast exchanged looks, “Without the Nine Bends Yellow River Formation, with the Immortal Artifact still in its embryonic form, what is to be done?”

One of them eventually forced a smile, “When the Heaven Emperor returns, the Brocade Emperor should probably be back too? I wonder if the Brocade Emperor will intervene when the time comes.”

Apart from the Southeastern Swordmistress’s group that was stationed at the border areas, Broad Creed Mountain naturally sent an invitation to Golden Court Mountain too.

While they did not know when the Southeastern Exalt would return to Golden Court Mountain, they naturally had to send an invitation out of courtesy.

The same went for Kunlun Mountain’s Ingenious Flying Peak’s Red Lotus Cliff.

The Brocade Emperor had still yet to return, with Fu Ting in secluded cultivation and unable to leave.

Still, having already received instructions from the Brocade Emperor previously, as Ingenious Flying Peak martial practitioners received the invitation, they immediately responded that they would be sending a representative to Broad Creed Mountain to observe the ceremony when the time came.

It was not limited to the southeastern Yang Heaven Territory as powers that usually had ties with Yan Zhaohe and Broad Creed Mountain received invitations too.

Chief Liu Xiangtong of the central Jun Heaven Territory's Heavenly Hut Mountain's Jade Mountain Sect received an invitation too, for instance.

Instead, Yan Zhaoge and Yan Di pondered over whether to send an invitation over to the Northern Exalt's lineage at Cloud Pavilion Mountain's Profound Remnant Locale in the northern Profound Heaven Territory.

The Northern Exalt's granddaughter Guan Yuluo was on great terms with Broad Creed Mountain's disciple Feng Yunsheng. Still, this was a personal friendship.

Her identity was too unique as anything that she did would generally be understood by others as the intent of the Northern Exalt.

Meanwhile, the Northern Exalt was not in any conflict with the Heaven Emperor and the Southern Exalt.

If it was just Feng Yunsheng alone, he might protect her considering how she had saved his granddaughter's life before.

Still, Yan Zhaoge was not delusional enough to believe that this warranted him opposing the Heaven Emperor for the sake of helping him and Broad Creed Mountain.

In sending an invitation to Profound Remnant Locale, even if they just invited Guan Yuluo alone, it would still be unknown what would happen as it might still make things difficult for them.

Feng Yunsheng was not around too as Broad Creed Mountain ultimately still decided not to send Profound Remnant Locale an invitation.

Still, Yan Zhaoge did send over his personal letter, inviting Guan Yuluo to help investigate Feng Yunsheng's situation again in the north.

With that, the other party would not have to feel awkward over whether to come to Broad Creed Mountain.



Broad Creed Mountain did send an invitation over to the northeastern Sky Heaven Territory's Green Sky Mountain's Grave Thunder Palace.

As for whether the Northeastern Exalt Liu Zhenggu would accept and come, that really depended on he himself.

Besides all the guests invited by Broad Creed Mountain, the spirits of others surged as they received the news.

Countless youngsters and even famed solitary practitioners began looking forward to the day Broad Creed Mountain officially opened its doors.

Ever since Yan Zhaoge had shaken the world in the shocking battles at Vast Spirit Mountain and Circumference Mountain that year, countless people had been waiting for this day.

Meanwhile, Illusory Coming Peak that was far away at Kunlun Mountain in the central Jun Heaven Territory and the southern Blazing Heaven Territory's Phoenix Ritual Mountain's Wutong Slope both naturally received the news as well.

Besides them, Nongli Mountain of the western Turtle Heaven Territory, Three Foot Mountain of the southeastern Yang Heaven Territory and countless powers of the southern Blazing Heaven Territory similarly got wind of this.

Many people ground their teeth in rage.

Those of Phoenix Ritual Mountain's Wutong Slope who had suffered most tragically at Yan Zhaoge's hands that year were riled the most intensely.

Just as fury was surging within their hearts, they sensed Phoenix Ritual Mountain where they were located suddenly shaking in its entirety.

A sea of flames obscured the sun in the northern skies as a phoenix flew over.

The spirits of the Wutong Slope martial practitioners collectively rose.

The Southern Exalt Zhuang Shen had finally returned to the southern Blazing Heaven Territory!

# HSSB 1014: The phoenix weeps blood

---

After leaving the southern Blazing Heaven Territory and heading to the central Jun Heaven Territory, the Southern Exalt Zhuang Shen had been gone for around eight to nine years. Now, he had finally returned to Phoenix Ritual Mountain's Wutong Slope.

For most mortals where life was but a quick hundred years, eight to nine years was already not short.

Still, for martial practitioners with high cultivation bases, a single session of secluded cultivation could already last more than ten years.

The last time the Southern Exalt Zhuang Shen had been in secluded cultivation, nearly twenty years had passed.

It was just that it had never been the case that the world before Zhuang Shen seemed to have been changed completely, things still remaining but people no longer being the same.

At this moment, he was sitting on the main seat in the great hall, unblinkingly looking at those of his lineage.

Zhuang Shen's features had not changed in the least as compared to in the past.

He still looked quite handsome, merely in his thirties as he snow-white hair was tied in a simple bun.

Still, looking at the people before him, Zhuang Shen's face was sunken as water.

His in-law and junior apprentice-brother whom he had always been on close terms with, the 'Blazing King' Peng He, was gone.

His junior apprentice-brother 'Treasured Branch Suppressing Peak' Zhang Shuren was also no longer there. While he had not been as close with him as he had Peng He, Zhuang Shen had respected him and placed great trust in him and his competence.

The prided disciple who he had most favoured and taken great pains to raise, 'Phoenix Pupils' Yuan Xiancheng, was similarly nowhere to be seen.

Besides them, there were also many other people of Wutong Slope who would never again appear within this great hall.

Finally, there was also his son, Zhuang Chaohui...

Looking at the desolate scene before him, Zhuang Shen was silent for a long time.

Amongst the crowd, a middle-aged man with the appearance of a scholar said, "With senior apprentice-brother Zhang and junior apprentice-brother Peng no longer here and the southeast dominant, we could only defend Phoenix Ritual Mountain and await your return, senior apprentice-brother Zhuang."

Looking at this middle-aged man, Zhuang Shen slowly said, "It has been tough on you, junior apprentice-brother Mao."

The middle-aged man lowered his head, replying, "Please think of something, Chief."

This person was Phoenix Ritual Mountain's other ninth level Martial Saint bigwig, 'Phoenix Crying Southern Territory' Mao Yuansheng who had been acclaimed alongside Peng He and Zhang Shuren.

He, Peng He and Zhuang Shen were descended of the same lineage.

Several hundred years ago, when the previous generation had still been in charge of Phoenix Ritual Mountain's lineage and Zhuang Shen's Master had been leading them, Mao Yuansheng had actually been the descendant who was looked most highly upon.

At that time, their Master had thought more highly of Mao Yuansheng as compared to Zhuang Shen, even having once expressed his desire for Mao Yuansheng to take over his mantle and continue with the management of Wutong Slope's lineage.

It was just that Zhuang Shen who had been comparatively ordinary in his youth had risen with great momentum afterwards, eventually coming to overtake him.

With their Master having unexpectedly died early on, he had not been able to decide on the next candidate for Chief.

In the end, Zhuang Shen had won the succession.

Still, it was true that the lineage of Phoenix Ritual Mountain's Wutong Slope had flourished in his hands as the Phoenix True Form Scripture had become increasingly refined.

When Zhuang Shen had attained the Human Exalt stage afterwards, Phoenix Ritual Mountain had reached an unprecedented peak in its history.

While Zhuang Shen had not suppressed Mao Yuansheng, his relationship with him was indisputably the most estranged amongst the three ninth level Martial Saint bigwigs of Wutong Slope.

Zhang Shuren had gone on orders to guard Circumference Mountain at the border areas. While this seemed like he had been sent far away, it actually showed how deeply Zhuang Shen trusted him.

If it really was a tough vocation, it was impossible that Zhuang Shen would have also sent his favoured disciple, Zhuang Chaohui, there.

The one helping Zhuang Shen to preside over things at Phoenix Ritual Mountain's Wutong Slope after he had left for the central Jun Heaven Territory was 'Blazing King' Peng He with whom he was closest.

Ever since those past events, Mao Yuansheng had actually always been keeping a rather low profile.

The 'Phoenix Crying Southern Territory' of the past seemed to not quite live up to his reputation now.

This time, it was also only with the deaths of Zhang Shuren and Peng He that Mao Yuansheng had returned to Wutong Slope to preside over things.

As Wutong Slope's expert who was second strongest after Zhuang Shen, Mao Yuansheng instead became even more low key.

"Think of something?" While Zhuang Shen's expression was calm with no fluctuations visible from it whatsoever, all the Wutong Slope martial practitioners could sense the world they were in seemingly catching ablaze in its entirety.

A fiery phoenix spread its wings and cried out before them. Still, it was clearly shedding tears of blood.

Seeing this illusion of a phoenix weeping blood, everyone, including Mao Yuansheng, shivered.

The illusion vanished. Zhuang Shen remained expressionless as it was like his emotions had not rippled in the least.

Still, everyone knew that the illusory phenomenon from earlier was actually the true manifestation of his innermost thoughts.

"Thirty-seven people from our Wutong Slope died in the hands of the one surnamed Yan."

Zhuang Shen stood up, "Amongst them were two late Immortal Bridge Martial Saints, my most prided disciple and the most outstanding descendant of our younger generation and my own son."

He looked at Mao Yuansheng, "If I do not come back this time, you should assume the role of Chief, junior apprentice-brother Mao."

Mao Yuansheng lowered his head, "I am willing to support senior apprentice-brother in going southeast."

"What?" Zhuang Shen furrowed his snowy-white brows, "Our lineage cannot be broken."

Mao Yuansheng raised his head, looking at Zhuang Shen.

Zhuang Shen said, “Whatever it was that Xiancheng and the others died because of, the truth is that all of them perished at Circumference Mountain.”

“While I am back, Cao Jie has returned too. If we battle at Circumference Mountain, things will be difficult to predict.”

Mao Yuansheng was silent for a while before he said, “Why must you go to such lengths, senior apprentice-brother...”

Zhuang Shen said calmly, “To take revenge for Master, I dared to battle a ninth level Martial Saint when at the seventh level of the Martial Saint realm.”

“Could it be that now that I am ruling the south and have gotten on in years, I would have become more cowardly?”

Mao Yuansheng was silent as he finally said after a while, “So this is why you are ‘Phoenix Soaring Nine Heavens’ and I am only ‘Phoenix Crying Southern Territory’?”

“I may die earlier than you,” Zhuang Shen said mildly, “I am stronger than you, but others may be stronger than me.”

“Still, do not think that rage has rushed to my head and knocked me silly. I am calmer than I have ever been.”

“For taking revenge heedless of the costs, first comes taking revenge. Heedless of the costs only comes afterwards.”

Hearing Zhuang Shen’s words, the spirits of Mao Yuansheng and the other martial practitioners of Wutong Slope all rose slightly.

Now, the space outside of Wutong Slope shook like the rippling of water.

A figure walked out from within.

His arrival did not startle anyone of Wutong Slope as only Zhuang Shen sensed it, “Brother Lang is here, I see. Zhuang Shen has failed to show courtesy.”

“Brother Lang? Lang...” Hearing this, Mao Yuansheng and the others were first shocked before they rejoiced, “The Western Exalt is here?”

Zhuang Shen said mildly, “This is separate from the matter with Chaohui and Xiancheng. I have also invited Brother Lang to our Wutong Slope as a guest to discuss punishing the southeast together.”

Amidst his words, a middle-aged man walked inside, “Brother Zhuang, I have heard about what has happened. My condolences.”

Seeing this, the Wutong Slope martial practitioners collectively greeted, “We greet the Western Exalt.”

This person was none other than the Chief of the western Turtle Heaven Territory’s Nongli Mountain, the Western Exalt Lang Qing.

“Since you already know, I will not explain things further,” Zhuang Shen said, “I wonder if Brother Lang is willing to assist me?”



# HSSB 1015: Seeking assistance

---

The Western Exalt Lang Qing was dressed in scholarly attire just like Mao Yuansheng. Still, he had an outer Daoist robe draped over him.

He had a short beard which was very trimmed very neatly.

“We have a common enemy in Cao Jie,” Lang Qing said, “The newly arisen Broad Creed Mountain is an unexpected variable.”

“From how things look now, this Broad Creed Mountain is virtually like a new watchdog that Cao Jie has reared. If we do not first get rid of this nail, Golden Court Mountain will forever remain stable.”

Lang Qing slowly nodded, “I too would be very happy to pull out this nail first. Still, this does not seem possible at the moment.”

Zhuang Shen did not feel that Lang Qing was trying to push things away as he instead asked calmly, “Have you heard something, Brother Lang?”

“That’s right. I came here this time for the sake of informing you about it.” Lang Qing nodded, “The Brocade Emperor is back in the World beyond Worlds.”

“Also, word from Ingenious Flying Peak is that he intends to protect Yan Zhaoge and Broad Creed Mountain.”

As soon as this was said, the expressions of all the Wutong Slope martial practitioners present sunk.

They had not expected that the Brocade Emperor would express such a clear and definite stance.

Still, no one raised any doubts regarding this.

The Southeastern Exalt Cao Jie was on close terms with the Brocade Emperor. Meanwhile, while the Western Exalt Lang Qing and Cao Jie could not easily coexist, he could be considered a good

friend of the Brocade Emperor's.

After failing to successfully mediate between Cao Jie and Lang Qing, the Brocade Emperor generally helped neither of the two sides, maintaining a neutral stance.

Still, for Wutong Slope, this was a mountain that would be difficult to overcome.

Zhuang Shen slowly asked, "Since when was this?"

"It was virtually at the same time as when we emerged from seclusion," Lang Qing answered, "He was clearly planning for this since long ago."

"With the Heaven Emperor still yet to return from extradimensional space, if we head to the southeast now, we will only be pointlessly colliding with a wall."

Lang Qing was speaking rather politely with this.

For Lang Qing whose relationship with the Brocade Emperor was not bad, it might just be colliding with a wall. Still, for Zhuang Shen and Wutong Slope, things might not end up as simply as that.

Someone blurted out, "If we only make a move on Broad Creed Mountain, not laying a hand on Golden Court Mountain, would the Brocade Emperor still act?"

Lang Qing did not mind him suddenly interjecting as he just nodded slowly.

That Wutong Slope martial practitioner's expression suddenly changed slightly, "Could some of those rumours be true? The Brocade Emperor is choosing a groom for Red Lotus Fu? The one he has set his eyes on is that fella surnamed Yan?"

Hearing this, Zhuang Shen looked at Lang Qing with an enquiring look on his face.

While Wutong Slope hated Yan Zhaoge to the core, they had to admit that he was probably the most outstanding person of the

World beyond Worlds' younger generation in recent years, a favoured son of Heaven.

The name Fallen Deity was widespread even in the southern Blazing Heaven Territory.

“We cannot say that he does not intend this for sure. Still, this should not be the case,” Lang Qing shook his head, “Word from Ingenious Flying Peak is that Yan Zhaoge once rescued Fu Ting. Thus, they wish to return this debt.”

Zhuang Shen pondered for a moment before saying, “The Brocade Emperor might not be able to act.”

“Oh?” Lang Qing was rather taken aback as he looked at Zhuang Shen.

Beside him, Mao Yuansheng coughed dryly before elaborating, “It is not that the news you received is erroneous. What Chief means is that while the Brocade Emperor might want to lend a hand, when the time comes, he might not be able to do so.”

Lang Qing knit his brows, “Why do you say that?”

Zhuang Shen spoke some words in a low tone. Lang Qing's expression changed.

“I would like Brother Lang's help in ascertaining if my method is viable,” Zhuang Shen requested.

Lang Qing pondered for a moment before slowly nodding, “There seems to be a high chance. There is indeed much certainty of success.”

He turned to look at Zhuang Shen, “It looks like Brother Zhuang has been plotting for a long time.”

Zhuang Shen said calmly, “This was initially because of Golden Court Mountain. While the Heaven Emperor is in a conflict with the Brocade Emperor, I still wanted to make some more preparations.”

“Still, it is now for that Yan Zhaoge and Broad Creed Mountain.”

“There is no need to be disappointed, Brother Lang. If I do not guess wrongly, Cao Jie will definitely act to aid Yan Zhaoge and Broad Creed Mountain. We still share a common enemy.”

Lang Qing said, “Brother Zhuang speaks rightly. Still, since you have this move, I would prefer that you wait for a while longer.”

Zhuang Shen nodded, “Awaiting the Heaven Emperor’s return?”

“That’s right. A gentleman does not mind waiting ten years to exact his revenge. Moreover, the circumstances are far from requiring as many as ten years,” Lang Qing said, “With the Brocade Emperor, there will be the Heaven Emperor to stop him. Without the Brocade Emperor, there would be a surefire chance of winning. There would not be a chance of an accident happening in the least.”

“There is a high chance of your method succeeding, Brother Zhuang. Still, we also have to consider the scenario where the Brocade Emperor is still able to rush over and make it.”

Zhuang Shen’s expression was calm as he slowly said, “You speak rightly, Brother Lang. Actually, even if the Brocade Emperor cannot act, our combined might still cannot be assured of taking him down for sure. I already intended to seek further assistance in the first place.”

Lang Qing asked, “Who do you intend to look for?”

“I believe Brother Lang knows the appearance of that Yan Zhaoge,” Zhuang Shen asked rather than answered, “Don’t you feel that his appearance is similar to someone’s?”

Lang Qing focused his mind as an image of Yan Zhaoge quickly flashed through it, being compared with all those within his memory.

It would have been fine if Zhuang Shen had not mentioned it, but now that it had, Lang Qing too gradually gained his suspicions.

“That disciple of Hu Yuexin’s, Xue Chuqing?” Lang Qing frowned, “They are related by blood? Mother and son? While there is a resemblance between their brows, there are also many who appear similar yet are wholly unrelated...”

At this point, the Western Exalt Lang Qing suddenly halted, his gaze flickering as he appeared to be pondering something.

Zhuang Shen said, “That’s right. It would be fine if only their appearance was similar. Still, I noticed one thing.”

“You and I both know that Cao Jie has protected the descendants of the Dim Radiant Sect. However, even if that brat surnamed Yan did not acquire an Immortal Artifact in the Dim Radiant Mausoleum, he still benefited from Yin Tianxia’s remnant legacies for sure. With him not being an orthodox descendant of the Dim Radiant Sect, Cao Jie was not enraged, instead actually having been constantly watching over him? This is not normal.”

Hearing Zhuang Shen’s words, Lang Qing stroked his beard, “It is suspected that Hu Yuexin’s descendant may have inadvertently acquired a clue left behind by Yin Tianxia. It is because of that Yan Zhaoge’s relation to Hu Yuexin’s descendant that Cao Jie views him in a different light?”

“That’s not right...” Lang Qing shook his head, his eyes narrowing into slits, “It was not inadvertently. From the looks of it now, Hu Yuexin and Yin Tianxia were close from the very start. It was because of that that what Yin Tianxia brought back ended up in Hu Yuexin’s hands, now being in the possession of that descendant of hers!”

He opened his eyes, “What a Dim Radiant Emperor, what a pulling the wool over everybody’s eyes. His successors were never his descendants of the Dim Radiant Sect in the first place, instead being that lineage of Hu Yuexin’s.”

Zhuang Shen nodded, “Cao Jie should be in the know to some extent.”

Lang Qing looked at him, “In that case, the people you wish to seek for assistance...”

“Fellow Daoist Oneheaven of the east,” Zhuang Shen replied, “Lian Zulin of the northwest.”

Daoist Oneheaven was the Lord of the eastern Vast Heaven Territory, the Eastern Exalt who ruled Remote Cloud Mountain’s Clear Light Locale.

Lian Zulin was the Lord of the northwestern Dim Heaven Territory, the Northwestern Exalt who ruled the Red Sea.

# HSSB 1016: Unprecedented event in the Royal Reed Sea

---

Yan Zhaoge's mother, Xue Chuqing, was secretly a wanted fugitive in some parts of the World beyond Worlds.

While she might not be a wanted fugitive for sure, there were many who wanted to find her.

This was mainly in the central Jun Heaven Territory, the eastern Vast Heaven Territory, the northwestern Dim Heaven Territory and the western Turtle Heaven Territory.

Now that they knew that Yan Zhaoge and Yan Di might be related to Xue Chuqing, they had acquired an extremely powerful clue in their search for her.

Therefore, Zhuang Shen was confident of inviting the Eastern Exalt, Daoist Oneheaven, and the Northwestern Exalt, Lian Zulin, to provide their assistance.

Still, as Zhuang Shen mentioned the name of the Northwestern Exalt, he looked over at Lang Qing.

Generally speaking, the relationships between the eight Territories of the World beyond Worlds aside from the central Jun Heaven Territory were not all that harmonious for the neighbouring Territories.

Adding up all the major and minor conflicts, even if they did not culminate into irreconcilable enmity, things would still be extremely tense between them.

It was just that while some could be suppressed, others would gradually rise to the surface.

This was not just manifested in the relationship between the southeastern Yang Heaven Territory and the southern Blazing Heaven Territory.

The relationships between the southeastern Yang Heaven Territory and eastern Vast Heaven Territory, the eastern Vast Heaven Territory and the northeastern Sky Heaven Territory and the northeastern Sky Heaven Territory and the northern Profound Heaven Territory were all not that good.

Similarly, there were also many conflicts between the western Turtle Heaven Territory and the northwestern Dim Heaven Territory.

The Western Exalt Lang Qing had a composed expression on his face, “She and I share a similar opinion on the matter of Hu Yuexin’s descendant, at least.”

“It is precisely for this that you will be inviting her this time. I trust that she will not refuse.”

Zhuang Shen nodded, “That’s good then.”

He had previously held a neutral stance towards Xue Chuqing’s matter. If the Three Sovereigns and Five Emperors did not give a definite order, he would ignore things with her.

Now that Zhuang Shen had vaguely sensed the relationship between Yan Zhaoge and Xue Chuqing, however, Zhuang Shen’s stance regarding this matter had naturally changed.

“Although we have no actual proof, my guess that Yan Zhaoge is related to Hu Yuexin’s descendant should not be wrong,” Zhuang Shen asked, “That being the case, should I invite Elder Wang to act?”

Lang Qing shook his head, “While he may be able to give us some extra leeway, it is unknown if he would personally act.”

Zhuang Shen raised his head slightly, slowly exhaling, “When the Immortal Artifact within the Dim Radiant Mausoleum ended up in the hands of that Yan Zhaoge back then and the news spread, he did not make a move. This makes it hard to tell if he would act now.”



Regretful looks appeared on the faces of the Wutong Slope martial practitioners behind him.

The ‘Elder Wang’ that Zhuang Shen and Lang Qing spoke of referred to none other than the Earth Exalt, Wang Zhengcheng!

He was the lord of the central Jun Heaven Territory, one of those who stood at the peak of all the Martial Saints of the World beyond Worlds.

More importantly, Wang Zhengcheng acted according to the will of the Earthly Sovereign most of the time.

“No matter,” Zhuang Shen’s gaze was deep as an abyss as he slowly said, “We will contact Daoist Oneheaven and Fellow Daoist Lian.”

Lang Qing said, “We need to communicate with the others too, making some appropriate concessions when necessary lest others cause trouble in our domains when we head southeast.”

Zhuang Shen nodded, slowly saying, “Since that is so, let us wait for the Heaven Emperor to return to the World beyond Worlds.”

“When we left seclusion, the Heaven Emperor and the Brocade Emperor too became able to free themselves from extradimensional space. The Heaven Emperor has long since known of the deaths of Qing Shuzi and Daoist Leading Mist. While the Brocade Emperor arrived quickly, the Heaven Emperor will probably not be that much slower than him.”

Zhuang Shen turned to look in the direction of the southeastern Yang Heaven Territory, “Grand opening ceremony? It just happens that we managed to make it in time. Since that is so, we will come over to give you some congratulations on that day.”

.....

Broad Creed Mountain quickly learnt the news that the Southern Exalt had finally returned to the southern Blazing Heaven Territory.

This was because the Southeastern Exalt Cao Jie similarly returned to the southeastern Yang Heaven Territory.

After learning of the various events which had transpired, the Southeastern Exalt Cao Jie felt them to be rather out of his expectations.

Still, he quickly made the relevant arrangements.

Cao Jie expressed a definite stance regarding Broad Creed Mountain's opening ceremony. He would be coming personally to attend it.

With that, Broad Creed Mountain and Golden Court Mountain both understood that the Southeastern Exalt would be giving Yan Zhaoge and Broad Creed Mountain his full support.

At the same time, Yan Zhaoge and the others learnt from Cao Jie that the Brocade Emperor Fu Yunchi had already returned from extradimensional space in recent days, returning to the World beyond Worlds.

News was transmitted from Kunlun Mountain's Ingenious Flying Peak's Red Lotus Cliff, confirming this as fact.

The news that the Heaven Emperor had yet to return with the Brocade Emperor possibly having returned first instead caused most people to inwardly heave a sigh of relief.

After thanking the guest from Ingenious Flying Peak, Yan Zhaoge went on with his preparations neither hurriedly nor slowly.

"From the looks of it, after experiencing a peak, the conflict between the Immortal Court and Buddhism has gradually regained stability," Yan Zhaoge thought, "Bar any major incidences, a hundred years should pass before the next peak occurs."

A hint of gloominess flickered within Yan Zhaoge's gaze.

With the end of the all-out battle between the Immortal Court and the blessed lands, the conflict between the two sides was

transitioning to merely one of normal tensions.

With that, the Immortal Court might be able to spare more attention for the World beyond Worlds.

The negative aftereffects from him having obtained the Dim Radiant Wheel might gradually begin to show.

Not considering the distant Immortal Court, the stances of the bigwigs of the World beyond Worlds who were close at hand were already hard to grasp for certain now.

The door of the Myriad Dragon Palace which hovered above Yan Zhaoge's head opened, the space blurry within.

Now, a completely transparent silhouette appeared, next gradually turning clear till finally a huge black metal wheel appeared.

Of the twelve slots on the wheel, nine of them were currently flickering with either bright or dim light, rotating along with the wheel.

While it looked ordinary, those concepts contained within were vigorous and tyrannical to the extreme.

Because it had yet to be completely refined, it would still not be easy to draw on its power.

Even so, however, there was momentous power within that one would really sigh at.

This was precisely the Dim Radiant Wheel.

After a long time, this treasure was already much more refined than before as it unceasingly worked towards grand completion.

It had already long since stopped completely ignoring Yan Zhaoge like it had in the past. While it was impossible for it to be as acute as Sacred Artifacts, Yan Zhaoge had already gradually gained a strong mental connection with it.

Yan Zhaoge was setting the three remaining slots aside for the

time being.

His cultivation base was still low at the present moment. While he was proficient in the forging of artifacts, the time was still not ripe for it to be completely refined into an Immortal Artifact.

Still, going by his original plan, this was already enough.

With a complete Immortal Artifact not being achieved, there was not much of an actual difference between nine slots and eleven slots in his plan.

Keeping a few high-grade Sacred Artifacts would be beneficial to raising the combat power of he and his sect.

Before Broad Creed Mountain's official opening ceremony, the Ten Exalts had already returned from Kunlun Mountain as the Brocade Emperor had also managed to return from extradimensional space.

While the Brocade Emperor had come back a little earlier, the Heaven Emperor would probably not be much far behind as he would likely be returning before their opening ceremony too.

While the Southern Exalt had not stirred ever since returning, Yan Zhaoge did not believe that he would let things go just like that.

Everyone might just be awaiting the arrival of that single day together.

It would be an unprecedented event in the Royal Reed Sea.

# HSSB 1017: A big stage, I like it

---

“Who knows how many people have all set their eyes on our opening ceremony this time...” Yan Zhaoge pondered, going through his preparations once more.

This was one of the rare times in which Yan Zhaoge was not sufficiently confident of a battle which he would be engaging in.

Before the final moment, no one could know how many enemies they would face, who they were and how many helpers they might have.

Things were very unclear as the factors involved were too many and the information at hand little.

For example, his mother had once had an encounter with the Northeastern Exalt as they had left pretty good impressions on each other.

Still, it was completely unknown whether this bigwig would provide his assistance.

The ties between them did not run all that deep, and there were also no tensions which existed between the Northeastern Exalt and the Southern Exalt.

Why would the other party want to help them?

Moreover, there was also the pressure of the Heaven Emperor.

Why would the Northeastern Exalt offend the Heaven Emperor for no good reason?

On the contrary, if the relationship between him and Xue Chuqing were made known, the Eastern Exalt, the Western Exalt and the Northwestern Exalt might all come finding trouble for them.

While these things were not definite, it was still necessary for Yan Zhaoge to consider them.

This could be imagined making a rather bleak guess from his understanding of some things.

Due to a lack of information, there were some things that he did not know at all, which could lead to occurrences that completely surpassed his expectations at any moment.

For example, what were the opinions of the World beyond Worlds' Three Sovereigns with regard to his mother, the Dim Radiant Wheel that he possessed and the late Dim Radiant Emperor?

What were the stances of the other three Emperors besides the Brocade Emperor and the Heaven Emperor?

What were the stances of the remaining Exalts of those ten?

It was impossible for them to know themselves as they knew their enemies, with many projections possibly being completely wrong.

Still, Yan Zhaoge was neither flustered nor fearful as he just unceasingly brushed up on his plans.

Making sure that he did the best he could without exposing any flaws or openings was most definitely the basis of everything.

With that as a precondition, he made many schemes and plans which might be useful.

For changes that were really completely out of their expectations, they would have to react accordingly on the spot.

Of course, things would be much simpler if the Brocade Emperor acted as had been agreed.

"Our own strength is still of foremost importance," Yan Zhaoge looked up at the Dim Radiant Wheel.

Yan Zhaoge had invested quite a bit into this fella.

It was truly an ultra money-eating machine.

Not counting the Dim Radiant Lamp which the Dim Radiant Emperor Yin Tianxia had used to establish its foundation back then, Yan Zhaoge had already depleted a whole bunch of high-grade Sacred Artifacts to refine it.

Following the golden sun wheel and the Five Phoenix Fan, the Dragontail Whip, the Blazing Flame Sabre, the Heaven Earth Reversing Axe, the Jet Dragon Whip and the other two high-grade Sacred Artifacts which he had obtained from the southern Blazing Heaven Territory, the True Slashing Sword and the Light Dust Formless Armour, had all been refined by the Dim Radiant Wheel.

The concepts contained within these Sacred Artifacts had been unordinary in the first place. Still, most of them had not been needed by the Dim Radiant Wheel.

Yan Zhaoge had used them as intermediaries with which he transmitted the various peak martial arts that he was proficient in.

Apart from that, there were also the Golden Crow World Incinerating Sabre and Purple Sea Sword which had been devoured from the start.

Of the ten high-grade Sacred Artifacts that Yan Zhaoge had returned from the southern Blazing Heaven Territory with, only the Bright Barbaric Daoist Robe and the Phoenix Crying Crown still remained as the golden sun wheel and the Heaven Earth Reversing Axe had been used up too.

Still, there were returns to these gains.

This fella before him might be able to achieve what ten high-grade Sacred Artifacts could not.

While it had not been completely refined successfully, this was an extremely important segment of his plan, provided his projections had not been wrong.

Stroking his lower chin, Yan Zhaoge suddenly smiled, “A big stage, I like it.”

“Be it fortune or calamity, let it come quickly. I cannot wait.”

In the upcoming days, Yan Zhaoge tempered himself while continuing to further refine his various preparations.

Over this time, unbeknownst to the outside world, Broad Creed Mountain actually gained its third Immortal Bridge Martial Saint.

Yan Zhaoge's Northern Ocean Clone finally also successfully established the orbit of stars within the inner universe of his own body, causing his acupoints that had already seen Divinity to circulate and attain the Immortal Bridge stage.

This time, however, it was the Northern Ocean Clone who had benefited from his main body, drawing from his experience to finally successfully surpass that bottleneck and break through.

The might of Yan Zhaoge's Northern Ocean Clone was inferior to that of his real body at the same cultivation level.

Still, a thought that Yan Zhaoge had regarding this clone of his seemed rather viable now.

Following the power of the Kunpeng, true dragon, Taotie, Pixiu and Bifang, Yan Zhaoge integrated the strength of the Golden Crow within as well.

With these many forces and treasures boosting him forward and unique cultivation techniques too, the Northern Ocean Clone's strength improved by leaps and bounds.

What he had thought of previously seemed to be gradually nearing fruition.

Time went on and on, soon nearing the date of Broad Creed Mountain's official opening ceremony.

At this time, news was sent back.

Following the Brocade Emperor, the Heaven Emperor too had finally returned to the World beyond Worlds.

.....



“The Heaven Emperor is back in the World beyond Worlds?”

Beneath the clear skies of the Roving Jade Heavens.

Clear Duckweed Mountain’s Scenery Peak’s Flowing Heaven Horizon.

Within a cave manor, a handsome youth was lying lazily on his side, yet somehow possessed a graceful bearing.

Someone of this cave manor who looked like this would naturally be the master of this place, the Dragon Spring Emperor Long Xingquan who originated from the Jade Clear lineage but had joined the Prime Clear lineage.

Before him was a white-haired old man.

This was the Dragon Spring Emperor’s eldest son, the lord of Green Duckweed Mountain’s Minor White Peak Gao Xuebo.

He nodded, replying, “Yes, father. The Heaven Emperor has already returned to the World beyond Worlds.”

“He should be the greatest threat to Broad Creed Mountain,” The Dragon Spring Emperor smiled, “I wonder if anyone else will make a move too.”

Gao Xuebo asked, “Are you going to return to the World beyond Worlds?”

The Dragon Spring Emperor shook his head, “That would instead bring calamity to Broad Creed Mountain. This should still be left to Zhenbei to handle.”

Gao Xuebo frowned, “If it is that person, considering his attitude in recent years...”

“I believe that he will not disappoint us,” The Dragon Spring Emperor said mildly, “A major disturbance will be descending upon the World beyond Worlds this time.”

.....

World beyond Worlds, central Jun Heaven Territory.

Kunlun Mountain's Southern High Peak, Qilin Cliff.

In the cave manor, an old man looked at a few images of light, not speaking for a long time.

It was a long time before he said, "It was actually not a coincidence. Such a martial dao would not be wrong. Still, how was this done?"

"Also, the age doesn't match..."

Now, someone entered, "Master, the Southern Exalt is awaiting outside."

The old man turned, revealing an old face which resembled the great, heavy earth.

This was none other than the lord of the central Jun Heaven Territory, the Earth Exalt Wang Zhengcheng!

He pondered slightly for a moment before retrieving a jade box, "Hand this over to Southern Zhuang."

His disciple acknowledged his instructions, receiving the jade box and bowing before he left.

The door soundlessly closed behind him. The illusory image that Wang Zhengcheng was gazing at grew silent as well.

Outside the cave manor, the Southern Exalt Zhuang Shen who looked like a white-haired youth was seated on a stone bench beneath a tree, looking calmly at a tragic chess game before him as he did not move or speak.

Seeing that someone had come, Zhuang Shen gazed over. The other party handed him the jade box.

Accepting it and opening it for a look, a brilliant glow was emitted from Zhuang Shen's eyes.

"I thank Elder Wang," Zhuang Shen closed the jade box and stood up, cupping his hands towards the cave manor.

Then, he turned, transforming into a fiery phoenix and soaring into the skies as he was far away in an instant.

# HSSB 1018: A visitor, Earthly Young Master

---

Broad Creed Mountain's official opening ceremony was right around the corner.

When news of this spread, youths from various lands who yearned to join Broad Creed Mountain collectively hurried there.

The reason the news had been spread early was to give time for these people to hurry over.

After all, the journey was far. For martial practitioners with relatively weak cultivation bases and ordinary people, unless they had special means of transportation, they might not be able to make it to the foot of Broad Creed Mountain by foot even if they walked for their entire lifetimes.

In just the Royal Reed Sea alone, going from north to south or east to west already took more than just merely a million kilometres.

Even less had to be said for the vast world outside of the Royal Reed Sea.

In order to guide these people who wished to join them and expand their influence, Broad Creed Mountain dispatched quite a lot of people to specifically allocated locations in the various lands.

Those who passed through the preliminary selections would be brought back by Broad Creed Mountain martial practitioners to the Royal Reed Sea to participate in the opening ceremony.

Currently, Broad Creed Mountain was still rather lacking in people in the World beyond Worlds.

Still, its fame had spread far and wide as little effort was needed to attract many talented youths from all around.

While Broad Creed Mountain seemed to have kept a low profile within the Royal Reed Sea these past years, its influence had

already soundlessly seeped within the entire Royal Reed Sea by now.

Just like how Broad Creed Mountain had had many minor powers affiliated to it when in the Heaven Domain of the Eight Extremities World back then, with a massive net having been formed, presently, in the Royal Reed Sea, this net had also achieved initial completion, bringing Broad Creed Mountain great convenience in bringing in disciples in this gathering of talent for their opening ceremony this time.

“Do you feel bored that I have not dispatched you outside to receive people?”

Few young martial practitioners of Broad Creed Mountain were still in the sect now as most of them had been dispatched away, only a minority remaining.

Yan Zhaoge was naturally not one of them.

On the contrary, he was needed to remain at the Mountain.

He was needed to receive the major guests who had been invited to Broad Creed Mountain for their opening ceremony this time.

Beside Yan Zhaoge stood two youngsters who shook their heads in response, replying, “No.”

One of them was tall with defined lines on his face. He had rather handsome features.

He also had a black eyepatch over his right eye.

This was none other than the survivor of the extermination of the Listening Thunder Peak’s Xia Family that year, Xia Guang who had accompanied Yan Zhaoge back from the southern Blazing Heaven Territory.

Currently, Xia Guang looked to be even younger than twenty.

Back when he had stimulated his Blood Thunderbolt Ritual in entering a protracted battle with an Elder of Three Foot Mountain,

there had been a great depletion in his longevity which had resulted in him looking over fifty on the outside, soon to reach old age from his younger years.

That had not been Xia Guang deliberately changing his external appearance. It was because with the longevity that had still remained after its grave depletion, he had indeed been stepping into old age.

Now, however, it was like he had regained his youth.

This too was not from his deliberately changing his external appearance. Instead, it was a result of him cultivating in the Life Creation Heavenly Scripture of the ten Primordial Heavenly Scriptures after entering Broad Creed Mountain's lineage, his longevity having been bolstered greatly.

Considering his age relative to his longevity now, he could not even be considered a youth, just a teenager at most.

Xia Guang's clothes had also changed from that original red to the trademark look of Broad Creed Mountain's core, direct lineage disciples as he wore the same white clothes with a black-bordered blue robe as Yan Zhaoge.

If he could, he would naturally wish to be one of those in charge of going forth to ferry people back.

It had already been six, nearly seven years since the tragic extermination of Listening Thunder Peak's Xia Family back then.

Besides Xia Guang, there should still be two other survivors.

Yet, many years had passed, but Xia Guang had never been able to locate his kin.

As time passed, Xia Guang grew increasingly uneasy as hope diminished. It was just that he remained eternally unwilling to give up despite that.

After Yan Zhaoge shocked the world in rampaging through the

south, this time's opening ceremony's grandeur with Broad Creed Mountain's extraordinary momentum caused the winds to stir all round.

If his remaining kin was still of this world, it was probable indeed that they would receive the news and hurry over this time.

Still, Xia Guang was not suitable for this kind of job.

First not mentioning how he was restless and quick to anger, he had seldom come into contact with the outside world as he had lived in seclusion in the Xia Family back then.

While he had often gone adventuring outside to temper himself ever since entering Broad Creed Mountain, he was still not well versed in matters such as this.

This had to do with past experiences whilst also personality.

In recent years, 'Blood Thunderbolt' Xia Guang had been an increasingly famous name amongst Broad Creed Mountain's younger generation.

Still, there were both good and bad parts here. While Xia Guang's strength was outstanding and exhibited the great might of Broad Creed Mountain, he would also run into some trouble every once in a while.

He might not be the one at fault for certain in some things. Still, things would have gone much better if there had been someone who was well versed in the hearts of others handling these affairs instead.

Of course, if one were really to compare things, Yan Zhaoge had caused much more trouble than he had.

While Xia Guang did not want to stay at the Mountain, he had always unconditionally abided by the words of Yan Zhaoge and Yan Di.

It was just that ever since people had come over to join them, he had often secretly waited at the sect to see if his kin had arrived.

Standing beside Yan Zhaoge along with Xia Guang was a young girl who also looked yet to have reached twenty. She had beautiful, remarkable features, just that she emanated a cold, aloof air.

This was Sikong Qing.

She had already Transcended Mortality and entered Sainthood several years ago. Not considering Xia Guang who had entered from elsewhere, she was the fourth Martial Saint of Broad Creed Mountain's third generation disciples after Yan Zhaoge, Xu Fei as well as Feng Yunsheng.

After a few years in secluded cultivation, she had already attained the second level of the Martial Saint realm as she had even already begun attempting her next breakthrough.

Still, ever since coming to the World beyond Worlds, Sikong Qing had been much more low key as compared to Xu Fei and Xia Guang and even the likes of Ying Longtu and Shi Jun.

She spent most of her time in secluded cultivation in the sect.

Presently, there were many things that Sikong Qing was already aware of. Understanding that her situation was unique, she did not object to the arrangements of Yan Zhaoge, Fu Enshu and the rest.

She did not have an active personality as she was more willing to submerge herself within an ocean of martial arts, seeking their profundities.

She had previously gone adventuring outside more to temper herself rather than due to interest.

Not going outside as she stayed at the Mountain, having more time to cultivate, Sikong Qing naturally would not find it boring.

"If I do not guess wrong, junior apprentice-sister Sikong, there will be a more definite understanding regarding your matter after this time's opening ceremony," Yan Zhaoge said, "Still, we still cannot determine whether it will turn out good or bad. You will have to be mentally prepared for this."



Rather than whether Sikong Qing would be safe, this good and bad referred more to whether Sikong Qing would have to remain as low key and in concealment as she was now.

Sikong Qing said calmly, “No matter. I understand that.”

Now, another Broad Creed Mountain disciple approached, respect and admiration evident within his eyes as he gazed at Yan Zhaoge.

Yan Zhaoge turned, smiling, “What is it?”

That disciple hurriedly answered, “Senior apprentice-uncle Yan, a guest has arrived. Chief invites you to go over and receive him.”

“Oh?” Yan Zhaoge asked, “Do you know who it is who has come?”

The other party answered, “He calls himself ‘Earthly Young Master’. Surnamed Chen, named Kunhua.”

# HSSB 1019: Young Chief Yan and Second Young Master Chen

---

“Chen Kunhua?” Yan Zhaoge had an interested look on his face as he heard this.

Yan Zhaoge had naturally heard of the Earthly Young Master Chen Kunhua before.

Still, as compared to him, Yan Zhaoge had instead heard more of his elder brother.

The Upper Exalt, Chen Qianhua.

The publicly acclaimed strongest Martial Saint of the World beyond Worlds, number one amongst Exalts.

His brother was Chen Kunhua who was known as the ‘Earthly Young Master’. He too had achieved his fame at a young age, being a supremely talented peak expert.

Though he was not as shockingly talented as Chen Qianhua, his fame still shook the World beyond Worlds.

It was worth mentioning that it was rumoured that Chen Kunhua had always wished to be together with Ingenious Flying Peak’s Fu Ting. Still, this was as far as it went.

Something that Yan Zhaoge had to pay slight attention to was the fact that while it was the former Heavenly Young Master and the current Upper Exalt Chen Qianhua who had enlightened Three Foot Mountain, it was Chen Kunhua who had been closer with Three Foot Mountain afterwards. Three Foot Mountain had done quite a bit for Chen Kunhua.

As compared to First Young Master Chen, this Second Young Master Chen shared a closer relationship with Three Foot Mountain.

Three Foot Mountain’s two supreme treasures, the soul flag and

the high-grade Sacred Artifact, the Golden Crow World Incinerating Sabre, had both fallen into Yan Zhaoge's possession.

After an investigation, Yan Zhaoge had discovered special sigils on these items which did not seem like the handiwork of Three Foot Mountain.

After they had fallen into his hands, these sigils had slowly faded away.

From analysing their effects, Yan Zhaoge could tell that they did not possess killing power, being more of markers and guideposts.

As soon as the soul flag and the Golden Crow World Incinerating Sabre had fallen into the hands of those other than Three Foot Mountain, Three Foot Mountain and the person behind this would have been able to sense it.

The other party was surely already aware that these items had fallen into his possession.

Frankly speaking, Yan Zhaoge did not care much about Chen Kunhua.

This was despite the fact that Chen Kunhua was actually one cultivation level above him, being a mid Immortal Bridge Martial Saint.

He was not being arrogant here.

As compared to the 'Earthly Young Master' Chen Kunhua, someone was more worth Yan Zhaoge's attention.

This person was naturally the former 'Heavenly Young Master' and the current Upper Exalt, Chen Qianhua.

If one were to speak of variables which might be enough to influence the overall situation for Broad Creed Mountain's opening ceremony, this Upper Exalt was definitely one of those who were ranked in front.

Yan Zhaoge did not fear powerful enemies. Still, he hated

uncertain factors.

Coincidentally, according to the many rumours circulating throughout the World beyond Worlds, Chen Qianhua who was the first person beneath the Three Sovereigns and Five Emperors just happened to be the most unpredictable person ever.

One might also call him the most unstable factor.

For the Three Sovereigns and Five Emperors and the other Exalts, others were hard pressed to discern their thoughts because their considerations ran deep, their moods fluctuating formlessly.

At the very least, though, according to their previous actions, there were clues through which one could consolidate an overall trend and predict what they might do.

Even if some of it might be feigned, there were still clues to follow at least.

There was only the Upper Exalt Chen Qianhua whose moods were fickle and unpredictable, with his actions always diverging from the expected as many of them were abnormal and contradictory too.

Even the Sovereigns and Emperors were unable to properly grasp his thoughts.

Still, whatever the case, he was indeed the most outstanding genius of the martial dao within the World beyond Worlds in recent years.

The other bigwigs treated this junior whose extraordinary talents presided arrogantly over both present and past rather well.

While Chen Kunhua's title of 'Earthly Young Master' corresponded with his brother's former title of 'Heavenly Young Master', if not for the tacit approval of Kunlun Mountain's Southern High Peak's Qilin's Cliff's Earthly Sovereign and Earth Exalt, it would probably have been difficult for this to spread throughout the entire World beyond Worlds in becoming publicly

recognised by all.

How much of this should be attributed to Chen Kunhua's own talent and how much of it was due to his brother's face was very hard to tell for sure.

What Yan Zhaoge was feeling more interested in now was this: Since Chen Kunhua had come, would Chen Qianhua be coming too?

While thinking about this, Yan Zhaoge arrived at the Earth Descending Peak of his sect.

Aside from Chen Kunhua, many other guests had also already arrived at Broad Creed Mountain.

For example, martial practitioners of Ingenious Flying Peak's Red Lotus Cliff had already arrived. Not having arrived late since they were of the Brocade Emperor's lineage, they had arrived early instead.

Of course, Fu Ting was not amongst them.

Knowing full well the reason behind this, Yan Zhaoge did not find it strange.

Meanwhile, Pavilion Lord Gu Hong of the North Sea Sword Pavilion and Chief Zhou Haosheng of the Dim Radiant Sect had already arrived as well.

As compared to when they had previously combined forces in resisting the Grand Xuan Dynasty, the other powers of the Royal Reed Sea had already tacitly admitted Broad Creed Mountain's dominant position now.

In recruiting disciples throughout the entire Royal Reed Sea in its opening ceremony this time, Broad Creed Mountain had also obtained the tacit permission of these powers and even their assistance.

This was the authority of a hegemon of any region. They had the

foremost pick of the most outstanding local talents.

The locals naturally wished to be able to join the strongest power. Still, due to factors like the great geographical distance etcetera, it was easy for oversights to be made.

With Broad Creed Mountain being able to choose from the domains of the North Sea Sword Pavilion, the Dim Darkness Sect and the other powers in opening its doors this time, the possibility of missing out on a gem amidst the vast sea was indisputably very low.

Of course, Broad Creed Mountain seldom went so far. Similar situations were limited to large scale ceremonies like their opening ceremony this time as only then would the collecting of talents be done on such a large scale. Meanwhile, such ceremonies would naturally not be very frequent.

In a remote side hall, Yan Zhaoge met that Earthly Young Master.

This person was indeed handsome and amicable, giving off a feeling like a refreshing spring breeze.

It was said that as compared to First Young Master Chen who was off gallivanting who knew where for much of the time, this Second Young Master Chen had far-reaching connections as he was quite familiar with the others of the World beyond Worlds.

“I must apologise for coming uninvited,” Chen Kunhua was observing Yan Zhaoge too as he cupped his hands and smiled after observing him for a moment.

Yan Zhaoge returned the greeting, “You have travelled far to come here. Our sect naturally welcomes it. Please excuse any lack of courtesy there may previously have been.”

Playing with the fan in his hands, Chen Kunhua smiled, “No, I am the one who has intruded. I like making friends and going where things are happening. With your sect’s opening ceremony being one of the few major events to happen in recent years, I got a

sudden urge and thus came over here. Hopefully you do not find this laughable, Young Chief Yan.”

“Making friends? Going where things are happening?” Yan Zhaoge glanced at Chen Kunhua.

These words were rather iffy.

Making friends with whom?

Going where things were happening and doing what?

It seemed like anything could really be said of this.

“You overstate things, Second Young Master Chen. This Yan dares not claim the name of Young Chief. While my father is the current Chief, the position of Chief is not passed down through our bloodline. The elders have still yet to make any decision.”

Yan Zhaoge said nonchalantly, “As for me myself, I am used to being lazy, and probably could not really live up to something so major too.”

Chen Kunhua smiled upon hearing this, “I misspoke. Please do not take offence, Young Master Yan. It is just that after seeing your father, I have seen that you clearly preside outstandingly over those of the same generation as well. Therefore, I felt greatly emotional. Please do not take this to heart.”

“How would I? You are too polite, Earthly Young Master,” Yan Zhaoge smiled too.

The first meeting between the two could still be considered pleasant on the surface.

Still, neither side mentioned the matter of Three Foot Mountain.

It was just that Yan Zhaoge knew that the other party might not really have come simply to observe the ceremony.

What mattered was this: If he was actually hostile, would the Upper Exalt Chen Qianhua be coming too?

This was really the crux of the matter.



# HSSB 1020: Even without me, my legend lives on

---

There were many rumours regarding the Upper Exalt Chen Qianhua.

Never having personally seen him make a move before, Yan Zhaoge could not make a precise judgment of his abilities.

Yan Zhaoge had personally witnessed the Earth Exalt Wang Zhengcheng revealing a fraction of his strength back during the battle between the Brocade Emperor and Mars Halberd that year.

Yan Zhaoge had also seen the Little Sword God in action, he who had been called Qian Xueji when active in the World beyond Worlds but whose actual name was Long Xueji.

In comparison to these two people, Yan Zhaoge could basically guess at the strength of Chen Qianhua who was acclaimed alongside Long Xueji and was superior to Wang Zhengcheng.

First not mentioning the Little Sword God Long Xueji, the Earth Exalt Wang Zhengcheng was a figure of legend who could virtually suppress the conflicts between Martial Saints with just his own power.

Even if those people were other Exalts!

The reason for this ‘virtually’ was primarily that this excluded the Upper Exalt Chen Qianhua who was superior to him.

It might also be said that the Upper Exalt Chen Qianhua was an existence who could suppress the World beyond Worlds if the Three Sovereigns and Five Emperors did not make an appearance.

He was possibly one of the rare experts in all of history who could resist some True Immortals with the body of a mortal.

Of course, resisting and being suppressed were two different things altogether.

There were also two different standards for being able to resist True Immortals and being able to escape alive from True Immortals.

Yan Zhaoge could not really judge the martial prowess of this Upper Exalt who stood at the top of the World beyond Worlds' Martial Saints as he had never personally interacted with him before.

Still, amongst the numerous uncertain variables, this was indisputably the most significant one.

This was especially so with the inscrutable uninvited arrival of the Earthly Young Master Chen Kunhua.

Had he come here just for show or was he arriving earlier before his elder brother would?

There was probably only Chen Kunhua himself who knew this.

Still, one did not reach out to slap a smiling face. With the other party having paid all the proper respects and not demonstrated any hostility, Broad Creed Mountain could naturally not refuse to let him in. Otherwise, others might see them as a joke.

Yan Zhaoge did not hesitate as he hosted Chen Kunhua at a guest lodging of the Mountain. There would naturally be other disciples of Broad Creed Mountain to take care of things after this.

As the date of the opening ceremony drew closer, the Broad Creed Mountain martial practitioners who had left looking for talents all began successively returning to the Mountain.

Most of them had headed to places outside of the Royal Reed Sea.

Something like this was actually a bit of a taboo as it might easily lead to the collective resistance of the major local powers.

Still, with the awe-inspiring authority established by Yan Zhaoge's rampage through the south and killing of peak Martial Saints like Zhang Shuren, Peng He and Qing Shuzi that year still

remaining, it made for some immense intimidation.

Golden Court Mountain who ruled over the southeastern Yang Heaven Territory did not raise any objections as well.

As this time's opening ceremony was a special circumstance and would almost certainly never happen again, those local snakeheads of the Setting Sun Archipelago, Jade Sun Mountain Range, Green Peak High Plains and Consecutive Drum Mountain Range etcetera whose territories Broad Creed Mountain had trespassed on ultimately sighed and simply allowed this to happen.

Meanwhile, things were instead rather more convenient over in the southern Blazing Heaven Territory at Circumference Mountain and the nearby regions where the Dynasty River flowed past.

The established authority of Yan Zhaoge and Broad Creed Mountain was even greater there.

While Yan Zhaoge had yet to enter the southern Blazing Heaven Territory again after the battle at Circumference Mountain back then, his legend still existed there at this point in time.

Yan Zhaoge and Broad Creed Mountain had formlessly become a crownless king at Circumference Mountain and these other lands.

Things had remained this way all these years.

Only when the Southern Exalt Zhuang Shen had returned to the southern Blazing Heaven Territory this year had this situation been alleviated somewhat.

Still, because the Southern Exalt had not immediately blown up, Yan Zhaoge still held a certain level of authority over the regions which the Dynasty Region flowed through.

Broad Creed Mountain's martial practitioners had brought back many good seeds from those places as a result.

"Young Master, there really are some people with quite some potential this time."

Currently, Broad Creed Mountain still rather lacked manpower in the World beyond Worlds.

Therefore, Ah Hu had previously been dispatched outside as well, only having returned not long ago.

It was the same for Xiao Ai as well. Still, it was another thing which Xiao Ai had been more interested in ever since returning to the Mountain.

“Young Master, Young Master, this maid saw that Earthly Young Master just now. Though he cannot be compared to Young Master, he is still a remarkably handsome guy!”

Xiao Ai’s fists were clenched with her eyes shining as she said excitedly to Yan Zhaoge, “If he’s yet to find a partner, he can get an A-rating!”

Yan Zhaoge rolled his eyes, “Xiao Ai, you easily make me worry like this. Just a single hot guy scheme by the enemy would be enough to take you down.”

“How is that possible?” Xiao Ai waved her hands, “Only Lord and Young Master are A+. However outstanding anyone else is, they can still only be an A at most.”

Hearing her words, Yan Zhaoge did not know whether to laugh or to cry.

“In that case, shouldn’t I feel relieved then?” Yan Zhaoge put a hand on his head.

While this girl was still man-crazy, she had still finally agreed not long ago to make a special exception for Yan Zhaoge and Yan Di in her evaluation standards.

Only their evaluation ratings did not take into account whether they were already taken.

Sitting there, Xiao Ai put her hands on her cheeks, “I heard that his brother the Upper Exalt is even more extraordinarily

handsome. I just wonder-how is he when compared to the Brocade Emperor?"

Yan Zhaoge rolled his eyes.

The Brocade Emperor Fu Yunchi could be said to be the man with the most outstanding looks of all.

Still, as Xiao Ai had said, while the Brocade Emperor caused the man-crazy her to salivate, he only had an A rating.

Of course, because this A person was just too outstanding, with no one being able to surpass it, the girl had made another exception and added an A^ rating that was between the A and A+ grades just for the Brocade Emperor alone. Yan Zhaoge and the others had all nearly spit out their meals at this.

"Today is the day of the opening ceremony, Young Master..." Ah Hu looked at Yan Zhaoge, "How do I say this? It is unnaturally calm."

Yan Zhaoge said, "It is the calm before the storm. Since the Heaven Emperor has already returned, it will be today if something happens. It did not happen earlier, and it will definitely not happen later."

As he said this, other disciples of Broad Creed Mountain came to report that the most heavyweight guest thus far had arrived.

The lord of the Southeastern Yang Heaven Territory, the Southeastern Exalt Cao Jie, was here.

Yan Zhaoge went forth to receive him. There was no need for words as they met each other as a tacit understanding had already been reached.

"I have something that I would like to ask the Southeastern Exalt."

While a major incident would definitely be happening later that day, Yan Zhaoge was composed as he calmly sent to Cao Jie via

sound transmission, “This thing may be a bit sudden. It is regarding my mother.”

Cao Jie knit his brows as he looked at Yan Zhaoge.

“To tell you the truth, I have been once to the lands of the Immortal Court, already knowing about some things. I’m guessing that my mother’s matter is related to the Immortal Court,” Yan Zhaoge asked, “I wonder if my guess is correct?”

Cao Jie slightly relaxed his brows before knitting them up again, not immediately replying as he instead asked, “This information cannot be allowed to spread.”

Basically knowing what Cao Jie was thinking, Yan Zhaoge did not bother mentioning that his situation was different from Fu Ting’s as he nodded, answering, “You can rest assured. I understand.”

Now, a streak of sword-light suddenly flew over from the west, descending towards Broad Creed Mountain.

Broad Creed Mountain was familiar with this person. It was none other than the Southeastern Swordsmistress.

The Swordsmistress landed on Broad Creed Mountain without obstruction, arriving before Yan Zhaoge and Cao Jie.

Looking at Yan Zhaoge, she did not exchange words with Cao Jie via sound transmission as she instead said straight out, “Something’s up!”

“The flow of the Dynasty River is rapidly weakening. If this continues, the flow will surely break within the day!”

# HSSB 1021: Everything rests on today

---

The Dynasty River was a renowned major water vein of the World beyond Worlds.

It originated from the central Jun Heaven Territory's Screen Moat Snowy Mountain, heading southeast as it passed through the central Jun Heaven Territory and the southern Blazing Heaven Territory, flowing for billions of kilometres.

Back in the battle at Circumference Mountain that year, Yan Zhaoge had shocked the world due to none other than this Dynasty River which had enabled him to establish the Nine Bends Yellow River Formation, trapping and killing three late Immortal Bridge Martial Saint experts.

Even though Yan Zhaoge had returned to the southeast after that battle, never having again gone to the southern Blazing Heaven Territory, the martial practitioners of Phoenix Ritual Mountain's Wutong Slope had dared not even take a single step within the domain of Circumference Mountain again before the return of the Southern Exalt.

It was not just Circumference Mountain. The Wutong Slope martial practitioners had retreated from all the areas within the southern Blazing Heaven Territory that the Dynasty River flowed through.

The entire eastern region of the Southern Blazing Heaven Territory had virtually been tacitly acknowledged as Yan Zhaoge's dominion.

Without the Nine Bends Yellow River Formation, the Dynasty River itself was still a natural moat for many.

This river was broad as the sea with a shocking rate of flow that even Immortal Bridge Martial Saints would be hard pressed to stabilise themselves in.

It would be difficult even for Human Exalts to obstruct its flow.

Today, however, someone had managed to achieve this.

The person was a Martial Saint.

Right after the Dynasty River exited the Screen Moat Snowy Mountain, it expanded as its flow eased slightly, becoming less rapid. There, a fiery phoenix was soaring between the heavens and the earth.

The entire sky was illuminated fiery red.

The fiery phoenix was like a transparent silhouette as a figure was completely enveloped by multi-coloured light within it.

He had snowy white brows and was remarkably handsome. This was precisely the Southern Exalt, Zhuang Shen.

He was gazing down below at the ceaselessly flowing waters of the Dynasty River.

Wutong Slope's two great Elders, Zhang Shuren and Peng He, as well as Yuan Xiancheng who had been their most outstanding descendant of the younger generation had all died due to this water vein.

Zhuang Shen raised his head, gazing in the direction that the river waters were flowing in as that gaze seemed able to penetrate through distant spacetime, falling upon Circumference Mountain.

He said not a single word as he retrieved a jade box, opening its lid.

He overturned it, yellow, blurry soil descending towards the great river down below.

That soil did not dissipate as it encountered water as it instead grew naturally and expanded non-stop, resembling a clump of yellow clouds.

The soil grew unceasingly. As its mass expanded, it did not become insubstantial as it still remained dense and sturdy, without



any vulnerable spots so to speak of.

Afterwards, this yellow soil directly blocked up the flow of the entire Dynasty River, seemingly filling up an ocean and creating a continent as the boundless width of the Dynasty River was obstructed!

How incomparably violent was the flow of the Dynasty River, with its momentum being stronger since this was close to the source of the river at the Screen Moat Snowy Mountain.

The Dynasty River whose waters had been obstructed instantly surged madly, shooting forth as it extended straight onto the shore on the two sides, forming a momentum of bursting through a dam.

Yet, the blurry yellow soil advanced rather than retreated, actually forcibly resisting the water of the Dynasty River as it surged towards the source of the river at the Screen Moat Snowy Mountain.

The river water that swelled and expanded along the way was also enveloped and obstructed by the yellow soil that resembled smoke as it too expanded.

However much river water sprung up, this soil would still grow correspondingly and shift along with it, completely preventing it from escaping.

Finally, the Dynasty River was actually pushed all the way back to its source at the Screen Moat Snowy Mountain.

A great river that flowed through the World beyond Worlds was forcibly impeded at its source.

The endless mountain range that composed the Screen Moat Snowy Mountain shook slightly in its entirety at this moment with the earth quaking and the mountains wobbling.

Still, that soil kept the mouth of the river solidly blocked up.

As the Southern Exalt Zhuang Shen who was enveloped by the

silhouette of a fiery phoenix within the air saw this, he slowly exhaled.

He, or they, only had limited time.

If this was dragged on for too long, while the soil would still be able to obstruct the mouth of the river, the spiritual qi circulation about the region of the central Jun Heaven Territory's Screen Moat Snowy Mountain would definitely be disrupted badly as a result. At that time, it would bring calamity to the central Jun Heaven Territory.

The Earth Exalt who had given Zhuang Shen the jade box would definitely not be happy to see that.

"Everything rests on today," Zhuang Shen kept the empty jade box, no longer looking at the shaken Screen Moat Snowy Mountain as he turned and flew off in the direction of the southeast.

A distance away, he saw someone standing on the air, waiting for him.

It was the Western Exalt, Lang Qing.

Seeing Zhuang Shen, Lang Qing said, "Everyone else has already set off. We are the only ones left."

"The Breath Soil has successfully obstructed the Dynasty River. The vein of the Dynasty River within the southern Blazing Heaven Territory will also quickly run dry," Zhuang Shen said, "That fella surnamed Yan will no longer be able to establish that Nine Bends Yellow River Formation."

The soil within the jade box was a kind of divine soil known as Breath Soil. It was able to multiply on its own, never being depleted.

In ancient times before the Great Calamity, there had been a treasure known as Nine Heaven Breath Soil and also Earlier Heaven Breath Soil which had possessed shocking defensive power, being able to withstand the attacks of various different

treasures and supreme martial arts as it possessed countless miraculous variations.

This treasure had been lost following the Great Calamity, with only Later Heaven Breath Soil remaining in this world.

While it did not possess such boundless miraculous variations and uses, it still specifically restricted water veins from all over the world.

After halting the flow of the Dynasty River with this Breath Soil, Zhuang Shen followed the Western Exalt Lang Qing in heading south.

He was headed straight towards the southeastern Yang Heaven Territory's Royal Reed Sea!

.....

As time passed, the Southeastern Swordsmistress who had originally been overseeing things along the border between the southeastern Yang Heaven Territory and southern Blazing Heaven Territory quickly sensed that something was wrong.

The surging river first eased ceaselessly in its flow before its water level dropped non-stop.

As time passed, it actually seemed like the river might cease to flow.

The Southeastern Swordsmistress immediately sensed that this was not natural, having been artificially induced by man.

With this happening at this time and at this place, the other side's target was unquestionably Yan Zhaoge and Broad Creed Mountain.

At the same time, this also included the Southeastern Exalt Cao Jie and the others of Golden Court Mountain who were aiding Broad Creed Mountain.

The Southeastern Swordsmistress promptly and decisively

rushed over to Broad Creed Mountain in the Royal Reed Sea.

After being told of this by the Southeastern Swordsmistress, Yan Zhaoge and Cao Jie exchanged glances, with Cao Jie saying, “This thing should have been done by Southern Zhuang’s lot.”

“No matter,” Yan Zhaoge shook his head, “It is only a path of retreat which has been lost. Since our sect is holding our opening ceremony in the Royal Reed Sea, this will be the main battlefield if anything happens.”

In preparation for this, before today, Broad Creed Mountain had even already urged many middle and small-scale sects of the Royal Reed Sea to bring along the ordinary citizens in temporarily hiding themselves away lest they be dragged unknowingly into this conflict.

“It seems like we will indeed have unwelcome visitors today,” Yan Zhaoge said with a composed look on his face.

When those of Broad Creed Mountain heard the news, there was a short disturbance before they all regained their calm.

Everything was still going on in an orderly fashion without any disruption.

More time passed. Soon, the guests were all in their seats as the auspicious hour drew near.

Broad Creed Mountain’s official opening ceremony in the World beyond Worlds was soon to begin.

It was just that as time passed, a problem more serious than the breaking of flow of the Dynasty River surfaced.

The Brocade Emperor of the World beyond Worlds’ Five Emperors who had previously agreed to come personally to Broad Creed Mountain in the Royal Reed Sea to observe the ceremony was still nowhere to be seen.

It was now that anxiety truly seeped into the hearts of many of

Broad Creed Mountain.

Even the martial practitioners of Golden Court Mountain grew restless.

Looking at the representative from Ingenious Flying Peak, Yan Zhaoge saw that the other party was puzzled and uncomprehending as well, appearing awkward and uneasy.

His father Yan Di's gaze swept over. Father and son exchanged looks with rather strange expressions on their faces.

It seemed as though just like back at the Minor No Hatred dao arena previously, they had suffered a no-show by this bigwig again?

# HSSB 1022: Broad Creed Mountain's opening ceremony

---

Back at the Minor No Hatred dao arena, Yan Zhaoge and Yan Di had originally accepted the invitation of the Brocade Emperor, going there as guests.

Things had been very awkward then.

The host had been missing.

Also, no one had seen him throughout as Fu Ting and the others of Ingenious Flying Peak had had it very tough too.

In the end, the Brocade Emperor had not returned as Mars Halberd had come instead. Only then had the events of Yan Zhaoge and Fu Ting stumbling upon the Immortal Court and Yan Di obtaining the Grand Simplicity Splendour Cloud transpired.

Fu Ting had always been feeling guilty about this.

Still, as no explanation had been given on why the Brocade Emperor had failed to show up back then, there was simply nothing that could be done about it.

The Brocade Emperor had a casual, free personality as he cared not about the minor details. However, he was generally someone who kept his promises.

His previous no-show had already seemed abnormal. With this happening again now, one really could not help but wonder.

He seemed not to have any motive for specifically targeting Yan Zhaoge and Broad Creed Mountain.

With his position and status, he could directly voice it out if he did not wish to come. There was no need for him to fool them with false words before being a no-show in the end.

This being so, however, things were clearly very unusual then.

Yan Zhaoge sensed a hidden plot behind this.

“Has Mars Halberd issued a challenge again, suddenly appearing and obstructing the Brocade Emperor?” Yan Zhaoge pondered, “Or is it that the same issue as back at the Minor No Hatred dao arena has surfaced, tying him up again?”

Whatever the case, with this thing happening at such a time, it definitely looked like someone was behind it.

Yan Zhaoge thought for a time before smiling, “While the Brocade Emperor has not arrived, we can still hold this opening ceremony as scheduled. Maybe the Brocade Emperor will simply be arriving a little later?”

Just like during the battle scheduled between him and Mars Halberd back then.

The Southeastern Exalt Cao Jie did not object to this, “The Brocade Emperor will not mind.”

Yan Di nodded before communicating with the representative from Ingenious Flying Peak present.

Rather uneasy and awkward as well, the other party raised no objection to Broad Creed Mountain.

Amongst the guests sat the Earthly Young Master, Chen Kunhua. As he drank something, his gaze briefly scanned those of Broad Creed Mountain and Ingenious Flying Peak.

Finally, it came to rest on Ingenious Flying Peak’s representative.

“The Brocade Emperor...failed to show up?” Chen Kunhua fingered his drink, his eyes lighting up slightly, “Now this is interesting...”

Sensing his gaze, Yan Zhaoge looked back at him.

Chen Kunhua retracted his gaze, smiling towards Yan Zhaoge and raising his cup in appreciation.

Yan Zhaoge raised his brows slightly, gazing at him for a moment

before smiling back in the end, saying nothing as he just turned back to look at the front.

“Oh?” Seeing this, the smile on Chen Kunhua’s face faded somewhat.

His gaze flickered slightly as he stared at Yan Zhaoge’s back. He seemed to want to do something, yet ultimately still gave up on it after a moment’s hesitation.

Chen Kunhua completely relaxed his body, adding wine for himself as he just comfortably drank.

The Southeastern Exalt and the Southeastern Swordsmistress were naturally seated in seats of honour. At this moment, they could only calm their hearts and simply keep their eyes peeled.

Golden Court Mountain and Broad Creed Mountain were presently inextricably linked together in terms of glory and defeat. Since the attackers had come for Broad Creed Mountain, Golden Court Mountain was their target too.

Yan Zhaoge stood diagonally behind Yan Di. Across from that main seat were quietly seated Yuan Zhengfeng, Fang Zhun and the other higher echelon experts of Broad Creed Mountain.

The time for the ceremony to start finally arrived. Yan Di sat silently there, his gaze scanning the entire area.

He did not speak as his gaze was not domineering as well.

Still, the great hall on Heaven Rising Peak instantly fell silent as everyone knew that things were about to officially commence.

Ying Longtu had an earnest expression on his face as he was fully focused on the hammer of the drum which he clutched in his hand. Now, he struck the golden drum by the side.

A sonorous bell tolled, reverberating far off into the distance and deafening the ears as it sounded nine consecutive times.

A solemn, grave air overtook everyone of Broad Creed Mountain.



At the foot of the mountain, by Earth Descending Peak, was waiting that group of youngsters who wished to join Broad Creed Mountain.

There had still been a bit of noise going on at first. Still, as the bell tolled, it all subsided at once as everyone had solemn looks on their faces.

The bell tolled time and time again as those at the foot of the mountain grew increasingly solemn.

“We open our doors, inviting benevolent talents to join. We of Broad Creed Mountain are graced by your arrival,” Yan Di’s voice reverberated between the heavens and the earth, “As the Chief of Broad Creed Mountain, this Yan first thanks all you fellow Daoists here.”

Those in the great hall were all quietly watching the speaking Yan Di.

Fairly speaking, in terms of renown and popularity, it was actually the third generation disciple Yan Zhaoge who currently stood at the top within Broad Creed Mountain.

Following his glorious battle achievements at Vast Spirit Mountain and Circumference Mountain, the name of Fallen Deity had spread all throughout the World beyond Worlds.

Still, as everyone looked at Yan Di at this moment, no one dared to underestimate him.

It was precisely because Yan Zhaoge’s past battle achievements were too glorious that people had begun collecting all information on his former experiences which they could obtain, researching this.

In this process, the decisive battle that had solidified Broad Creed Mountain’s position as hegemon of the Royal Reed Sea had also entered the eyes of more and more people, with the details broken down and analysed.

Therefore, it was not just Yan Zhaoge but also Yan Di who had attracted the attention of the entire World beyond Worlds.

One sabre opening the heavens, domineeringly ascending to the World beyond Worlds and slaying Kung Xuanmu of the late Seeing Divinity stage right upon his arrival.

In the battle at Broad Creed Mountain afterwards, he had battled a bunch of opponents who were Immortal Bridge Martial Saints as a Seeing Divinity Martial Saint.

While it had been a chaotic battle, in terms of the final headcount, of those of the Immortal Bridge stage and above, all besides Shen Lingzi and Kang Ping had perished beneath his sabre!

Guan Lide of the late Immortal Bridge stage.

King Xuancheng of the mid Immortal Bridge stage.

Daoist Shi, He Dongcheng and Gu Zhang of the early Immortal Bridge stage.

Setting aside all their usual biases and underestimations, no longer blindly speculating and finding excuses, when martial practitioners outside of the southeastern Yang Heaven Territory had earnestly investigated the actual course of events which had played out at Broad Creed Mountain back then, the shock which they had suffered had been no lesser than when they had heard about Yan Zhaoge's battle at Vast Spirit Mountain.

It had been around thirteen years since Yan Di had ascended to the World beyond Worlds.

Yan Di had broken through from the fourth level of the Martial Saint realm, the early Seeing Divinity stage, all the way to the eighth level of the Martial Saint realm, the mid Immortal Bridge stage.

Such a speed could only leave everyone of the World beyond Worlds sighing in admiration.

Not only did he possess extraordinary strength, his talent too shocked the world.

Looking at Yan Di who presided over the ceremony and Yan Zhaoge beside him, everyone had complex moods.

Outstanding geniuses such as this had offended the Southern Exalt and the Heaven Emperor.

Today's opening ceremony was very likely to decide their fates.

Now, the guests had filled the seats as Broad Creed Mountain opened its doors. Yan Zhaoge and Yan Di seemed to be ushering in their most brilliant, glorious moment thus far.

And yet, this might also be the most dangerous moment of their lives!

As Yan Di who presided over the ceremony was about to speak, his gaze suddenly contracted slightly as it seemed to penetrate through the walls of the building, looking outwards.

Yan Zhaoge and the Southeastern Exalt Cao Jie did the same.

To the northeast of the Royal Reed Sea, several powerful auras were currently rapidly approaching.

# HSSB 1023: Six Exalts gather at Broad Creed Mountain

---

The Royal Reed Sea was located by the western border of the southeastern Yang Heaven Territory.

Moving northeast from here, it would still be the domain of the southeastern Yang Heaven Territory.

Still, going further northeast, or going north, one would arrive at the eastern Vast Heaven Territory.

Sensing the vigorous auras which seemed boundless as they encompassed the heavens and earth, Yan Zhaoge knew that these newcomers must at least be Human Exalts.

There was not just one of them.

Also, the two auras intersected as they were clearly locked in an intense battle. It was apparent that the two were on different sides.

The two great experts were clashing intensely even as they approached Broad Creed Mountain.

Still, they had not lost their rationality, at least, as they did not wreak immense damage on the living beings on the great earth down below amidst their approach.

The clash between the two ripped apart a long fissure amidst space, seemingly without end as it extended all the way from the northeast of the Royal Reed Sea.

The spiritual qi of the heavens and the earth circulated yet was actually unable to repair that terrifying, mournful scar within a short period of time.

When Yan Zhaoge and those of Broad Creed Mountain had battled the Star Plucking Practitioner Guan Lide in the past, they had also caused wounds between the heavens and earth that had not healed for a long time.

Still, as compared to this current scene that resembled the descent of a heavenly tribulation, that wound was really nothing.

If one were to gaze over from far away now, they would see that this terrifying fissure began from the eastern Vast Heaven Territory, diagonally slicing southwest as it virtually ripped through all the places between it and the southeastern Yang Heaven Territory.

Such an intense clash was soon sensed by the others within the great hall of Broad Creed Mountain's Heaven Rising Peak as well.

No one was shocked.

The same thought virtually appeared simultaneously in all their minds.

It had begun!

Yan Di said mildly, "It looks like more exalted guests have come."

With that, he strode out of the great hall.

Standing beside him, Yan Zhaoge walked outside too as did the Southeastern Exalt Cao Jie from his guest seat.

The other guests and Broad Creed Mountain martial practitioners were unable to sit still too as they got up and exited the great hall together.

Outside the hall, Yan Zhaoge saw lightning flashing and thunder rumbling in the distant sky.

While no one was yet visible, some of those present already understood what this entailed.

"Elder Liu has arrived," Cao Jie said as he looked at the dense sea of thunderclouds in the horizon, with Yan Zhaoge nodding in agreement, "It is the Northeastern Exalt."

Yan Zhaoge had sent an invitation to the northeastern Sky Heaven Territory's Green Sky Mountain's Grave Thunder Palace for Broad Creed Mountain's opening ceremony this time. The

Northeastern Exalt Liu Zhenggu had not given a response, though.

He had not said that he would come, but he had also not said that he would not come.

From the looks of it now, this Human Exalt bore goodwill towards them.

With the news that the Brocade Emperor would be coming personally to Broad Creed Mountain to observe the ceremony having spread, the pressure exerted by the Heaven Emperor had decreased greatly.

It was just that the Northeastern Exalt had actually not had much contact at all with Yan Zhaoge and Broad Creed Mountain on the surface. There were just a mere few people of Golden Court Mountain in the know regarding this.

If the relationship between Xue Chuqing and Broad Creed Mountain had not been exposed, it might fall under suspicion if the Northeastern Exalt who had once taken care of Xue Chuqing in secret came to Broad Creed Mountain for no apparent reason as others might realise some clues.

Now, he had still come in the end.

The reason was another person who had come too.

This person's arrival entailed that the relationship between Yan Zhaoge and Xue Chuqing was already no longer a secret.

In that case, even more people would be coming!

Beneath the circumstances that the Brocade Emperor and the Heaven Emperor were restricting each other, the pressure on Broad Creed Mountain would increase greatly.

Under these circumstances, the Northeastern Exalt Liu Zhenggu had come without reservation to aid the southeast!

He had pursued his opponent all the way over, the two stopping and battling frequently in fighting all the way from the lands of

the eastern Vast Heaven Territory to the southeastern Yang Heaven Territory's Royal Reed Sea.

Yan Zhaoge gazed into the distant horizon, where other than thunderbolts, there could also be seen a huge tree which towered into the heavens!

The branches spread out in all directions, extending into space as they rose high into the heavens even as they were rooted to the earth.

As the massive tree that was even greater than a mountain peak hovered within the air, it was shifting rapidly as it was shrouded by the light of thunder, seeming quick as flashing lightning.

This was obviously the lord of the eastern Vast Heaven Territory, the Eastern Exalt Daoist Oneheaven of Remote Cloud Mountain's Clear Light Locale.

As it neared the Royal Reed Sea, the branches of the ancient tree abruptly shook, a figure appearing atop it.

An elegant looking middle-aged man in a green scholarly robe, this person was Daoist Oneheaven.

He wore not a Daoist robe but one of scholars, yet was so powerful.

This was his special characteristic which had circulated in the World beyond Worlds for many years. Thus, those present did not have to see his features clearly to figure out who he was.

Also, amidst the all-encompassing sea of thunder, a tall figure who had a jade belt around his waist and a purple crown on his head surfaced.

This tall old man with a ferocious, purplish-red face was naturally the Northeastern Exalt, Liu Zhenggu.

Amidst his standoff with Daoist Oneheaven, his voice resounded like a sonorous drum, "As the Heaven Emperor and Southern

Zhuang both have blood enmity with Broad Creed Mountain, it is understandable if they personally make a move. Yet, you, Oneheaven, have come too, bullying the weak as the strong. Are you not embarrassed?”

Daoist Oneheaven shook his head, saying, “I originally believed that she was inadvertently tangled up in the matters of the Dim Radiant Emperor. From the looks of it now, this was long planned out.”

“Things are even more serious than we originally thought. It is naturally better to take care of it as soon as possible. For the sake of the overall situation, some minor details are just inconsequential.”

He gazed at Liu Zhenggu, “Instead, must you personally descend into the river, stirring the waters turbid for no reason at all?”

Amidst the sea of thunder, each of Liu Zhenggu’s words resembled an exploding thunderbolt, “This concerns everyone. How can you say that it is for no reason!”

“It is still too early now to say if it really concerns everyone,” Daoist Oneheaven was not enraged, his expression remaining indifferent, “I just received news that the Brocade Emperor will not be able to come today. You are still in time to leave now, with the Heaven Emperor still having yet to arrive.”

Liu Zhenggu’s pupils dilated, but he did not waver in his decision in the least, “Speak no more.”

Daoist Oneheaven nodded as he gazed to the northwest of the Royal Reed Sea, “There is indeed no further need for words.”

More powerful auras were approaching from that direction!

Yan Zhaoge and the others sensed this too from atop Broad Creed Mountain as they similarly gazed towards the northwest.

That was the direction of the southern Blazing Heaven Territory. Further north was the central Jun Heaven Territory.



The light of fire suddenly lit up in the northwestern sky.

A sea of flames instantly enveloped space, entering a standoff with the ocean of thunderbolts.

Amidst the boundless blazing fire, a phoenix was bathed in flames as it emitted a five-coloured glow.

Enveloped by the silhouette of the phoenix was a handsome man with snowy white hair.

This was the Southern Exalt, Zhuang Shen!

There was someone travelling together with Zhuang Shen who now emerged from the sea of flames, the blazing fire in the surroundings unable to harm her in the slightest.

It was a rather delicate and thin woman who was wrapped entirely in a blue cloak as only her face was visible.

While this woman could not be called extremely beautiful, her features being ordinary, they still emanated an intense vibe.

This was because the density of the baleful air about her was even stronger than that of Zhuang Shen beside her.

“Northwestern Exalt, Lady of Red Sea, Lian Zulin,” Yan Zhaoge raised his brows, “Since the Western Exalt has arrived too, why not show yourself?”

The space that was beneath the ocean of flames and ocean of thunderbolts and above the surface of the Royal Reed Sea had originally contained nothing at all.

Now, however, a voice resounded from that area, “Not a simple youth indeed.”

The air above the surface of the sea wobbled lightly before a formless figure was manifested.

His silhouette gradually turned from transparent and formless to clear and tangible.

On seeing him, those of Broad Creed Mountain simultaneously sucked in a breath of cold air.

If he had not shown himself, amongst all of them present, many would not have been able to locate him even if they had tried diligently to do so.

It was precisely the Western Exalt, Lang Qing.

Four hostile Exalts were bearing down on Broad Creed Mountain!

If one were to count the Southeastern Exalt Cao Jie and the Northeastern Exalt Liu Zhenggu, more than half of the World beyond Worlds' Ten Exalts were currently gathered here in the Royal Reed Sea!

# HSSB 1024: Some things can and cannot be done

---

Above the sky, the Northeastern Exalt Liu Zhenggu was in a standoff with the Eastern Exalt Daoist Oneheaven.

Over by the side, the Western Exalt Lian Zulin and the Southern Exalt Zhuang Shen stood side by side as they gazed down upon Broad Creed Mountain in the region of sea of the Spirit Inheritance Region together.

The Western Exalt Lang Qing had suddenly appeared above the sea surface as he was locking gazes with the Southeastern Exalt Cao Jie who was standing atop Broad Creed Mountain's Heaven Rising Peak.

The pressure exerted by these six Exalts caused not just the Spirit Inheritance Region that Broad Creed Mountain was in but even the entire Royal Reed Sea to seemingly solidify.

The ripples subsided on the surface of the sea as it was like the surface of a mirror.

These usual tides had completely fallen still now with the sea resembling a continent.

The mighty auras disrupted space and time, forming projections in the air above the Royal Reed Sea.

At this moment, most martial practitioners within the entire southeastern Yang Heaven Territory as well as the neighbouring southern Blazing Heaven Territory were able to see these scenes in the air above the Royal Reed Sea.

Everyone gazed dazedly at Cao Jie, Zhuang Shen and the others, unable to utter a sound.

While there had been some guesses previously, that so many peak experts had actually congregated at the tiny Royal Reed Sea still

left all the onlookers feeling shocked.

Three Sovereigns Five Emperors, Exalts of Ten Territories.

These eight words represented the current strongest existences of the World beyond Worlds.

This situation had already gone on for over a thousand years as it was deeply inscribed in the hearts of all.

Over these long years, members of these bigwigs had perished before due to various reasons.

Amongst these rulers, there had only ever been a deficiency and never an excess of them.

For example, a hundred years ago, before the 'Heavenly Young Master' Chen Qianhua had attained the Human Exalt stage, there had been a short period of time in the World beyond Worlds in which there had only been nine Exalts.

Only when the monstrously talented Chen Qianhua had achieved that breakthrough had the name of the ten Exalts been restored as true.

Normally, most of the time, these Exalts remained in their own domains, seldom venturing outside.

Today, however, there were a total of six Exalts who had congregated at Broad Creed Mountain in the Royal Reed Sea.

This was virtually unheard of in recent years, other than when they had previously all headed to Kunlun Mountain in the central Jun Heaven Territory together.

Still, what this entailed was likely a battle on a grand scale rarely seen in recent years in the World beyond Worlds.

A great battle of Human Exalts.

While only the Northeastern and Eastern Exalts had completely released their auras at this moment, with Cao Jie, Zhuang Shen and the other two temporarily still yet to make a move, as those of

Broad Creed Mountain sensed that intimidating air now, they too felt somewhat shocked and fearful.

At this moment, atop the mountain were the Southeastern Swordsmistress and other peak martial practitioners of the southeast as they amounted to quite a few late Immortal Bridge Martial Saints.

Still, even they dared not get involved as they sensed that pressure, knowing that they would die without a doubt if they did so.

Human Exalts, bodies of Human Immortals.

What was a Human Immortal?

Beneath Immortals and above mortals, not having become Immortal but no longer being mortal.

Amongst all mortal lifeforms, the only existences who barely had a chance at resisting Emperors were Human Exalts of the tenth level of the Martial Saint realm.

Meanwhile, they too presided loftily over other Martial Saints almost like how Immortals gazed down upon mortal martial practitioners from high above.

Besides the Southeastern Exalt Cao Jie, there were only two people currently atop the mountain with calm mentalities as their expressions remained unchanged.

They were none other than Yan Zhaoge and his father, Yan Di.

“You Exalts have come from far away to attend our Broad Creed Mountain’s opening ceremony today. This Yan first thanks you here,” Although Yan Di’s expression was composed, his gaze was sharp and domineering.

Zhuang Shen, Lang Qing, Daoist Oneheaven and Lian Zulin who were subject to his gaze all knit their brows slightly.

“Your son Yan Zhaoge came to my southern Blazing Heaven

Territory, taking away quite a few things then,” Zhuang Shen said coldly, “In having come here today, I will add on another big present to your Broad Creed Mountain.”

He looked at the Southeastern Exalt Cao Jie, “Cao Jie, besides our past enmity, there is only that one phoenix bone which I seek over which victory or defeat must be decided.”

“Still, I am of no mind to discuss this with you today. All I want is to level Broad Creed Mountain and claim Yan Zhaoge’s life.”

“If you wish to obstruct me, no mercy will be shown today!”

Hearing this, Cao Jie replied mildly, “Do your worst.”

Zhuang Shen nodded, “Very well then.”

Then, he turned to look at Yan Zhaoge, gazing at him for a long time before saying, “An outstanding young man. Sadly, I must claim your accursed life today.”

“Those who kill can always themselves be killed. This principle applies to everyone,” Yan Zhaoge smiled, “It applies to those from your Wutong Slope, applies to me and applies to you as well.”

Zhuang Shen said, “That’s right. Let us settle all this with our own martial prowess then.”

The Western Exalt Lang Qing now turned to look at the Northeastern Exalt Liu Zhenggu, “Elder Liu, why must you come to stir up this turbid water?”

“Let us not mention that both you and Zhuang Shen have enmity with Golden Court Mountain and Broad Creed Mountain,” Liu Zhenggu’s voice tolled like a sonorous bell, “Why have Oneheaven and Northwestern Lian come today? This old man has come for the exact opposite reason.”

The Northwestern Exalt Lian Zulin who had yet to say anything since showing up suddenly spoke up now, “Do not associate me with the likes of you lot.”

“I care not about what Hue Yuexin’s descendant obtained from the Dim Radiant Emperor. Still, with the supreme treasure of our lineage of the Red Sea having fallen into their hands, I must definitely get it back.”

Lang Qing said, “That is fine. It means the same in the end.”

He looked at Liu Zhenggu and Cao Jie, “You were only secretly doing it before. Now, however, the two of you are blatantly helping Bright Connection Hu’s descendant?”

The Bright Connection Emperor Hu Yuexin, Grand Master of Yan Zhaoge’s mother Xue Chuqing, had disappeared without a trace from the historical records of the World beyond Worlds as an Emperor that few would know of now.

“You can be considered as blatantly going against the will of the Earthly Sovereign now,” Daoist Oneheaven said slowly.

Liu Zhenggu snorted, “Stop it with your nonsense. The Earthly Sovereign has never called for the arrest of Xue Chuqing before.”

Lang Qing said mildly, “The Earthly Sovereign does not quibble with those of the junior generation. Still, some things that are laid out there must be dealt with at the end of the day. We naturally must act when it is necessary. Why must the Earthly Sovereign have to order it for it to be done?”

“Perhaps,” Liu Zhenggu did not bother rebutting him as thunderbolts rampaged about his body, “Still, similarly, there are some things that can be done and some things that cannot be done.”

Zhuang Shen gazed up into the heavens, exhaling slowly, “Living in this world, there are indeed some things that can be done and some things that cannot be done.”

“Some debts of blood must be repaid.”

With that, the aura about his body changed with blazing fire sweeping the area as the fiery phoenix spread its wings, all-

encompassing flames descending towards Broad Creed Mountain!

The Northwestern Exalt Lian Zulin glanced at Daoist Oneheaven and Lang Qing, “Settle your grudges with Northeastern Liu and Southeastern Cao yourselves. All those related to Xue Chuqing are mine.”

The cloak that enveloped her thin, delicate body was suddenly opened.

An endless crimson ocean suffused space, seeming even vaster than the Royal Reed Sea as it obscured the sky.

Enveloped by that red sea, everyone present felt as though they were not in control of their own lives.

The Western Exalt Lian Zulin was descended from the lineage of the Red Sea that was said to be the dao tradition of the bigwig of legend, Red Essence One, who had been a personal disciple of the Lord of Primordial Beginning, founder of the Jade Clear lineage.

They cultivated in yin and yang and controlled life and death, being boundlessly profound.

This legacy had resumed after the Great Calamity, with many baleful and vicious methods having newly been born.

While Lian Zulin was female, the brutality of her methods was ranked amongst the top of the Ten Exalts.

This attack of hers was even more ferocious than that of the Southern Exalt Zhuang Shen’s!

“There is indeed no easy Human Exalt,” Enveloped by the red sea, Yan Zhaoge sensed his rather unstable soul as it was seemingly about to be forcibly pulled and extracted out from his fleshly body.



# HSSB 1025: Battle of Human Exalts

---

As the Southern Exalt Zhuang Shen and the Northwestern Exalt Lian Zulin acted simultaneously, the Eastern Exalt Daoist Oneheaven and the Northeastern Exalt Liu Zhenggu moved as well.

Liu Zhenggu raised a hand, countless thunderbolts condensing in the form of a darkish-green lance in his hands.

He brandished the lance, piercing forward.

The sky above the entire Royal Reed Sea was filled densely with dark clouds at this moment as those thunderbolts roiled.

The thunderclouds even extended to places outside of the Royal Reed Sea.

Numerous snakes of lightning slithered swiftly within the dark clouds, traversing the area as they converged from all directions to congregate in the air above the Spirit Inheritance Region of the Royal Reed Sea.

Then, infinite, endless snakes of lightning descended simultaneously, coiling about the lance that was wielded by Liu Zhenggu.

The next moment, thunder exploded, violent thunderbolts piercing through the heavens and the earth as they condensed as a single line, completely chopping space away before Liu Zhenggu.

How incomparably sturdy were these spatial boundaries of the World beyond Worlds, and how were they when compared to the likes of the Eight Extremities World and Vast Ocean World?

Yet, as Liu Zhenggu stabbed out with his lance, he still hacked out a shocking scar between the heavens and the earth.

A crevice and fissure vaguely seemed now to be ripped open in the World beyond Worlds.

Even if the ninth level Martial Saint ‘Treasured Branch Suppressing Peak’ Zhang Shuren were to defend against this lance with the full power of the Wutong Phoenix Perching Formation, as soon as he was struck by it, he would still perish immediately.

Whether it was the phoenix or the Wutong tree, it would all be smote into smithereens by heavenly thunder!

The Divine Sky True Art was ferocious and violent as Liu Zhenggu’s Divine Sky True King Lance surged forth with an unstoppable momentum.

Daoist Oneheaven blocked it, his palms combining to form a circle amidst space as the five elements merged to form a massive vortex.

It was precisely a supreme martial art of the lineage of Remote Cloud Mountain’s Clear Light Locale, the Five Elements Samsara Wheel.

Executed by Daoist Oneheaven, this supreme martial art was completely different from when Yan Zhaoge had seen the likes of Xiang Yiyang using it initially, much like the difference between mud and clouds.

At this time and at this place, all things between the heavens and earth seemed to have transformed into the spiritual qi of the five elements. As the vortex rotated, there seemed to be numerous figures within, seeming alive whilst also dead as it was like an amalgamation of the worlds of lifeforms and the dead.

All things transformed into the five elements, circulating life and death for the various heavens.

This was the Five Elements Samsara Wheel!

The vortex intercepted Liu Zhenggu’s Divine Sky True King Lance, unceasingly dispelling the destructive power and death qi within, transforming it into surging life force which resisted that shocking strike.

With his cultivation base of a Human Exalt, it was still necessary to subdue toughness with subtlety when facing Liu Zhenggu's attack in order to dispel its might.

However, Daoist Oneheaven had not intended to go all out in an exchange of blows in the first place.

His target was Yan Zhaoge and Yan Di, or rather Xue Chuqing, just like it was for Lian Zulin and Lang Qing.

While he could not personally attack Broad Creed Mountain now, it was already enough for him to block Liu Zhenggu.

If Broad Creed Mountain fell, there were quite a few things which he desired.

As the Exalts of the east, northeast, south and northwest battled now, the Western Exalt Lang Qing and the Southeastern Exalt Cao Jie did nothing at all.

Lang Qing stood silently on the surface of the sea as if this did not concern him at all and he was a mere casual bystander who had come here to see the commotion, being unaffiliated with Zhuang Shen's lot.

While there was a smile on his face, no feeling of humour was visible within his gaze at all.

Cao Jie was expressionless as even though he was currently standing atop Broad Creed Mountain, being enveloped by the attacks of Zhuang Shen and Lian Zulin as well, he still seemed like he had not seen any of it at all.

His gaze was just fixated on the surface of the sea down below on the Western Exalt Lang Qing who seemed completely harmless.

This was for no other reason than the fact that Lang Qing was a Human Exalt who cultivated in the Spatial Heavenly Scripture of the Jade Clear lineage.

Distance virtually held no significance whatsoever for Lang Qing.

It could be said that he was very likely the fastest of all the experts present.

Even Liu Zhenggu whose momentum was like raging thunder and flashing lightning could not compete with Lang Qing in terms of pure speed alone.

Indeed, as Liu Zhenggu saw that Daoist Oneheaven intended to slowly whittle him down, he immediately snorted coldly, changing his stance.

The darkish-green lance that was condensed of thunder instantly turned from ferocious and violent to gentle and subtle as water.

The toughest, most blazing existence between the heavens and the earth, thunderbolts, resembled flowing water at this moment.

Liu Zhenggu abruptly retracted his lance and retreated before his figure flashed and he moved past Daoist Oneheaven at a speed that resembled lightning.

Yet, the Western Exalt Lang Qing now moved from atop the surface of the sea down below.

Without any gap in time whatsoever, Lang Qing had already appeared before Liu Zhenggu!

It was as if the time taken for him to move was wiped out from the memories of all, a time fragment lost from their minds.

The concept of spatial distance seemed not to exist for the Western Exalt Lang Qing at this moment.

Cao Jie who had been passive before this as he continually paid attention to Lang Qing's movements finally acted now.

The condensed sword qi shot into the heavens, with the skies opening as a speck of starlight glowed exceptionally brightly amidst the darkness of the universe.

As the majestic, immeasurable will descended, it was like a mighty overlord had descended onto this earth.

The Purple Tenuity Star flickered amidst the sky up above as it was guided by Cao Jie's sword-qi and boosted his strength.

Cao Jie brandished his sword, a streak of purple sword-light piercing towards the Western Exalt Lang Qing.

As compared to the powerful momentum of the other Exalts which shocked the heavens, this sword of Cao Jie's looked very ordinary.

Still, strangely enough, the purple sword-light that seemed ordinary and innocuous actually vaguely shot forth to instantly catch up with the Western Exalt Lang Qing with his instant spatial movement.

Along with that sword, Cao Jie's aura had changed in its entirety as it resembled that of a sovereign of swords who presided domineeringly over the heavens and earth, all bowing in submission to his reign.

Facing this Purple Tenuity Sword, even the Western Exalt Lang Qing's mind was shaken, drifting off as it was difficult to stabilise.

He and Cao Jie were old enemies as neither of them was unfamiliar with the other.

Seeing that Cao Jie was attacking forcefully, Lang Qing's figure suddenly disappeared from the spot once more as he avoided Cao Jie's supremely powerful sword.

Still, right as he vanished, he reappeared in another location.

It was Cao Jie's back!

Space distorted in Lang Qing's empty hands, transforming into a formless, transparent sabre which hacked towards Cao Jie!

This was his actual target.

Just as Lang Qing was familiar with Cao Jie, Cao Jie was also deeply experienced with Lang Qing's powerful methods.

The stars of the north collectively shone down from the skies as

the purple sword-light suddenly expanded, forming a pillar of light which enveloped Cao Jie's entire body.

“Clang!”

Cao Jie's sword pointed towards his back, swiftly moving to block Lang Qing's spatial sabre by the narrowest of margins.

Meanwhile, now rid of the threat posed by Lang Qing, Liu Zhenggu continued piercing towards the Southern Exalt Zhuang Shen with the darkish-green lance in his hands.

While he was not as fast as Lang Qing, he was still swift with thunderbolts penetrating through space as he instantly arrived before Zhuang Shen.

Beside them, the Northwestern Exalt Lian Zulin was expressionless as she pressured down with the Red Sea towards Broad Creed Mountain with one hand while pointing towards Liu Zhenggu's lance with a finger of her other hand.

The twin qis of yin and yang intermingled at her fingertips, shaking the heavens and the earth as causality and effect were reversed.

While that darkish-green lance formed of violent thunderbolts did not deviate from its trajectory, in order to resist the effects of Lian Zulin's Yin Yang Finger, Liu Zhenggu's movements instantly lagged slightly for a moment.

The reason he had attacked Zhuang Shen and not Lian Zulin was precisely that he knew that the latter cultivated in the Yin Yang Heavenly Scripture, not being afraid of attacks from multiple enemies.

Still, Lian Zulin possessed a profound cultivation base as while the attack was not directed towards her and the finger was pointed from far away, it still possessed remarkable profundities.

As the attack was intercepted, the Southern Exalt feared nothing as he continued attacking towards Broad Creed Mountain.

At this moment, Daoist Oneheaven whom Liu Zhenggu had temporarily shaken off earlier had caught up as he punched towards Liu Zhenggu's back!

# HSSB 1026: Immortal Bridge VS Human Exalt

---

The Exalts utilised various methods of their own as a chaotic battle ensued.

All of them could face attacks from more than one opponent at any time.

While the Southeastern Exalt Cao Jie had blocked the Western Exalt Lang Qing, the attack by the Northeastern Exalt Liu Zhenggu was still obstructed by the Northwestern Exalt Lian Zulin.

With this slight delay, Daoist Oneheaven had already arrived behind him, punching outwards.

Unlike Liu Zhenggu's purple thunder-light, Daoist Oneheaven's hand was currently shrouded by azure thunderbolts.

The lineage of Remote Cloud Mountain's Clear Light Locale that was descended from the Southern Longevity Emperor cultivated in thunder arts too.

The Longevity Scripture was all-encompassing as besides endless life force, those who cultivated in it could also temper their bodies with thunderbolts to obtain immense power.

While they were not as ferocious as Grave Thunder Palace's Divine Sky True Art, the martial arts of Clear Light Locale were also extremely domineering.

This Immortal Capital Thunder Light Fist was a secret killer move recorded in the Longevity Scripture.

Daoist Oneheaven transformed the qi of life into the qi of death with the Five Elements Samsara Wheel before executing the Immortal Capital Thunder Light Fist once more, exerting his full strength as it was boundlessly powerful!

“Open!” Liu Zhenggu was not panicked despite his opponent



having arrived behind him as he sucked in a deep breath and roared loudly, his roar resembling exploding thunder as it caused half the lands of the entire southeastern Yang Heaven Territory to quake.

The old man who wore the purple crown did not evade that incoming attack as the golden light of thunder instead surged on his body.

As the golden light of thunder appeared, the timeflow of the surrounding space seemed to have fallen still.

Everything had become eternal and unchanging.

It was ancient and eternal, undecaying and inextinguishable.

As Daoist Oneheaven's Immortal Capital Thunder Light Fist landed on the golden light of thunder, there was no heaven-shocking, earth-shaking eruption or flows of qi that scattered messily about.

This instant seemed to have been locked down, transforming into eternity.

This was ranked fifth amongst the Nine Heavenly Immortal Thunders.

Undecaying Eternal Thunder!

Eternity and an instant were the two extremes of time.

By analysing the true intent and profundities of eternity and an instant, one could decipher the mysteries of time.

The Nine Heavenly Immortal Thunders all had miraculous uses of their own. Amongst them were the Undecaying Eternal Thunder and An Instant's Thunder which were respectively ranked fifth and sixth. When combined, they manifested the true significance of creation's time.

Liu Zhenggu's fighting style was ferocious and violent as it depleted one greatly.

Still, with the Undecaying Eternal Thunder, so long as he did not exceed certain limits, the essential qi of thunderbolts of this Northeastern Exalt was virtually limitless.

Protecting his body with this thunder art, he possessed great defensive power.

Liu Zhenggu forcibly took Daoist Oneheaven's punch with the Undecaying Eternal Thunder, with his figure quaking as his purplish-red face instantly regained its colour after turning pale for a moment.

Because of Lian Zulin, the chance had already been lost. Liu Zhenggu simply accepted this fact as he ignored Zhuang Shen for now, turning back with a lance and stabbing straight at Daoist Oneheaven's chest!

Daoist Oneheaven's gaze flickered as while azure lightning leapt within his pupils, purple thunderbolts suddenly surged within its depths!

His strength abruptly rose to a whole new level!

Yan Zhaoge was extremely familiar with this eruption of strength.

That was precisely An Instant's Thunder!

When Yan Zhaoge had previously obtained a fragment of the Eye of the Thunder Emperor from a disciple of Clear Light Locale, Xiang Yiyang, he had guessed that the Eastern Exalt Daoist Oneheaven was likely proficient in An Instant's Thunder too.

As he unleashed it now, it was indeed extraordinary.

He was a Human Exalt in the first place. As he suddenly blazed and erupted with strength now, that instant's terrifying explosive power caused him to be even more ferocious than the Northeastern Exalt Liu Zhenggu.

He intersected his palms and clapped down on the darkish-green

lance formed of the light of thunder, directly snapping it and shattering the thunder light!

As the lance was shattered, the thunder light that formed it scattered into the surroundings, causing the heavens and earth all around to be completely bathed within this stormy rain of thunderbolts.

Thick pillars of thunder descended, slamming mightily into the surface of the sea and penetrating right through it.

Countless pillars of thunder densely filled the area, causing the place to turn entirely into a hell of thunderbolts.

At this moment, the region of sea of the Spirit Inheritance Region that Broad Creed Mountain was in was even more threatening than the neighbouring Clear Scenic Region where Endless Magnetic Storms rampaged.

Let alone being struck directly by the thunder, martial practitioners who had not ascended the Immortal Bridge would be blown into smithereens in mere moments right after entering this domain of electricity.

After this eruption, as Liu Zhenggu's True Sky Divine Lance was dispelled, Daoist Oneheaven's aura weakened slightly as well.

Still, inhaling deeply, he quickly regained his original momentum.

Daoist Oneheaven had already analysed An Instant's Thunder for many years and possessed a high cultivation base as well. He possessed intricate control of it as he was able to freely adjust the level of eruption of An Instant's Thunder as he wanted, not necessarily having to blaze all his energy in a single go.

Now, Liu Zhenggu attacked once more with chain explosions of thunder which appeared endless in their momentum.

Daoist Oneheaven's face was sunken as water. He changed his stance, utilising that technique which suppressed toughness with

subtlety once more as he entered a protracted battle with Liu Zhenggu.

With the projected scenes, that clash between Exalts was virtually witnessed by everyone in the west in the southern Blazing Heaven Territory and the east in the southeastern Yang Heaven Territory.

Countless martial practitioners were sighing in amazement at this moment.

They thought back on how the Southern Exalt had previously battled once against four, simultaneously battling three ninth level Martial Saint experts who included the Southeastern Swordsmistress as well as Long Hanhua of the eighth level of the Martial Saint realm. Without even having to use his true strength, he had been able to deal with it relatively easily.

At this moment, it was in a battle against opponents of the same level that these Exalts were displaying their true methods, letting everyone see why it was said that the difference between the ninth and tenth levels of the Martial Saint realm was like that between the heavens and the earth.

Yet, there were unconventional existences on this very battlefield that challenged common sense.

Also, there was not just one of these existences!

Seeing that Liu Zhenggu was being tied up by Daoist Oneheaven again, Lian Zulin returned her attention to Broad Creed Mountain before her.

Now, however, sabre-light lit up in front of her.

Where the sabre-light passed, it was like all creation had changed!

A powerful sabre-intent which was tyrannical and rampant as it presided over all lifeforms transformed into a blade that split the heavens, hacking towards the Red Sea above Broad Creed

Mountain and its mistress!

The vast, ferocious Red Sea that roiled and pressured downwards was actually broken through by the sabre-light at its centre!

The sabre-light unceasingly surged upwards, projecting the splitting apart of the heavens and the earth in the creation of the world to the process of the heavens being destroyed and the earth extinguished.

It was not simply the splitting of the heavens and earth or the destruction of all creation.

Instead, it was the complete process from start to end.

Therefore, it was unstoppable in its momentum!

Creation itself changed alongside the overarching trend of the times, sweeping over and suppressing everything!

Even the Red Sea beneath the palm of the Northwestern Exalt Lian Zulin was split into half from the centre at this moment, the seawater receding to the sides!

At this time and at this place, it was obvious who had unleashed that sabre.

It could only be Broad Creed Mountain's current Chief, Yan Di!

A mid Immortal Bridge Martial Saint was clashing head-on against a Human Exalt!

Brilliant light shone in the eyes of the Northwestern Exalt Lian Zulin as her expression was serious as it had never been before.

She abruptly flipped her palm!

Without any prior warning, white radiance suddenly surged on the waves of the Red Sea, condensing to form what seemed like the surface of a mirror.

This was another supreme martial art of the Red Sea's lineage, Bright Red Yin Yang Change.

A thread of white mirror light shone as it descended. While it looked thin, all lifeforce was terminated where it passed.

The baleful air and killing intent within was even fiercer than that of the Red Sea earlier as its power was concentrated completely in a single line, directed towards just Yan Di alone!

Yan Di remained fearless as he struck out unflinchingly with his sabre towards Lian Zulin!

# HSSB 1027: Sabre breaking yin yang cleaving Red Sea

---

The lineage of the World beyond Worlds' Northwestern Dim Heaven Territory's Red Sea was said to be of the legacy of Red Essence One, a disciple of the Lord of Primordial Beginning of the Jade Clear lineage.

It was rumoured that Red Essence One's dao arena, Grand Splendour Mountain's Cloud Sky Cave, had possessed an almighty treasure known as the Yin Yang Mirror.

When illuminating someone, this treasured mirror could decide life and death. There was a side of yin and a side of yang, the side of yin being white and the side of yang being red. The white spelled death when it shook while the red spelled life.

It had been greatly renowned in the legends of the Investiture of the Gods.

This was where the supreme martial art of the Red Sea's lineage, the Bright Red Yin Yang Change, originated from.

As Lian Zulin flipped her palm, white light appeared in the waves of the Red Sea that condensed to form the white mirror side of yin, possessing incredible killing power which would bring death upon those it shone on!

It was no exaggeration at all to say that the Northwestern Exalt Lian Zulin was one of those who had killed the most people amongst the Ten Exalts.

Of the other five Exalts who were present, besides the Southern Exalt Zhaung Shen who was bolstered by four Virtues and possessed shocking defensive power, the others would not dare to receive this blow of Lian Zulin's head-on.

This strike that rotated yin and yang and spelled certain death possessed baleful qi and killing intent that was rare in this world.

While the Five Elements Samsara Wheel of Daoist Oneheaven's Clear Light Locale looked similar, if he dared to face this blow of Lian Zulin's head on, it would instantly be destroyed.

Even Zhuang Shen who was bolstered by four Virtues would evade if he could. It would definitely suck terribly for him if he was hit by it.

At this moment, however, an Immortal Bridge Martial Saint showed no intention of evading at all when faced with this vicious blow of Lian Zulin's.

It was Yan Di!

Facing that incoming white mirror-light, his expression did not change in the slightest as he simply raised the sabre in his hand.

The deafening roar of a dragon now resounded as not only did Yan Di not retract his sabre, he even exerted greater might.

Where his sabre attacked, it was even more tyrannical, even more domineering and sharp.

As his sabre-light rampaged freely, it hacked straight through the world before him, arriving before Lian Zulin.

"Trying to drag us down into death together? When I began battling in life or death fights, you weren't even born in this world yet," Lian Zulin had a cold look on her face as she raised her other palm.

At this moment, half of the boundless red sea suddenly changed into a dense white ocean.

Red light flickered within the white ocean, also transforming into a circular mirror.

At this moment, the ocean was half red and half white, each side having a speck of light which shone in contrast to its colour.

The entire ocean resembled a Taiji diagram of fishes of yin and yang now.



In direct contrast to the deadly white mirror-light within the red sea, the red mirror-light within the white sea aided one in escaping into freedom and life.

The red light condensed in front of Lian Zulin, blocking Yan Di's sabre.

Yet, just like how it had hacked through the red sea earlier, Yan Di's sabre-light was unstoppable at this moment!

The momentum lies with me, I am unstoppable.

All obstructions would inevitably be swept through.

Yan Di's domineering sabre actually forcibly hacked through the Red Yang Transformation of Lian Zulin's Bright Red Yin Yang Change!

A crack was forcibly made on that red treasured mirror by Yan Di's sabre-light!

The sabre-light and the mirror-light clashed.

The sabre-light advanced forward unceasingly while the crack on the mirror's surface grew larger and larger!

Though quite taken aback, Lian Zulin seemed unconcerned. That white-mirror light that represented death had already arrived at Yan Di's head!

With that, victory and defeat were already decided!

Even though the might of Yan Di's sabre had her rather harried, she was confident that she would be able to withstand a sabre of Yan Di's even if the red mirror was broken, whereas Yan Di would definitely be unable to resist the white light as he was illuminated by it.

While it was rather difficult to believe, Lian Zulin had to admit that the fierce attacks of this Immortal Bridge Martial Saint truly had the ability to threaten her.

In terms of defence, however, he was far from comparable to a

Human Exalt like herself!

As Lian Zulin was thinking this, her expression suddenly changed slightly.

Streams of qi gushed out from the top of Yan Di's head, instantly forming a clump of clouds that was dim and murky as it resembled chaos.

Tiny specks of fragmented light flickered within that were not bright, dazzling, shiny or conspicuous.

The principles and concepts within were difficult to analyse and difficult to describe.

The expansion of the cloud qi was like the blooming of a lotus.

The petals of the flower were blurry as it was not exceptionally distinct from the surrounding space.

As the white treasured light which reaped the lives of others fell on that existence which resembled a clump of clouds whilst also a lotus, slight ripples were stirred up.

The lotus swayed unceasingly, the cloud qi expanding non-stop.

Yet, the white light seemed like it was trapped amidst mud. As soon as it entered that cloud, it lost its miraculous nature as it ceased to function, let alone harm Yan Di.

However, Yan Di's sabre grew increasingly powerful as it chopped that red mirror and white sea to the point that it shattered completely!

His sabre did not cease in its momentum as it continued chopping towards Lian Zulin!

Lian Zulin was shocked.

While she was confident and arrogant, Lian Zulin who was greatly experienced in battle had naturally investigated Broad Creed Mountain's situation in detail before having come over.

While Yan Di's strength was so powerful it was shocking, it had generally still been within her expectations.

Lian Zulin had also been constantly keeping vigilant against the many treasures that Broad Creed Mountain possessed.

Yet, never would she have thought that a Grand Simplicity Splendour Cloud might suddenly appear above Yan Di's head, actually blocking a killing move of hers head-on!

The transformation of yin brightness of the Bright Red Yin Yang Change was helpless against the Grand Simplicity Splendour Cloud. Yet, the transformation of red yang which she used to defend herself had been hacked through with a single sabre of Yan Di's!

The sabre that Yan Di wielded was still the Heavenly Dragon Sabre that he had personally forged.

Unlike how it had been in the past, the Heavenly Dragon Sabre was already a high-grade Sacred Artifact now!

It had only been a mere few years since Yan Di had ascended the Immortal Bridge as it would not have been easy for him to forge a high-grade Sacred Artifact.

Yet, Broad Creed Mountain's wealth was presently just too abundant. Yan Zhaoge had supplied all the remaining dragon corpses in the Myriad Dragon Palace to Yan Di and provided many additional treasures too. With that, in a mere few years, the Heavenly Dragon Sabre had been reforged at the level of a high-grade Sacred Artifact!

Protected by the Grand Simplicity Splendour Cloud, Yan Di currently had no need to think about his defence at all.

Combined with his sword, he displayed the true intent of his martial dao to the point of perfection.

Even with Lian Zulin's sufficiently quick reaction time as she immediately drew on a Sacred Artifact to protect herself, caught

off guard, she was still injured by Yan Di's descending sabre!

An uproar inevitably arose amongst those who witnessed this.

Despite the seeming discrepancy between them, it was actually Yan Di who was an Immortal Bridge Martial Saint who had ultimately been victorious in that exchange?!

Grand Simplicity Splendour Cloud above his head, sabre horizontally before his chest, Yan Di raised his head towards the heavens and roared, "Human Exalts-worthy of your reputations indeed. This fight is an enjoyable one! Come, again!"

Lian Zulin retreated, a heavy expression on her face.

She had originally thought that facing an opponent of the mid Immortal Bridge stage, she would be able to end the fight with her cultivation base alone regardless of whether her opponent was bare-handed or wielded a weapon.

Even if the other party was supremely talented and possessed outstanding strength, in having been able to walk to this day, how was she, Lian Zulin, not a genius amongst geniuses herself?

At the end of the day, however, she had still been forced to use her weapon.

Otherwise, she would have been hurt even more badly.

As Lian Zulin raised her left hand, the fresh blood that it was soaked in was especially striking.

She again executed the transformation of red yang of the Bright Yin Yang Change that signified 'life'.

Where the red mirror-light shone, her wounds instantly began to heal and recover.

Yet, while her flesh and blood were healing up, a scar remained which was also distorting non-stop!

It resembled a furious dragon buried beneath the skin of her left hand as it struggled to break free and escape.

That was Yan Di's sabre intent which still remained within Lian Zulin's body.

With her cultivation base of the tenth level of the Martial Saint realm, she was actually unable to effectively suppress that tyrannical, rampaging sabre-intent while she was continuing to battle.

# HSSB 1028: Palm pressuring heaven earth suppressing fiery phoenix

---

Lian Zulin stared fixatedly at Yan Di.

Everyone else directed their gazes at that sabre-wielding figure too.

Even Lang Qing, Zhuang Shen and the other Exalts who were still in the midst of battle divided some of their attention to that part of the battlefield.

Yan Zhaoge had shocked the world in the battles at Vast Spirit Mountain and Circumference Mountain that year.

If one were to say that Yan Zhaoge's strength was difficult to accurately measure due to the unique nature of the Nine Bends Yellow River Formation, in the battle at Vast Spirit Mountain, Yan Zhaoge had definitely repelled Zhang Shuren and Yuan Xiancheng as a Seeing Divinity Martial Saint, having even beaten Yuan Xiancheng into successive nirvanic rebirths in the process.

Daoist East Spring and Zhao Zhen of the eighth level of the Martial Saint realm had even been slain by Yan Zhaoge on the spot.

Such achievements in battle were shocking indeed.

Having possessed such strength at the Seeing Divinity stage, now that he had ascended the Immortal Bridge, just how would his martial prowess be?

Everyone had a general consensus regarding Yan Zhaoge's mighty strength.

Still, Yan Di's strength similarly caused everyone to sigh in admiration now.

"His sabre intent is very strange, a little like...a little like..." Gazing at Yan Di, Lang Qing seemed to have apprehended

something for a moment, but it was gone in a flash, “And that auspicious cloud above his head too. That is...”

Lian Zulin seemed to have thought of something too. Still, her brows were tightly knit as she felt as if she was trying to gaze past a thick fog.

Whatever she was thinking, however, brandishing his Heavenly Dragon Sabre, Yan Di was already striding forth in attack once more!

This time, Lian Zulin raised her caution to the utmost.

At this moment, she had completely placed Yan Di on the same level as her, treating him like another Human Exalt.

It was as if the person she was battling with was not a mid Immortal Bridge Martial Saint but a figure like Cao Jie and Liu Zhenggu.

She had not known the sharpness of Yan Di's sabre arts earlier, much less having expected the Grand Simplicity Splendour Cloud's existence. She had intended to make use of the viciousness of her Bright Red Yin Yang Change to take care of Yan Di within a short period of time.

In the end, however, it was she who had nearly been overturned in that short exchange.

Lian Zulin had learnt from her mistake now as she fought stably and seriously.

As a Human Exalt who had accomplished her fame many years ago, she possessed more than just a single high-grade Sacred Artifact, all of these being of remarkable quality too.

While they were unlike the likes of the Extreme Yang Seal and the Extreme Yin Crown, they could virtually be compared to the Evil Sword Taotie as they surpassed weapons like the Cloud Circulating Heavenly Light Sword, the Purple Sea Sword and the Golden Crow Incinerating Heaven Sabre etcetera.

In the hands of Human Exalts, high-grade Sacred Artifacts could display even greater might.

Unleashed with a weapon, Lian Zulin's attacks grew more domineering and rampant.

With the Grand Simplicity Splendour Cloud above his head, Yan Di completely disregarded defence as he brandished his sabre in great movements, attacking towards Lian Zulin with all his might.

The two opponents traded blow for blow in a heaven-shaking, earth overturning battle.

Having integrated the concepts of the Yin Yang Heavenly Scripture, the Life Creation Heavenly Scripture and the Cyclic Heavenly Scripture into his sabre-intent, Yan Di who was usually well read too had abundant true essence and a high qi returning speed that was similarly far from comparable to ordinary Immortal Bridge Martial Saints.

It was because of this that he was able to maintain that supremely overwhelming sabre art of his.

Still, his opponent being Lian Zulin, a Human Exalt, Yan Di's depletion was far greater than if he were fighting with other enemies.

As time passed, his stamina would gradually diminish.

Still, Lian Zulin was shocked to find as time went by that despite the immense depletion to his true essence, Yan Di wielded his sabre with increasing ease as it was tyrannical and domineering.

It seemed like he was gradually getting accustomed to having an Exalt as his opponent.

It was as if the granite on the surface of some fine jade was being scraped off little by little as its shine grew increasingly resplendent and dazzling!

As Yan Di was locked in combat with Lian Zulin, Yan Zhaoge flew



out to face the Southern Exalt Zhuang Shen as well!

With Lian Zulin having intercepted Liu Zhenggu's attack for him earlier, there was nothing to hold Zhuang Shen back now as he attacked ferociously towards Yan Zhaoge.

The eyes of enemies were exceptionally bloodshot as they saw each other. Any words would all be excessive now.

The massive fiery phoenix spread its wings, obscuring the heavens and concealing the sun.

An infinite, endless rain of fire poured down, enveloping the entire Spirit Inheritance Region as it was inevitably most concentrated at Broad Creed Mountain.

Everyone said that the Southern Exalt Zhuang Shen was proficient in defence and mediocre in offence.

Still, this was relative to those of the same cultivation level like Cao Jie. Facing opponents below the Human Exalt stage, his great strength could still could destroy the heavens and extinguish the earth.

Yan Zhaoge's expression did not change in the least as he rose from the peak of Broad Creed Mountain, directly striking out with a palm.

While he was striking upwards from below, the sky seemed to overturn with this palm of his.

The momentum of the heavens' collapse struck towards the fiery phoenix as beneath the majestic force which could reverse all extremities, it was like the heavens and earth of this place were being torn down from the inside.

Space distorted as the fiery phoenix instantly emitted a mournful cry.

The rain of fire that scattered between the heavens and earth had no way of continuing its descent as well as it instead distorted and

folded it on itself before successively exploding, thus extinguished.

Upon Yan Zhaoge's ascension onto the Immortal Bridge, the Cyclic Heavenly Seal which he executed seemed truly to have the miraculous power to flip the heavens and overturn the earth.

"Rise!" Zhuang Shen snorted coldly as water ripples, soil, white qi and purple light instantly enveloped that fiery phoenix.

Bolstered by four Virtues, the phoenix of flame spread its wings and soared high once more.

The thick earth of meritorious virtue replenished the heavens and extended the dao, preventing the fire of the phoenix from being extinguished.

The water ripples of holy virtue was impenetrable by all arts, assisting the phoenix in resisting all heaven-shaking, earth overturning occurrences.

The purple light of fortuitous virtue did not perish to killing tribulations as it guarded the fiery phoenix from being crushed and slain amidst the distorted spacetime.

The white qi of nether virtue possessed unending vitality as not only was it undying, it even helped the fiery phoenix to find a way out amidst such perilous circumstances.

What attracted one's attention more was that not only was the fiery phoenix itself enveloped by four Virtues, the specks of fiery rain that existed where it flapped its wings were in this state too.

Bolstered by the four Virtues, those shooting stars also resisted the force of Yan Zhaoge's Cyclic Heavenly Seal, becoming tough and sturdy as they continued descending towards Yan Zhaoge!

Seeing this, his old rival Cao Jie's gaze immediately hardened slightly, "He has improved quite a bit..."

Experts were able to tell someone's prowess as soon as they made a move.

Zhuang Shen's grasp of the Phoenix True Form Scripture was obviously far greater than that of Yuan Xiancheng, Zhang Shuren and Peng He etcetera.

The four Virtues of the Earlier Heaven period that possessed shocking defensive power were utilised by him in his attack at this moment.

Although his attacks might not be as brutal and violent as the likes of Cao Jie, Lian Zulin and Liu Zhenggu, they still possessed immense might, even being filled with resilience and continuity, seeming like they could go on without end, being difficult indeed to surpass and take down.

With just this move alone, Zhuang Shen virtually overturned that previous impression he had given everyone of being proficient in defence yet mediocre in offence.

People naturally understood their own abilities and special characteristics the most. Zhuang Shen was no exception as he too had been constantly analysing it, trying to improve his overall abilities.

The result of this could be seen here!

“Nice!” Looking at Zhuang Shen, Yan Zhaoge roared.

Still, he showed no intention of evading at all as he still raised his palm high.

The next moment, his aura skyrocketed.

An illusory silhouette appeared between the heavens and earth.

Yan Zhaoge towered into the heavens even as he stood atop the earth, as if he had merged as one with the sky.

High and distant, simple and ancient, solemn, authoritative, domineering, vigorous.

Facing Zhuang Shen's powerful attack, Yan Zhaoge showed no intention of evading in the least as he clashed with it head-on with

another Cyclic Heavenly Seal!

His palm descended, the sky collapsing as it smashed towards the fiery phoenix and Zhuang Shen!

Whoever's attack was more domineering, was more powerful and mighty, would be the victor!

# HSSB 1029: Skill shocking an Exalt!

---

Yan Zhaoge's palm flipped the sky, causing the entire world before him to be overturned.

A corner of the spatial boundaries of the World beyond Worlds vaguely seemed to distort and break apart now.

Such a violent force caused the eyelids of his ally, the Northeastern Exalt Liu Zhenggu, to twitch madly, "This is a palm that can be unleashed by a martial practitioner of the early Immortal Bridge stage?"

Such a force which reversed extremities and overturned the heavens and earth caused those comets which flickered with a four-coloured glow to be forcibly locked down in mid-air, unable to move.

The glow wavered unceasingly on the surface of the comets.

The water ripples first broke apart before the yellow earth turned to dust. This was followed by the purple light being extinguished before the white qi dissipated too.

"Even the Cyclic Heavenly Seal should not have such great power that can allow an Immortal Bridge Martial Saint to break Southern Zhuang's Earlier Heaven Four Virtues!" The gaze of the Western Exalt Lang Qing flickered as he saw this, "That palm has the Cyclic Heavenly Scripture as the foundation and the profundities of many other supreme martial arts integrated within!"

At first glance, Lang Qing could already recognise the Yin Yang Heavenly Scripture, the Life Creation Heavenly Scripture, the Taiji Yin Yang Palm and the Aeon Light Heavenly Scripture, all of which had miraculous uses.

There also seemed to be the Dim Radiant Twelve Arts of the Dim Radiant Sect's orthodox tradition?

And this was not all. There were definitely other supreme martial

arts within too!

Yet, how old was Yan Zhaoge this year?

In a mere few decades, how had he been able to simultaneously comprehend and cultivate in so many supreme martial arts, also having such high attainments in then?

Even the Western Exalt Lang Qing who was greatly knowledgeable and a hegemon of an area felt disbelief at this moment, “Fallen Deity...is it?”

Having lost the power of the four Virtues, those shooting stars lost their momentum against Yan Zhaoge’s Cyclic Heavenly Seal.

Beneath the martial true intent that grasped the powerful might of extremities, the flames were successively extinguished as they instead turned icy cold.

The comets all turned into ice at this moment before being shattered into smithereens!

Where the world had been unbearably hot a moment ago as it resembled a hell of blazing fire, it had transformed into a land of ice and snow at this moment.

Beneath the effects of the ice and snow, even that fiery phoenix seemed to have lost its vitality.

The Southern Exalt Zhuang Shen might be the one who understood Yan Zhaoge’s abilities the most out of everyone present.

He changed his stance, the fiery phoenix soaring high into the air once more, bolstered by four Virtues as it sought to forcibly lift up the collapsing sky, locking down the reversal of extremities.

Yan Zhaoge did not change his palm attack as he simply formed a sword seal with his other hand, pointing towards Zhuang Shen.

An azure dragon roared as it surged into existence.

If it was only this, Zhuang Shen would still not mind it.

Yet, from the body of that azure dragon was emitted mournful streaks of purplish-red sword-glows that were baleful beyond compare as they extinguished all vitality.

The next moment, fresh blood seemed to spurt out from the body of the azure dragon beneath every single one of its scales.

Its flourishing vitality was transformed into extreme death qi at this moment, the death qi condensing into a sword which targeted Zhuang Shen!

This was none other than Yan Zhaoge's self-created martial art, Slaying Azure Dragon!

Ever since having learnt of this sword art of Yan Zhaoge's from the fortunate survivors of the battle of Vast Spirit Mountain back then, Zhuang Shen had paid extra attention to it.

Now that he was personally facing it himself, he still felt it to surpass his expectations, "What a fierce, brutal sword art. It clearly is of the Jade Clear lineage, yet why is it as vicious and ferocious as the Prime Clear lineage's Immortal Slaughtering Sword!"

It was not just Zhuang Shen who thought this as the Eastern Exalt Daoist Oneheaven frowned too.

As compared to Wutong Slope's Phoenix True Form Scripture, the Longevity Scripture of his Clear Light Locale's lineage would be at even more of a disadvantage against this Slaying Azure Dragon.

"His Cyclic Heavenly Seal from earlier did not employ explosive arts which concentrate and blaze one's power like An Instant's Thunder. That was the strength that he has from a normal attack!"

This was what Daoist Oneheaven was even more disturbed by.

He himself was proficient in An Instant's Thunder which could allow him to temporarily erupt with shocking power.

Thus, when seeing Yan Zhaoge clashing with Zhuang Shen head-on, he had inevitably suspected this somewhat.

Yet, seeing Yan Zhaoge simultaneously unleashing palm and sword at this moment, Cyclic Heavenly Seal with one hand and Slaying Azure Dragon with the other, both possessing extraordinary power, Daoist Oneheaven knew that his earlier guess had been wrong.

This youth before him who was far, far younger than he was could truly forcibly resist an Exalt like Zhuang Shen when only at the seventh level of the Martial Saint realm!

Seeing Yan Zhaoge's Slaying Azure Dragon, Zhuang Shen's gaze turned serious.

A strand of white qi shook about his body as he merged with the figure of the fiery phoenix, suddenly transforming into a slender fiery thread which evaded Yan Zhaoge's Slaying Azure Dragon.

The fiery thread rotated amidst space before slicing over towards Yan Zhaoge's body.

Space was sliced into two by this powerful fiery thread at this moment, crimson about its edges.

Space itself seemed to blaze in its entirety with the spatial fissures unable to easily heal.

This Heaven Parting Flowing Fire Slash was the peak killer move of the Phoenix Wings Heavenly Net Sabre. In the whole Wutong Slope, there was only the Southern Exalt Zhuang Shen alone who had mastered it.

Yan Zhaoge retaliated with a Slaying Azure Dragon which clashed with Zhuang Shen's Heaven Parting Flowing Fire Slash head-on.

Having been unable to gain the upper hand in the slightest from that exchange, Zhuang Shen did the same old thing as that fiery thread that he had transformed into traversed space, attempting to



evade Yan Zhaoge's sharpness once more.

Yet, the Heaven Swallowing Earth Devouring Box suddenly appeared within Yan Zhaoge's hands.

As the sword box was opened, black light was emitted in all directions as an ancient bronze sword emerged from within.

Yan Zhaoge caught the ancient bronze sword, drawing a circle in mid-air.

Black light circulated as that circle transformed directly into a black hole, a terrifying suction force emanating from within which locked that slender fiery thread in place!

By now, Yan Zhaoge was already able to completely exert the power of high-grade Sacred Artifacts.

The sword-intent of the Evil Sword Taotie merged with Yan Zhaoge's Slaying Azure Dragon.

Not only was an immense suction force emitted from that terrifying black hole, a purplish-red blood glow also flickered within as it was fierce and baleful beyond compare.

It this black hole had originally like a massive beast opening its mouth, seeking to swallow the heavens and devour the earth, not only did it seek to devour its foe now, it wished to bite it to shreds too!

The fiery thread expanded, regaining the form of a fiery phoenix.

A sabre appeared in Zhuang Shen's hand as well with patterns like phoenix feathers along its blade.

He raised his sabre, chopping towards the black hole.

Like Lian Zulin, Zhuang Shen possessed more than just a single high-grade Sacred Artifact.

Weapons and martial practitioners teamed up to unleash even greater power.

The glow of high-grade Sacred Artifacts like the Bright Barbaric Daoist Robe and the Phoenix Cry Crown lit up on Yan Zhaoge's body too, facing off against Zhuang Shen and not giving him any respite whatsoever.

Seeing the Phoenix Cry Crown which had originally belonged to Zhang Shuren, Zhuang Shen's face turned colder.

The silhouetted phoenix of flame spread its wings before abruptly folding them in, chopping towards Yan Zhaoge.

Yan Zhaoge pointed out with a sword, intercepting Zhuang Shen's attack.

Then, he raised his palm with a great golden sun rising slowly into the air, all-encompassing radiance appearing as it was like the great sun in the overhead sky!

Illuminated by the magnificent sunlight, even the Exalts felt like it was unbearably hot as it was as if their bodies were burning.

This was precisely the monarch-ish existence amongst Sacred Artifacts, the Extreme Yang Seal!

Before the battles of Vast Spirit Mountain and Circumference Mountain, when Yan Zhaoge's personal strength had still not been widely known, many people had been wary of him as they believed that his strength would be completely different once he had ascended the Immortal Bridge.

The reason was this Extreme Yang Seal here!

Now that Yan Zhaoge had attained the Immortal Bridge stage, he could sufficiently exert the power of the Extreme Yang Seal.

Meanwhile, at its peak, this monarch of Sacred Artifacts only needed a little effort to easily slay an expert of the ninth level of the Martial Saint realm!

Even though the likes of Zhuang Shen and Lang Qing had already accomplished the Human Exalt stage, it would definitely suck

greatly if they were to suffer a blow from the Extreme Yang Seal!

# HSSB 1030: Taiyi Fist

---

Yan Zhaoge raised a hand, the Extreme Yang Seal flying upwards.

A hole was mightily opened in the sky up above as a gap was opened in the spatial boundaries of the World beyond Worlds.

In the distant horizon up above, the Solar Star was shaking slightly at this moment.

In the eyes of all, the actual sun up above seemed to have vanished.

Meanwhile, the Extreme Yang Seal before them transformed into the great sun, illuminating the world.

This sun was too close to the ground as it caused everyone to feel unbearably hot beyond compare with the seawater of the Royal Reed Sea being vaporised in great amounts.

Yan Zhaoge brought down his palm as that roiling, blazing sun smashed down towards the head of the Southern Exalt Zhuang Shen!

There were several ninth level Martial Saints who had come over by invitation to view the ceremony, such as the Southeastern Swordsmistress.

While they were also of the southeastern Yang Heaven Territory, looking at the magnificent sun that was descending from the sky at this moment, the Southeastern Swordsmistress and the others felt their hairs standing on end as a chill ran down their spines.

If any single one of them were facing this attack, they would only be able to turn and run away.

If they could not evade it in time, they might even be directly beaten to death on the spot!

Bolstered by the four Virtues and cultivating in the Phoenix True Form Scripture, the Southern Exalt Zhuang Shen who had always

been renowned for his defensive prowess did not rely on it to forcibly resist Yan Zhaoge's attack this time.

The clear cry of a phoenix suddenly resounded from his body.

Zhuang Shen flicked his sleeve, a row of colourful phoenix feathers that dazzled resplendently flying out from within.

Zhuang Shen's late disciple, Yuan Xiancheng, had possessed a Five Phoenix Fan that was also woven of phoenix feathers.

Still, whether in terms of quality or quantity, they were far from comparable to what Zhuang Shen was currently utilising.

These phoenix feathers had not been refined into a weapon. Still, controlled by Zhuang Shen now, they swiftly intermingled within the air.

At the same time, the seed of a tree appeared amongst the phoenix feathers.

The seed quickly sprouted before instantly transforming into a streak of red light.

The phoenix feathers surrounded the red light, using it to transform into a treasured Wutong tree that was completely golden.

This Wutong tree was not big as it was only thirty feet high.

Still, an extremely great power emanated from within.

The water ripples of holy virtue, the white qi of nether virtue, the thick earth of meritorious virtue and the blessed light of fortuitous virtue appeared simultaneously, all being abundant in quantity.

The Wutong tree hovered above Zhuang Shen's head, the leaves and branches swaying as they manifested an extinguishable, undying spirit.

As the Extreme Yang Seal mightily descended, it was actually obstructed by that Wutong tree.

“Southern Zhuang brought the heart of that ancestral tree of Wutong Slope?” The Northeastern Exalt Liu Zhenggu was shocked slightly as he saw this, “It is no wonder. Knowing that Broad Creed Mountain possesses the Extreme Yang Seal and Immortal Bridge Martial Saints, how would he not have made preparations in coming here this time?”

The golden Wutong tree hovered above Zhuang Shen’s head, temporarily resisting the Extreme Yang Seal.

The tyrannical great sun descended, the golden Wutong tree instantly sinking as the crown of the tree caved inwards and even its leaves and branches were bent beneath the pressure.

Yet, the trunk of the tree stood steadfast, ultimately managing to block the Extreme Yang Seal for the time being.

Zhuang Shen made use of this chance to execute the Heaven Parting Flowing Fire Slash once more, swiftly slashing towards Yan Zhaoge.

This time, his sabre was clearly faster and stronger than it had been earlier!

This sudden eruption of strength caused Zhuang Shen to swiftly draw near to Yan Zhaoge.

The Extreme Yang Seal was extremely powerful and possessed extraordinary might as it seemed able to inflict death with a single blow.

Zhuang Shen chose the risky action, firmly believing that this would be when Yan Zhaoge was at his most triumphant and off guard.

With the Extreme Yang Seal suddenly being obstructed, this would disrupt Yan Zhaoge’s plan and rhythm.

Launching a sudden attack at this moment, victory and defeat would be reversed as it was thus the best opportunity for him, Zhuang Shen, to make his move!

The slender thread of fire sliced past, slicing through space and the very world as it instantly arrived before Yan Zhaoge, being about to arrive at his neck.

“I was just waiting for you,” Yan Zhaoge had a heavy expression on his face as he punched outwards with a clenched fist.

His action was not swift and ferocious as it instead seemed rather slow and delayed.

Still, after this punch was unleashed, the scenes before Zhuang Shen’s eyes suddenly changed as it was like only Yan Zhaoge’s fist still remained between the heavens and the earth.

This fist seemingly filled the world all round and the space of the entire universe.

With himself as the centre, it seemed to Zhuang Shen like whichever direction he directed his attention on, it was as if such a fist was heading in his direction.

This fist seemingly occupied the past and the future, all of time.

Zhuang Shen seemed able to see through the river of time and out of the material realm at this moment. Yet, whether it was his memories of the past or the scenes of the future, at any instant within the river of time, it was still just such a fist which was punching towards him.

This fist seemed as if it originated from before everything had begun.

It was also like it was silently waiting for him at the end of everything.

Zhuang Shen’s hairs all stood on end as he immediately retracted his sabre!

Without any hesitation whatsoever, he abandoned his original offence as he devoted everything to defence in order to resist this fist of Yan Zhaoge’s that had been unleashed later yet arrived

earlier!

A multi-coloured glow filled the sky as he was bolstered by four Virtues.

Still, there was an infinite, endless, omnipresent fist-intent which enveloped him, frenziedly slamming down mightily on him.

The lofty Southern Exalt Zhuang Shen could only clench his teeth and tolerate this at this moment as he was beaten by Yan Zhaoge to the point of being like a turtle hiding in its shell!

“What fist art is that?”

The Western Exalt Lang Qing, the Eastern Exalt Daoist Oneheaven and the Northwestern Exalt Lian Zulin all sucked in a breath of cold air as they saw this.

The Southeastern Exalt Cao Jie and the Northeastern Exalt Liu Zhenggu who were allies of Yan Zhaoge were also stunned by this.

Cao Jie's gaze flickered as he seemed to have thought of something.

The expression of Lian Zulin who was battling with Yan Di suddenly changed as she looked first at the Grand Simplicity Splendour Cloud above Yan Di's head and then at Yan Zhaoge's fist attack.

Thoughts flashed through her mind at lightning speed as she blurted out, “Of the Grand Clear lineage's Five Cosmos Grand Manifestations, the Taiyi Fist of Grand Simplicity?!”

Lang Qing, Liu Zhenggu and the others came to a realisation as well, “It is not only just the Taiji Yin Yang Palm, as he is even proficient in the fist of Grand Simplicity? This martial art has been lost for many years, and yet this Yan Zhaoge is actually proficient in it?!”

The martial art that Yan Zhaoge had just executed was none other than the Taiyi Fist which he had comprehended from the



Grand Simplicity Splendour Cloud.

As he cultivated simultaneously in the Three Purities, he had even merged some principles of the Peerless Heavenly Scripture within the Taiyi Fist, forming a unique fist-intent of his own that had matchless power.

Even as Zhuang Shen had been scheming and strategising against Yan Zhaoge, Yan Zhaoge had been doing the same to him.

Yan Zhaoge was still the one to emerge victorious in the end.

Beneath that single fist, he suppressed the entire surrounding space and all time, past and present.

Zhuang Shen completely lost the initiative and was rendered hard pressed to advance and retreat freely as he liked as he was trapped by Yan Zhaoge's fist where he was.

He was unable to move, only being able to stubbornly put up a struggle.

Still, Yan Zhaoge waved a hand, a change suddenly occurring with that magnificent sun as it formed a streak of mild golden sunlight that manoeuvred past the golden Wutong tree above Zhuang Shen's head.

Yan Zhaoge was already able to freely control the Extreme Yang Seal now.

This monarch of Sacred Artifacts was not some dumb creature that possessed just strength alone.

It could change its size at will, possessing infinite variations.

Zhuang Shen was suppressed by Yan Zhaoge's Taiyi Fist at this moment as he was hard pressed to manipulate the golden Wutong tree in time.

Therefore, after that streak of sunlight had manoeuvred past the Wutong tree, it transformed into the magnificent sun once more before again smashing down towards Zhuang Shen!

All Zhuang Shen's attention was placed on facing Yan Zhaoge. As the Extreme Yang Seal descended now, how would he have any strength remaining to resist it?

He was smashed all bloodied by the Extreme Yang Seal as a result!

With Zhuang Shen's powerful cultivation base and shocking defensive power, he was able to barely stay alive from this direct blow. Still, he was rendered all dizzy as he toppled helplessly downwards.

As he tried to stabilise his footing and rally after being repelled, Yan Zhaoge was already charging unrelentingly towards him.

# HSSB 1031: The beaten phoenix

---

Battles between experts were generally tight affairs.

A single moment could decide one's eventual victory.

Often, the combatants would possess similar strength.

Still, just a single misstep could lead to complete defeat.

An example was how the Northwestern Exalt Lian Zulin, not having known that Yan Di was protected by the Grand Simplicity Splendour Cloud, had instead been wounded by him.

Another example was Zhuang Shen right now.

If he had not attempted something risky and had instead fought stably, he would not be in as precarious a position as he was now.

Zhuang Shen's head was badly bloodied, with him seeing stars as he was struck by the Extreme Yang Seal.

Being greatly experienced in battle, he knew that he definitely needed to stabilise himself at a time like this.

Otherwise, if Yan Zhaoge capitalised on his advantage and attacked with the Extreme Yang Seal, not giving him any respite whatsoever, he might have no chance of retaliating as he would just stupidly be slain by an Immortal Bridge Martial Saint without even having any real chance of demonstrating his prowess.

Still, Yan Zhaoge gave him no chance as he unleashed a Slaying Azure Dragon in hot pursuit.

Zhuang Shen could only barely withstand it as the brutal sword-qi unceasingly attempted to break through his true essence.

The water ripples of holy virtue shattered, the purple light of fortuitous virtue dimmed. The thick earth of meritorious virtue tried hard to remedy this yet felt as if it lacked the strength to do so.

The white qi of nether virtue began exerting its primary use, giving Zhuang Shen a chance at life.

It blocked Yan Zhaoge's Slaying Azure Dragon even as the terrifying Extreme Yang Seal slammed down from up above once more.

Zhuang Shen manipulated the golden Wutong tree, again barely managing to resist the Extreme Yang Seal.

Still, this Wutong tree was connected to his lifeblood as with him wounded now, the leaves and branches of the golden Wutong tree looked slightly shrivelled as their strength thus plummeted.

With that, the momentum of the Extreme Yang Seal was increasingly fierce as it suppressed that golden Wutong tree in descending non-stop, coming closer and closer to Zhuang Shen himself.

Lang Qing, Lian Zulin and Daoist Oneheaven all frowned as they saw this situation unfold.

The Western Exalt Lang Qing actually possessed the ability to assist Zhuang Shen.

Because he was the fastest, while he was unable to do anything to the Southeastern Exalt Cao Jie, if he wanted to help Zhuang Shen and the others, Cao Jie who could only wait passively to respond to his actions would not be able to obstruct him every single time.

He had assisted Lian Zulin a few times earlier during this battle.

While there was generally only the chance for a single move before he was tied down by Cao Jie once more, it was this that had disrupted Yan Di's attacks, giving the wounded Lian Zulin enough time to stabilise her footing in their battle.

The Western Exalt Lang Qing utilised his ability to shift space to the maximum, his figure seeming omnipresent and indiscernible as no one could easily guess where he might show up next.

The entire battlefield was taken care of by him.

Besides the Northwestern Exalt Lian Zulin, the Eastern Exalt Daoist Oneheaven had received Lang Qing's assistance too.

There was merely the Southern Exalt Zhuang Shen whom Lang Qing had not been able to assist.

It was not that he did not want to do so. Instead, Yan Zhaoge possessed unordinary attainments in the Yin Yang Heavenly Scripture.

Unlike Yan Di who had only analysed the Yin Yang Heavenly Scripture slightly so as to boost his sabre intent and raise his qi returning speed, Yan Zhaoge possessed far greater attainments in the Yin Yang Heavenly Scripture than him.

Just like how neither Cao Jie nor Liu Zhenggu would attempt to encircle and attack the Northwestern Exalt Lian Zulin, who would be totally safe with the Yin Yang Finger unless her opponents were much more powerful than her or could dispel the Yin Yang Finger, if Lang Qing were to attack Yan Zhaoge, unless they were a chain flurry of attacks, any single random move from a distance away would just cause Yan Zhaoge to redirect his move towards the Southern Exalt Zhuang Shen, making it worse for him.

"There is still a type of method to break this situation with..." Lang Qing's gaze flickered slightly.

Meanwhile, the gaze of the Southern Exalt Zhuang Shen who was being suppressed by Yan Zhaoge similarly flickered slightly.

Up above, the Extreme Yang Seal finally crushed the golden Wutong tree before descending again.

Zhuang Shen who was busy defending against Yan Zhaoge's attacks had no way of resisting it as he suffered yet another blow from the Extreme Yang Seal!

Half of Zhuang Shen's body was virtually charcoal-black now as he had only managed to evade that deadly tribulation with the help

of the white qi of nether virtue and the purple light of fortuitous virtue.

Now, however, Yan Zhaoge did not continue with a killing blow as he instead executed the Taiyi Fist once more, suppressing Zhuang Shen.

Next, he devoted some effort to controlling the Extreme Yang Seal and turning to attack the Eastern Exalt Daoist Oneheaven!

On seeing this, everyone was shocked.

A number of the spectators were completely bewildered as they did not understand why Yan Zhaoge was giving up his chance to attack the already injured Zhuang Shen and attacking Daoist Oneheaven instead.

Everyone understood the logic that injuring ten fingers was still inferior to breaking a single one off.

That was the Southern Exalt, a Human Exalt, at the end of the day. Even though he was injured, he still possessed remarkable strength.

While the spectators did not understand this, the gazes of the experts who were currently battling flickered simultaneously now.

“Good fella, composed enough,” The Northeastern Exalt Liu Zhenggu roared, “Leave him for last!”

Some amongst the spectators atop Broad Creed Mountain also now realised, “Yan Zhaoge is not giving the Southern Exalt a chance to undergo nirvanic rebirth!”

The single sentence broke everyone’s doubts as everyone was enlightened by it.

When martial practitioners of Phoenix Ritual Mountain’s Wutong Slope underwent nirvanic rebirth, their cultivation base and strength would be no different from prior to their rebirth as this was not simply a life-saving method.

Unless their strength had been diminished by a force like the Nine Bends Yellow River Formation prior to their nirvanic rebirth, their wounds would all be healed as they would appear at a peak state.

If Yan Zhaoge were to kill Zhuang Shen now, he would end up undergoing nirvanic rebirth and emerging with his wounds fully healed and overflowing with vitality.

At that time, having learnt from his lesson, Zhuang Shen would definitely not take risks again. Instead, he would fight stably, making no mistakes.

It was not just that. Along with the healing of his wounds, the currently deteriorated golden Wutong tree would be able to return to peak condition too.

In that case, it would not be so easy for Yan Zhaoge to be at as much of an advantage over Zhuang Shen as he was now.

Also, Zhuang Shen who was currently injured was indisputably much weaker in terms of combat power than when at his peak state.

Yan Zhaoge could definitely split some of his attention to assist the others and deal with Lang Qing, Daoist Oneheaven and Lian Zulin even as he tied him down.

He could deal with Zhuang Shen later when the three had either been defeated or had slunk away in retreat.

“Phoenixes cannot end themselves unless their vitalities have reached an end and they plunge into the fire in nirvanic rebirth,” Yan Zhaoge looked calmly at Zhuang Shen, “While you have attained great power in cultivating in the Phoenix True Form Scripture, you are similarly restricted by it.”

Zhuang Shen gazed coldly at Yan Zhaoge, not saying a word.

The Western Exalt Lang Qing frowned, “How incomparably glorious is defeating an Exalt at the Immortal Bridge stage? Yet,

this Yan Zhaoge is actually able to stay composed, not being full of himself and thus getting careless. With that, this method of breaking the situation is unusable.”

“No wonder, no wonder...it is no wonder that he has arrived at where he is today. This is not simply something that can be nurtured from talent in the martial dao as well as powerful martial arts and treasures alone.”

Lang Qing sighed as he instantly vanished from the spot, reappearing virtually immediately at a different location.

A transparent, formless spatial blade was condensed in his hand as he attempted to help Daoist Oneheaven block the Extreme Yang Seal.

Yet, the Southeastern Exalt Cao Jie successfully intercepted Lang Qing despite moving later as he blocked his spatial blade with his sword.



# HSSB 1032: The Heaven Emperor descends

---

Cao Jie blocked Lang Qing with a single sword as Yan Zhaoge's Extreme Yang Seal shot unimpeded towards Daoist Oneheaven.

Currently in the midst of clashing with the Northeastern Exalt Liu Zhenggu, Daoist Oneheaven could only evade as the Extreme Yang Seal struck over at this moment.

Liu Zhenggu would not lower himself and join forces to attack his opponent here as he struck towards Daoist Oneheaven with the back of his lance, forcing him into retreat.

Daoist Oneheaven's gaze was deep and heavy as he looked at Yan Zhaoge and Yan Di.

Zhuang Shen was badly injured and suppressed by Yan Zhaoge, who was using the Extreme Yang Seal to attack other opponents while tying him down.

The Northwestern Exalt Lian Zulin was proficient in the Yin Yang Heavenly Scripture as she did not fear attacks from multiple enemies.

The Western Exalt Lang Qing was proficient in the Spatial Heavenly Scripture, his movements unpredictable.

Hence, it was the Eastern Exalt, Daoist Oneheaven, who unluckily had to bear the brunt of this.

Lang Qing tried to assist Daoist Oneheaven while also paying attention to Yan Zhaoge himself.

He attempted to use his own power to forcibly send Zhuang Shen into nirvanic rebirth, thus extricating himself of Yan Zhaoge's suppression as he regained his combat power.

Still, Yan Zhaoge had long since been guarding against this very thing.

It should really be said that he was specifically waiting for Lang

Qing.

He attacked another to draw Lang Qing's reinforcement while borrowing Zhuang Shen to set a trap for him, next seeking a chance to deal him a heavy blow.

Lang Qing quickly noticed this strategy as he secretly felt surprised at Yan Zhaoge's craftiness. As for Zhuang Shen who had become 'bait', he inevitably felt even more stifled and infuriated.

Elsewhere, Liu Zhenggu roared, "Oneheaven, you want to fight to the death?"

Amidst his roar, his high-grade Sacred Artifact, the Purple Gold Thunder Lance, turned once more, aiming towards Daoist Oneheaven as it penetrated through space!

Daoist Oneheaven had both hands upraised at this moment to block the Extreme Yang Seal.

With Liu Zhenggu's attack being too swift, he had not the time to evade as the lance was already before him in an instant.

"Go!" Daoist Oneheaven roared as a massive purple orb appeared in mid-air.

Infinite, endless thunderbolts suffused the area at this moment.

Seeing that purple orb of thunder, Yan Zhaoge raised his brows, "How many fragments has this old bull gathered? From the looks of it, over half of the Eye of the Thunder Emperor is all here together."

Light flickered within that purple orb of thunder.

It was as if a divinity had blinked.

As it blinked, dense thunderbolts erupted at this one instant, shocking the heavens and shaking the earth!

At this moment, the radiance of the great golden sun was illuminated all purplish-green.

Daoist Oneheaven's Eye of the Thunder Emperor fragment erupted with shocking power, violent thunderbolts shooting into the heavens as even the Extreme Yang Seal was jolted away at this instant.

Then, Daoist Oneheaven hurriedly changed his stance as he barely managed to avoid Liu Zhenggu's lance by the narrowest of margins.

Lang Qing attacked in Liu Zhenggu's direction, attempting to extricate Daoist Oneheaven from his predicament.

Still, Cao Jie intercepted Lang Qing once more before his attack could land.

Each lance of Liu Zhenggu's was faster than the previous as he attacked Daoist Oneheaven non-stop.

After erupting with power, Daoist Oneheaven's Eye of the Thunder Emperor fragment instantly deteriorated in its aura as its lustre dimmed as well.

The uniqueness of the Eye of the Thunder Emperor resulted in it requiring a very long time to recover after an eruption.

After all, this was only a fragment of the Eye of the Thunder Emperor.

The dim orb of thunder seemed like it was covered in a layer of soot as it was retracted into Daoist Oneheaven's sleeve.

Meanwhile, the Extreme Yang Seal that had been jolted away up above was currently surrounded by a dense area of purple thunder.

Snakes of thunder and lightning leapt unceasingly as they traversed the area, yet were ceaselessly shattered too.

The light of thunder vanished as the sunlight grew increasingly brighter. The Extreme Yang Seal quickly regained its vitality before again descending towards Daoist Oneheaven from up above!

Now, however, the sky suddenly shook in its entirety.

Yan Zhaoge, Yan Di, Cao Jie and Liu Zhenggu simultaneously frowned.

The eyes of Zhuang Shen, Lang Qing, Daoist Oneheaven and Lian Zulin all lit up.

The Southeastern Swordsmistress and the others atop Broad Creed Mountain had not noticed it at first, but at some point in time, everyone suddenly sensed immense pressure.

That pressure caused them to feel virtually suffocated to the point of collapse as the circulation of true essence of their entire bodies became choppy too.

The heavens and earth that had originally been damaged and chaotic beyond compare a moment ago suddenly calmed down at this moment.

The glow above the sky suddenly dimmed.

The Extreme Yang Seal still resembled an actual sun. Yet, the actual sky and all its stars up above had lost their brightness.

It was not that darkness had engulfed daylight. Gazing upwards, Yan Zhaoge and the others saw that the sky overhead had shockingly turned into the great earth at this moment!

Below was still the ocean, beneath which was a continent. Beyond that, however, the original sky too had turned into earth now.

It was often said ‘switching the heavens and changing the earth’ or ‘flipping the heavens and overturning the earth’.

At this moment, however, the heavens seemed to be gone as only the earth still remained.

As Yan Zhaoge and the others hovered in mid-air, whether it was up above or down below, there was only the great earth which existed as the sky was gone.

It was like everyone was located in an underground world, being

surrounded by soil.

The pressure that everyone was currently feeling originated precisely from the great earth up above.

The great earth that could bear all things suppressed everything below it at this moment, causing them all to bear immeasurable weight.

The numerous peaks of Broad Creed Mountain were all rumbling slightly as they actually vaguely showed signs of sinking downwards, seemingly being pressured straight into the sea by immense pressure.

Yan Zhaoge and the others could similarly sense that immense pressure which caused their movements to turn slow and sluggish.

In contrast, Zhuang Shen, Lang Qing and the other two were not affected by this at all.

In virtually just an instant, they launched their counterattack!

Yan Zhaoge and the others who had previously been at the upper hand somewhat due to having suppressed Zhuang Shen instantly fell to a disadvantage now.

The battle situation reversed in an instant.

The advantageous situation of Lang Qing and the others was abruptly widening at an increasing rate!

All of this originated from someone who had still yet to even make a move himself.

“Heaven Emperor...” Yan Zhaoge raised his head and gazed over as he saw a tree suddenly appearing amidst space up ahead without any forewarning whatsoever.

It was a tree that was planted in the sky up above, which, from his perspective, looked upside down.

It was dense with greenery, its leaves and branches flickering with a green light as it enveloped the great earth of both

directions.

It seemed as though it had always been there ever since the beginning.

While no one had appeared, seeing the great earth which had replaced the sky, seeing this ancient tree, everyone knew what this entailed.

One of the World beyond Worlds' Five Emperors, the Primordial Heaven Emperor!

Everyone's hearts abruptly sank.

The Heaven Emperor was present, but the Brocade Emperor had still yet to appear.

With the Brocade Emperor absent, who might be able to block the Heaven Emperor?

The Heaven Emperor did not even need to make a move as just standing there alone, his aura had already suppressed things to the point of the battle situation being overturned, the flow of victory and defeat having been reversed!

More importantly, having an Emperor who was of the Immortal realm as an opponent only brought mortals despair!

Leakless True Immortals, what did Leakless mean?

Impenetrable by all arts of the human realm!

This was not a saying that had come about after the Great Calamity. Instead, it was the collective awareness of all experts in this world ever since ancient times till now, following countless years.

Besides the Immortal Exterminating Formation that represented the eternal end and was ferocious and brutal to the extreme, there were only other Immortals who were able to combat experts of the Immortal realm with their Immortal methods.

"Speaking of Immortal methods..." Everyone's gazes collectively

gathered on Yan Zhaoge now.

It was rumoured that he had once obtained a relic of the Dim Radiant Emperor's.

Was or was not that relic an already completed Immortal Artifact?

# HSSB 1033: The focal point of the battlefield

---

If the Dim Radiant Emperor's relic was an already complete Immortal Artifact and Yan Zhaoge was able to wield it, even though winning would still be very tough then, they might still have a chance.

It would not spell complete despair, at the very least.

Actually, most people still did not think well of the chances that this was really true.

After their initial excitement upon hearing of the news back then, they had gradually calmed down over the years thereafter.

The news spread by the Radiant Light Sect at the start was very possibly erroneous.

Perhaps Yan Zhaoge had indeed obtained a relic of the Dim Radiant Emperor, but that might not be an Immortal Artifact.

At least, the possibility that it was a complete Immortal Artifact was not high.

On one hand, the Dim Radiant Emperor had never forged and used an Immortal Artifact when alive.

On the other, it was also because no trace of that Immortal Artifact had ever been seen in all these years when Yan Zhaoge and Broad Creed Mountain had been around.

If it was said that Broad Creed Mountain's martial practitioners had previously had insufficient cultivation bases despite their great strength, in the battle today thus far, if they truly did have an Immortal Artifact and Yan Zhaoge could wield it, the battle could have ended long before this before the Heaven Emperor had even shown up.

Thinking of this, those atop Broad Creed Mountain all had heavy hearts as they vaguely felt despair.



Despite having become the focal point of the entire battlefield, Yan Zhaoge's expression was as per usual.

He released his suppression towards the Southern Exalt Zhuang Shen and made an upward motion with his hand.

The Myriad Dragon Palace appeared, its large doors opening as streams of dim, gloomy qi emerged from within.

A massive black metal wheel silently rotated amidst the boundless space within the great hall.

As the black metal wheel flew out of the Myriad Dragon Palace, everyone's gazes immediately focused on it.

The Dim Radiant Wheel!

This supreme treasure that originated from the late Dim Radiant Emperor, Yin Tianxia, finally reappeared in this world.

As the Dim Radiant Wheel rose slowly, the world around it which had already been dim originally due to the great earth having replaced the sky turned completely pitch black, its radiance being extinguished.

Yet, amidst that boundless primordial darkness, a pure, brilliant speck of light suddenly lit up.

The Dim Radiant Wheel existed between light and darkness at this moment.

The black metal wheel slowly rotated, seemingly having been divided in two by a formless boundary.

One side was illuminated by brilliant light and shone gloriously while the other was merged with the dim darkness, being difficult to distinguish.

Still, as people gazed over, it was also like the entirety of the Dim Radiant Wheel was covered by a layer of dim radiance which was neither bright nor dazzling as it was simply blurry.

The opposing brightness and darkness were clearly distinct from

each other.

It was chaotic and blurry, all indistinct within.

These two seemingly contrasting phenomena were simultaneously manifested on the Dim Radiant Wheel, causing people to doubt themselves and wonder if they had hallucinated one of them.

Yet, they had achieved perfect unity and coexistence at this moment, manifesting a profound concept.

Of the twelve slots of the black metal wheel, nine of them currently flickered with an inexplicable radiance.

The rotating Dim Radiant Wheel suddenly fell still before radiance was emitted from one of them, falling onto Broad Creed Mountain down below.

A force of reversal was exerted which prevented Broad Creed Mountain from sinking into the sea.

At the same time, Yan Zhaoge struck downwards with a Cyclic Heavenly Seal.

Beneath these two forces, the momentum of uprooting a mountain was created as the numerous mountains of Broad Creed Mountain no longer descended, instead beginning to slowly rise.

Countless people thought to themselves as they gazed at the Dim Radiant Wheel, "That is the relic left behind by the Dim Radiant Emperor..."

Even as their minds were shaken, seeing how only nine of the twelve slots of the Dim Radiant Wheel were aglow with radiance, many people sighed to themselves, "Ultimately, this is still not a complete Immortal Artifact!"

As its name suggested, Immortal Artifacts were weapons forged by experts who had already pushed open the door to Immortality.

If the Dim Radiant Emperor had not completely refined it, it

would naturally have been impossible for Yan Zhaoge, a Martial Saint, to bring it to completion after having obtained it.

Yet, the gap between mortals and Immortals was like a virtually insurmountable heavenly gulf.

Without an Immortal Artifact, how could he stand against an Emperor who had already pushed open the door to Immortality many years ago?

“Dim Radiant Twelve Arts, second art, Reflection.”

A pleasant-sounding voice resounded amidst space, resembling the tolling of a bell and the sonorous voice of the great dao.

“It has been many years since I last saw such orthodox Dim Radiant Twelve Arts,” The massive tree that towered upside-down from the great earth up above vanished as a Daoist appeared in mid-air.

He wore a yellow robe as there was a golden crown on his head and a cloak of crane feathers about his body. He had a short beard and authoritative features as he still appeared ephemeral and out of this world despite not being as handsome as the Brocade Emperor Fu Yunchi.

This was none other than the Heaven Emperor of the World beyond Worlds’ Five Emperors!

While this was his first time seeing him in person, Yan Zhaoge had already long familiarised himself with the appearances of the major bigwigs of the World beyond Worlds.

Everyone else recognised this Emperor too.

As the Heaven Emperor appeared, the terrifying pressure that enveloped the entire area instead strangely disappeared.

Whether it was Yan Zhaoge, Cao Jie and the others in mid-air or those atop Broad Creed Mountain down below, their bodies all relaxed simultaneously.

Still, everyone grew even more nervous.

As the Heaven Emperor showed himself, Lang Qing, Zhuang Shen, Daoist Oneheaven and Lian Zulin ceased to battle all at once.

They paid their greetings to the Heaven Emperor in unison, “Heaven Emperor.”

The Heaven Emperor nodded, saying, “This humble Daoist feels the urge to test his skills. Let me have a go.”

Lang Qing replied, “Of course.”

Zhuang Shen sat in the meditative position amidst space, silently circulating his breathing as he recuperated from the wounds that had been inflicted on him by Yan Zhaoge and the Extreme Yang Seal earlier.

Still, his gaze was still tightly fixated on Yan Zhaoge and the Dim Radiant Wheel. Though there was pain and hatred in his gaze, there was a rather complex look within it as well.

While the Dim Radiant Wheel was indeed still not an actual Immortal Artifact, it still possessed shocking might.

Yan Zhaoge’s strength was far from comparable to that of typical Immortal Bridge Martial Saints.

With him possessing the Extreme Yang Seal and Dim Radiant Wheel too, however unwilling to admit defeat Zhuang Shen was, he still had to acknowledge that he alone would probably be unable to take revenge.

More importantly, with the strength and potential that Yan Zhaoge had displayed, there would be even less of a chance for Zhuang Shen to personally exact vengeance the more time that passed!

It was just that since the Dim Radiant Wheel was still incomplete, there was really no way of reversing the battle situation today.

“The Brocade Emperor is destined to be unable to rush here in

time,” Zhuang Shen looked coldly at Yan Zhaoge and the others.

The Heaven Emperor strode atop space, walking over to Yan Zhaoge and the others neither hurriedly nor slowly.

The Southeastern Exalt Cao Jie indifferently remained where he was.

The Northeastern Exalt Liu Zhenggu calmly greeted the Heaven Emperor respectfully, “This old man Liu Zhenggu greets the Heaven Emperor.”

“You are polite, Fellow Daoist Liu,” The Heaven Emperor nodded slightly before saying, “You can leave now, Fellow Daoist, or you can spectate too. This humble Daoist does not mind either one.”

Liu Zhenggu’s expression did not change as he said, “This Liu has come to provide his assistance this time, and this will not change whoever the opponent is. I answer only to my conscience, heedless of what may come. Please understand if I appear to overestimate myself, Heaven Emperor.”

“It is fine,” The Heaven Emperor shook his head, “Since that is so, I will speak with Fellow Daoist Liu later on.”

With that, he raised a hand, the wide sleeve of his Daoist robe opening up.

Time and space circulated and shifted as Liu Zhenggu suddenly shrank and was pulled straight into that sleeve of the Heaven Emperor’s!

A Human Exalt soundlessly vanished without a trace just like that, as if he had never been at Broad Creed Mountain in the first place.

# HSSB 1034: *The river flows again*

---

The Heaven Emperor had a mild expression on his face as with his left hand behind his back, he flicked his right sleeve.

The lofty Northeastern Exalt Liu Zhenggu was instantly captured by his Heaven Earth Within Sleeve.

An Exalt was instantly suppressed just like that!

The Heaven Emperor's action appeared natural and without any major upheaval in the least as even ordinary mortals who did not cultivate in martial arts were able to clearly see his movements.

Still, no one was able to react to it in time at all.

This seeming contradiction intermingled in its profound concept.

Those of Broad Creed Mountain were all overcome by a feeling of helplessness and despair.

What was the gap between mortals and Immortals?

This was the strength of an Emperor, a True Immortal.

While True Immortals might be stably on undefeated ground as they descended into the mortal realm, they might not be completely invincible.

There were actually still exceptions to this rule.

There were indeed unparalleled geniuses in this world such as Long Xueji and Chen Qianhua who were able to combat Emperors as Human Exalts.

With how Yan Zhaoge and Yan Di had shone today, many believed that they too would grow to be such powerful existences in the future.

Still, people like these were extremely rare at the end of the day!

Besides these unique cases, the gap between mortals and

Immortals was generally insurmountable.

When Immortals descended into the mortal realm, they were invincible!

Whether against one or versus many, they were simply invincible regardless.

Quantity lost all meaning as a True Immortal could crush numerous Human Exalts all simultaneously.

The Heaven Emperor's right sleeve did not cease in its movements in the slightest after trapping the Northeastern Exalt Liu Zhenggu as it swept across the air.

The magnificent sun dimmed as the world seemed to have gone from daylight into dark night at this moment.

The radiance of the Extreme Yang Seal no longer shone in mid-air as it was sent directly flying by the Heaven Emperor's sleeve.

He flicked his sleeve once more towards the Dim Radiant Wheel which instantly flew away too, with the radiance within its nine slots dimming.

Seeing this, the hearts of those atop Broad Creed Mountain all sunk to the very bottom.

The Heaven Emperor strode over neither swiftly nor slowly, looking at Cao Jie.

"The next time Kunlun Mountain establishes the Ten Directions Heart's Will Formation will be around a hundred years later."

"Over the years, the vitality of Daoism has gradually been recovering with many outstanding youngsters appearing as we are gradually coming to see this bear fruit," The Heaven Emperor said mildly, "This humble Daoist's disciple, Qing Shuzi, was one of them. Sadly, though, he is no more."

"Ignoring Qing Shuzi, there are still three others who can potentially become Exalts in the near future. Bar any major

incidences, it should be very difficult to find a deficiency in Exalts again.”

The Heaven Emperor slowly raised his hand, pointing out towards Cao Jie, “At least, if we were to lose you alone, that should not be much of a problem.”

Now, Yan Zhaoge stepped out before him, walking over to face the Heaven Emperor.

The Heaven Emperor said mildly, “Whoever this humble Daoist kills first makes no difference to me. Still, Cao Jie, are you going to hide behind a member of the junior generation? That is not like you.”

The Southeastern Exalt Cao Jie did not speak as he just looked over at Yan Zhaoge.

When the Heaven Emperor had appeared earlier, Yan Zhaoge had sent a message to him and Liu Zhenggu via sound transmission.

“I have a method that I have fifty percent certainty of. Still, it can only be used when the Heaven Emperor attacks me. When facing the Heaven Emperor, there is no need to forcibly clash with him.”

While Cao Jie did not know what Yan Zhaoge was planning, he could only place his trust in him now.

While Liu Zhenggu was currently suppressed, there was no real threat to his life.

Seeing that Cao Jie did not answer, the Heaven Emperor was unconcerned as his gaze shifted to Yan Zhaoge before him.

“This is the location of my sect’s headquarters. With the Southeastern Exalt having graced us with his presence, he is a guest. As a host, there is no reason to let a guest stand at the forefront and block a calamity for our sect,” Yan Zhaoge faced the Heaven Emperor directly.

While the Daoist before him looked casual and rather ordinary,



not bringing any pressure to anyone, Yan Zhaoge could vaguely sense that his soul seemed to be quaking slightly.

He inhaled deeply, simultaneously pushing out his hands as the Extreme Yang Seal and Dim Radiant Wheel both flew back to him.

He simultaneously circulated the Extreme Yang Scripture and Dim Radiant Twelve Arts, nourishing the treasures which he held.

The Extreme Yang Seal and the Dim Radiant Wheel shook slightly, gradually regaining their glow and vitality. However, they still appeared sorely inadequate before an Emperor.

Seeing this, the Western Exalt Lang Qing shook his head, “The Great Calamity led to the deterioration of Daoism. Now, we have finally regained some vitality as the time of our flourishing has already come.”

“This might be the best era for geniuses with potential.”

“An outstanding youngster like you would normally be taken care of by the Three Sovereigns and Five Emperors for the sake of Daoism’s future as they might even aid in your growth.”

“Even if you were rather arrogant or had committed some mistakes, they would still tolerate this.”

Lang Qing’s gaze fell on the Dim Radiant Wheel as his mood was rather complicated, “Sadly, you obtained the relic of Yin Tianxia. Fortune exists in peril and peril exists in fortune. You thought that obtaining the embryonic Immortal Artifact was a blessing as you benefited extremely greatly. But in truth, you do not know that you lost much more as a result.”

“While the other Majesties have not personally come to settle this with you, you have offended the Heaven Emperor. There is no one who can save you, and also no one who will.”

He glanced at the Grand Simplicity Splendour Cloud above Yan Di’s head, “I would not find it strange if the Brocade Emperor agreed to help Cao Jie. Still, I have never understood why he was

willing to help you. I know now that this was because of the Taiyi Fist. Sadly, he could not rush here in time today.”

The Heaven Emperor had a relaxed expression on his face that was not severe at all as he looked silently at Yan Zhaoge.

He appraised Yan Zhaoge, fully taking in this youth who had first wrecked his plans before killing his disciple.

“An outstanding youngster indeed,” The Heaven Emperor said, pointing outwards no longer towards Cao Jie but towards Yan Zhaoge.

Yan Zhaoge instantly felt as if an enormous mountain was weighing down upon him as every part of him from his fleshly body to his soul seemed about to be crushed to smithereens by it now.

That heaviness seemed indescribable even by bearing the weight of an entire world.

It felt like this could not be resisted as he lacked the strength even to evade.

There was virtually no part of his entire body which could move at all.

Yan Zhaoge narrowed his eyes, an indiscernible glow flickering within.

Now, however, the Heaven Emperor knit his brows slightly as his finger that was tapping out in mid-air halted momentarily.

Everyone present was taken aback as they felt greatly puzzled.

Still, the expressions of Yan Zhaoge, Yan Di, Cao Jie, Lang Qing and the others soon changed slightly.

They could vaguely sense an immense change occurring with the spiritual qi flow of the heavens and the earth.

The source of the change was not the southeastern Yang Heaven Territory's Royal Reed Sea where they were currently at as it

instead originated from the west.

Heading further west from the border at the western part of the southeastern Yang Heaven Territory where the Royal Reed Sea was located, one would arrive in the southern Blazing Heaven Territory, at Circumference Mountain.

There, the spiritual qi of water suddenly erupted, instantly exploding outwards as it was virtually comparable to the Royal Reed Sea that was filled with water everywhere.

“That is...the Dynasty River?!” Zhuang Shen who was seated in the meditative position amidst space abruptly shot to his feet, “The disrupted Dynasty River has recovered?”

The sudden change surpassed even Yan Zhaoge’s predictions.

The Dynasty River flowed again at Circumference Mountain. This would not be of any use for things in the Royal Reed Sea at all.

With the Heaven Emperor having descended and the Brocade Emperor yet to arrive, Yan Zhaoge and the others would not be able to retreat to Circumference Mountain now even if they so wished to.

Still, why had the Dynasty River recovered?

What was the underlying cause, and what did this entail?

# HSSB 1035: The most impossible figure appears

---

The others could sense the changes in spiritual qi within the Royal Reed Sea but not disturbances as far away as at Circumference Mountain.

It was just that everyone could sense that the atmosphere on the battlefield had begun to change now.

While the Heaven Emperor was also somewhat taken aback by this, he was actually not all that concerned about the Dynasty River having recovered.

It was something else which had truly caused him to frown.

His gaze was on his finger that was pointing towards Yan Zhaoge.

That index finger was currently shockingly covered in a layer of frost!

Yan Zhaoge, Cao Jie, Zhuang Shen and the others quickly noticed this too.

Zhuang Shen, Lang Qing and the others who had originally thought that victory was firmly in their grasp instantly felt that things were not good.

Such a cultivation base, such strength, these characteristics. These Human Exalts immediately thought of a person.

Still, why would that person have appeared here, attempting to obstruct the Heaven Emperor?

Surprise appeared within the gaze of the Southeastern Exalt Cao Jie as well as he now turned to look at Yan Zhaoge and the others.

Yan Zhaoge and Yan Di appeared rather puzzled and at a loss as they warily observed the occurrence which had just come all of a sudden.

The Heaven Emperor turned and look elsewhere amidst space.

A massive figure slowly surfaced there.

Everyone successively gazed in that direction and saw a black snake that was gigantic to the extreme breaking through the great earth up above as it appeared before them.

The qi of water wreathed the black snake as it resembled a long black river, possessing an even stronger aura than a true dragon.

As the black snake exhaled, it was an icy cold qi that penetrated into one's bones that emerged.

Atop its head was a massive jade chariot, beside which stood boys and girls who held either jade ornaments of good fortune or treasured orbs.

While there were golden curtains hanging from the sides of the jade chariot, obscuring the view of the person within from the outside world, those who saw this black snake that carried a jade chariot all understood who it was who had come.

This was the sole female of the World beyond Worlds' Three Sovereigns and Five Emperors.

She was also effectively the number one female expert of the current World beyond Worlds.

The Profound Cold Emperor, also known as the Cold Emperor!

Her name was Jie Mingkong, and people in the World beyond Worlds were used to calling her the Female Emperor.

Like the Heaven Emperor, the Brocade Emperor and the others, she was one of the Five Emperors.

The Female Emperor was the most solitary existence amongst the Five Emperors as she had never ever partaken in the affairs of others which did not concern her.

The Brocade Emperor's great battle with the Immortal Artifact Mars Halberd that year had been a rare battle between Emperors, a

momentous occasion indeed.

Yet, the Female Emperor who had been at Kunlun Mountain in the World beyond Worlds had still been totally unconcerned about this. Let alone not having appeared, she had never even sent any communication regarding the matter.

Now, while the Heaven Emperor and the Brocade Emperor had returned to the World beyond Worlds, most of the other experts amongst the Three Sovereigns and Five Emperors were still actually in extradimensional space.

The Female Emperor had been in the World beyond Worlds these past years, though.

Still, whether it was the Heaven Emperor and Zhuang Shen's lot or Yan Zhaoge and Cao Jie's lot, even as they had wondered if the unpredictable Upper Exalt might show up, the sole person they had not even taken into consideration was this Emperor.

Yet, she who seldom left Kunlun Mountain had come to the southeastern Yang Heaven Territory's Royal Reed Sea, to Broad Creed Mountain on this very day.

Also, after having arrived, she had actually prevented the Heaven Emperor from making a move.

Let alone how Lang Qing, Zhuang Shen and the others were exchanging looks, feeling all quizzical and uncertain, even the Southeastern Exalt Cao Jie was greatly puzzled by this.

He immediately turned to look at Yan Zhaoge and Yan Di, yet heard Yan Zhaoge asking via sound transmission now, "Did you invite this Emperor over as a helper?"

Glancing deeply at Yan Zhaoge, Cao Jie saw that his expression was solemn and in no way feigned.

He slowly shook his head, "It wasn't me."

Yan Zhaoge's pupils dilated slightly as he returned his gaze to the

Heaven Emperor in mid-air and that jade chariot atop the head of the massive black snake, falling into deep thought.

Similarly gazing at that jade chariot, the Heaven Emperor asked, “Why is Fellow Daoist Jie blocking this humble Daoist?”

As he asked this, ripples seemed to emanate between the heavens and the earth.

The massive black snake coiled as the scales of its entire body pulsed unceasingly.

A formless wind guested on the golden curtains hanging on the jade chariot which drifted to the sides.

Everyone gazed over and saw that it was clearly a sculpture of ice sitting within the jade chariot.

It was just that the figure of a person existed within the ice sculpture.

It was an incredibly beautiful woman garbed in white who wore an ornamental ring of black jade on the index finger of her right hand.

The woman was frozen and sealed entirely in the ice, her eyes closed as if in a deep slumber.

Cao Jie, Zhuang Shen and the others did not find this to be strange.

“The Female Emperor usually seals herself away in ice to cultivate in her profound arts. This is especially so for her eyes. It is said that she has not opened them in the past hundred years and more,” Cao Jie explained to Yan Zhaoge and Yan Di.

Yan Zhaoge and Yan Di nodded silently as they looked at that ice sculpture, not saying a word.

The boy and girl attendants standing by the sides of the jade chariot atop the head of the black snake paid their respects to the Heaven Emperor, Cao Jie, Zhuang Shen and the others in unison.

After that, one of them who stood at the front said, “Heaven Emperor, rather than by her own volition, our Lady has come more at someone else’s behest this time...”

“That’s enough,” The Heaven Emperor suddenly said, cutting him off, “This humble Daoist can understand that Fellow Daoist Jie cherishes talent.”

“Even this humble Daoist rather admires this youth Yan Zhaoge too. If this were usually, mending our relationship would make for an admirable tale.”

The Heaven Emperor shook his finger, shattering the layer of frost on it, “Still, this Yan Zhaoge first opposed this humble Daoist and then even killed my disciple, Qing Shuzi. If I could lightly let this go even then, this humble Daoist would basically have given up on all my authority in the World beyond Worlds thereafter.”

He was not being as casual and leisurely as he had been when dealing with Cao Jie, Liu Zhenggu and the others earlier.

He extended both hands, one up, one down, before bringing them in together at the middle.

The great earth up above instantly descended.

The earth sandwiched the Royal Reed Sea from above and below, seeking to crush everything into smithereens.

A jade-like lustre flickered on the surface of the ice scripture on the jade chariot atop the black snake’s head.

Cold frost suddenly surged atop the surface of the great earth up above which was dark and sealed.

Endless glaciers swiftly expanded, filling up the area.

Instantly, the area above Yan Zhaoge and the others where the sky had been replaced by the great earth was thus frozen into a glacier instead.

It was filled with cold, transparent ice all around as specks of



starlight vaguely flickered amidst the darkness.

Shattering noises resounded from the glacier from time to time as cracks appeared on its exterior.

Still, they were quickly frozen solid again by the sturdier ice.

The Heaven Emperor's figure flickered, instantly vanishing from the spot before appearing virtually immediately on the head of the black snake, in front of the jade chariot!

Then, he raised his sleeve, unfurling it towards that ice sculpture in the jade chariot!

In order to avoid any further unexpected things happening, the Heaven Emperor used his ultimate move at the start.

He first swept his spear amidst space as he instantly appeared before the jade chariot atop the head of the black snake. Next, with his left sleeve, he executed the powerful Heaven Earth Within Sleeve!

This was a powerful technique which was still able to secure victory in a single blow even against mighty experts of the same level!

His sleeve opened, shifting all within the world as space and time turned illusory.

That black snake which looked even more gigantic than an endless range of mountain peaks instantly shrank, next seeming like an earthworm as it appeared set to be sucked into the Heaven Emperor's sleeve.

The jade chariot atop the black snake's head was small as a speck of dust as it was just completely invisible to the naked eye.

Still, as the black snake was about to be sucked into the Heaven Emperor's sleeve, a brilliant light suddenly surged atop its head.

A crisp breaking sound resounded from the ice sculpture in the jade chariot before it shattered to reveal the woman in white

within.

# HSSB 1036: Yan Zhaoge's counterattack

---

The ice shattered as the Female Emperor Jie Mingkong's real body finally appeared before everyone.

Her eyes were still closed as she simply extended a palm, wielding it like a sabre as she chopped out amidst space.

Along with this strike, the chilly air was retracted as the surrounding space was icy cold no longer.

Still, endless sharpness broke through the world up ahead with the momentum of splitting apart the heavens and earth!

Bright light surged, hacking through the gloomy space as a brand new world seemed about to be created, the heavens and earth split apart.

While the woman's palm had been clear like jade a moment ago, it was dim and blurry now.

Subtle streams of qi surged from the various acupoints of her palm, intermingling as they vaguely condensed to form an illusory silhouette.

Enveloped by the illusory silhouette, the slender palm seemingly transformed into an object which resembled a banner whilst also an axe!

From the Female Emperor's attack shockingly emanated the concept contained within the Heaven Opening Scripture of the Primordial Heavenly Scriptures of the Jade Clear lineage.

She wielded her palm as a sabre, literally seeking to break through chaos, redefining earth, water, wind and fire, opening up the heavens and earth of creation once more!

Yan Zhaoge had once witnessed an attack by Mars Halberd before. After the blurry darkness had been split by the brilliant light, boundless flames had appeared which had been between

earlier heaven and later heaven, possessing infinite vitality as well as might.

Meanwhile, as the Female Emperor's sabre split the dim darkness now, infinite flowing water appeared.

This water also existed between earlier heaven and later heaven, seemingly containing endless vitality and warmth yet also secretly containing endless cold and deathly peril.

Where the flowing water passed, the reversing extremities and the distorted space by the Heaven Emperor's sleeve were stained by the light of water.

The figure of the black snake immediately regained its original size as it lifted the jade chariot, flying out from the area enveloped by the Heaven Emperor's sleeve.

Seeing this, the Heaven Emperor was unconcerned as his figure swiftly shifted through space.

With the legacy of Ten Thousand Longevity Mountain's Five Minor Locale's Primordial Suppressing Immortal and the Aeon Light Heavenly Scripture of the Primordial Heavenly Scriptures of the Jade Clear lineage which he cultivated in, he had extremely high attainments in the principles of space and time.

With just a thought on his part, he had already surpassed the Female Emperor's obstruction and arrived before Yan Zhaoge!

The Female Emperor who was garbed in wide-sleeved white clothes was like an Immortal descended into the mortal world as with her eyes still closed, she left that jade chariot and pursued the Heaven Emperor.

While she did not cultivate in the Spatial Heavenly Scripture like the Western Exalt Lang Qing, as an Emperor who had already pushed open the door to Immortality, she would not be any slower than him!

Her palm that was white as jade was clenched into a fist,

flickering with icy-blue light as it struck towards the Heaven Emperor's back.

The Heaven Emperor did not stop, turn, evade or block.

He forcibly took this punch of the Female Emperor's head-on with his back.

At the instant at which the blow contacted, patterns like the long river of time appeared within the eyes of the Heaven Emperor.

He was enveloped by the long river of time as time in the surrounding space then flowed in reverse!

The reversing time forcibly rewrote the fact of the Heaven Emperor being struck by the punch of the Female Emperor as the scene before everyone's eyes regained the look of there still being a distance before this punch made contact.

Of everyone present, besides the Female Emperor who was also a True Immortal, there were only Yan Zhaoge who cultivated in the Peerless Heavenly Scripture and Yan Di who was guarded by the Grand Simplicity Splendour Cloud who were able to detect some of this.

In the eyes of others, Cao Jie and the other Exalts included, their minds only wavered slightly as they did not register ever having seen the Female Emperor successfully strike the Heaven Emperor with a punch.

The Female Emperor Jie Mingkong snorted lightly, abruptly opening her palm that was clenched into a fist.

Changing her fist into a claw, the Female Emperor's hand turned the long, formless river of time into something which possessed a form, grabbing hold of it as she would a belt.

A feeling of coldness rampaged as roiling cold qi dispelled the miraculous nature of that long river of time, seemingly reducing it into ordinary flowing water.

Then, the water was frozen into ice.

The long river of time formed by the Immortal qi of the Heaven Emperor was instantly frozen into a glacier.

Meanwhile, the Female Emperor's second punch fell upon him!

The Heaven Emperor exhaled slowly, still not halting and turning as he forcibly took a punch of the Female Emperor's once more.

He was unable to dispel this punch.

Green qi flickered across his pale face.

His right sleeve shook with a flow of qi circulating as a figure flew out from within.

This was none other than the Northeastern Exalt, Liu Zhenggu, who had previously been suppressed by the Heaven Emperor's Heaven Earth Within Sleeve.

The Heaven Emperor had been injured by the Female Emperor and forced to let him out.

Still, the Heaven Emperor capitalised on this chance, not halting in the least as he instead accelerated towards Yan Zhaoge!

The Heaven Emperor disregarded even suffering an injury simply to see Yan Zhaoge dead.

Streams of green qi surged out from his back where the Female Emperor had struck him.

It was as though the seed of a tree had sprouted, a seedling breaking out from the soil as it instantly grew into a massive tree that towered into the heavens.

Green light intermingled, resembling the entanglement of tree branches as it swept along the arm of the Female Emperor, obstructing her advance.

The Female Emperor knit her brows slightly as the massive tree

of lush greenery before her instantly transformed, turning straight into an entire forest which surrounded her.

Trees that towered to the heavens connected to one another, obscuring the heavens and concealing the sun with spiritual qi circulating to form a sealed off world.

Simply destroying these trees alone would be insufficient for the Female Emperor to quickly extricate herself.

The forest before her was a massive formation!

A casual formation established by the Heaven Emperor was an even more powerful formation than the inferior version of the Nine Bends Yellow River Formation that Yan Zhaoge had previously set up at Circumference Mountain with the help of the river water of the Dynasty River.

Having temporarily tied up the Female Emperor's footsteps, the Heaven Emperor continued traversing space as he instantly arrived in front of Yan Zhaoge.

Despite still being rather confused due to only just having escaped, as the Northeastern Exalt Liu Zhenggu saw this, even though he knew that he was not the Heaven Emperor's match, he still strove to rush to Yan Zhaoge's aid.

"It just happens that there are four of you..." The Heaven Emperor's gaze swept across Yan Zhaoge, Yan Di, Cao Jie and Liu Zhenggu, "Taiyi Imperial Breaking Formation, is it? Of no use whatsoever."

Ignoring the fact that there were no formations besides the Immortal Exterminating Formation which allowed Martial Saints to slay Immortals, the Heaven Emperor would be unconcerned even if this was not the case.

In the current World beyond Worlds, he, the Heaven Emperor, was ranked number one amongst the Five Emperors in the dao of formations!

Qing Shuzi and Daoist Leading Mist who had died within the Nine Bends Yellow River Formation had not been able to inherit his attainments in formations.

Still, the late Daoist Shi who had merely listened to him talking about formations before had been extremely outstanding in the dao of formations amongst all the Immortal Bridge Martial Saints of the World beyond Worlds.

Aside from Daoist Shi's unordinary talent in formations, the Heaven Emperor's guidance had been a major factor in this as its significance could not be ignored.

The Heaven Emperor possessed an incomplete version of the formation diagram of the Taiyi Imperial Breaking Formation in the first place.

If the four of them were to establish this formation in front of him now, he could break it with a snap of his fingers.

Whether or not the Taiyi Imperial Breaking Formation was there made no difference to the Heaven Emperor.

It was the same for other formations as well.

If the Nine Bends Yellow River Formation was in front of him now, if it was not controlled by other Emperor-level experts, the Heaven Emperor would still be able to move straight past it as if it had never existed in the first place!

Now, he was only concerned about the Female Emperor behind him who might charge out from the impromptu formation that he had set up at any time.

Therefore, the Heaven Emperor did not waste time on words as he pointed out with a finger straight towards Yan Zhaoge's forehead once more!

Within the forest, the Female Emperor's face was cold as frost as she sensed these variations outside of the formation.



“Do not play these little games, Heaven Emperor,” Her eyelids suddenly quivered lightly as her closed eyes looked set to open.

Still, she soon made an inquisitive noise as she instead detected that something was not right.

The Heaven Emperor who was staking it all on this one move also discovered this abnormality.

For Yan Zhaoge who had previously been standing there quietly, unrelated to the fight as he could only wait for the conclusion of this battle between the two Emperors, light was flickering about his body at this moment, scattering between the heavens and earth!

# HSSB 1037: Earth Mother Dao Ritual, Later Earth Text!

---

With the descent of the two Emperors, the conclusion of the battle seemed like it would be decided by victory and defeat between them.

When the Heaven Emperor temporarily shook off the Female Emperor at the price of suffering an injury, everyone felt despair rise within their hearts.

The Heaven Emperor pointed towards Yan Zhaoge as immense pressure appeared once again, virtually suffocating him.

He could even hear the blood of his entire body erupting and booming, his bones creaking.

His body seemed like it would be crushed into a puddle of sludge in the next instant.

Beneath this extreme pain, Yan Zhaoge had a serious expression on his face. Still, his gaze remained calm and bright, neither hurried nor flustered.

The Extreme Yang Seal in his hand emitted blazing sunlight which seemed infinite and endless as it was infused ceaselessly into the Dim Radiant Wheel.

Of the twelve slots of the Dim Radiant Wheel, eleven of them were dim and lustreless at this moment as only one surged with dazzling radiance.

That radiance seemed endless and eternal as it illuminated the myriad heavens.

Bolstered by the power of the Extreme Yang Seal, the eighth of the Dim Radiant Twelve Arts, the art of Perpetual Brightness, demonstrated shocking power.

Even during the reign of the Dim Radiant Sect, besides the Dim

Radiant Emperor Yin Tianxia himself when he had been at the Human Exalt stage, there were no other Martial Saint experts who would be able to display such a powerful art of Perpetual Brightness.

Yan Zhaoge's execution of the art of Perpetual Brightness with the Dim Radiant Wheel at this very moment had already reached the peak that was possible for Martial Saints.

The immeasurable, eternal radiance did not ripple in the least as it illuminated the world all around.

Such sturdy radiance seemed to have condensed into a solid form and sealed off the entire world as one could only sigh in wonder.

Yet, while such power stood at the peak of the human realm, it still could not surpass it at the end of the day.

The Heaven Emperor's finger continued advancing forward unceasingly.

The pressure that was on Yan Zhaoge continued to rise unceasingly.

Now, however, a change suddenly occurred within the Royal Reed Sea which had previously been messed up terribly as the battlefield.

Streams of light suddenly surfaced at the bottom of the sea, simultaneously converging towards the western region of sea in the Spirit Inheritance Region before finally falling on Broad Creed Mountain all at once!

Those streams of light ultimately transformed into a profound, complex sigil.

The sigil was massive beyond compare as it enveloped the entire Royal Reed Sea, even extending towards the surrounding lands.

Its lustre was golden and black, holy and heavy, distant and vigorous.

At the instant when this sigil appeared, those of the Royal Reed Sea felt as if they could finally distinguish the heavens and the earth again.

The great earth up above that was formed of the Heaven Emperor's Immortal qi still existed there.

Yet, it emanated the feeling of the sky now.

The heavens and the earth became distinct once more as it was no longer two earths, one on top and one below.

This was because the actual earth down below had become incomparably heavy and solid at this moment, far surpassing the one up above.

Contrasting the two, one would naturally feel that above were the heavens whereas below was the earth.

As soon as the Heaven Emperor saw that sigil, a shocking glow appeared within his eyes.

The concept contained within that sigil was precisely the existence he had been seeking!

This was the concept of the dao tradition of the Earth Queen of Daoism's Four Imperials!

He had schemed for many years and ordered King Xuanwen, Daoist Shi and Shen Lingzi to come to the Royal Reed Sea to establish the Heaven Bearing Efficacy Formation in the hope that he would be able to find it without alerting anyone to it.

This place contained words written by the Earth Queen!

These words had already merged entirely as one with the heavens and earth of the World beyond Worlds.

The text was here in the Royal Reed Sea and yet hidden away formlessly as it would be difficult to locate and excavate it.

Even the Heaven Emperor would need a long time to find it. Therefore, he had tasked this to Shen Lingzi and the others.

Who knew that this would ultimately fail at a crucial moment due to Yan Zhaoge and Cao Jie, the Southeastern Exalt.

This time, he had resolved himself to reside at this place for a longer period of time after having taken care of Yan Zhaoge and the others, patiently searching for it then.

Yet, never would the Heaven Emperor have thought that the object might first be netted by Yan Zhaoge.

The problem was that even he as an exalted Emperor had been unable to do this. Yet, how had Yan Zhaoge, an Immortal Bridge Martial Saint, caused the text of the Earth Queen's to resurface within a mere few years?

The Heaven Emperor was both shocked and enraged as his expression finally changed abruptly at this moment.

Gazing over, he saw Yan Zhaoge bathed within that glow.

Numerous characters of radiance came together to form belts of light which coiled around Yan Zhaoge's body.

Guided by Yan Zhaoge, the power of the Extreme Yang Seal and the Dim Radiant Wheel had descended, forming a strange mechanism which induced such changes in the Royal Reed Sea down below.

More importantly, through this mechanism, the power of the Heaven Emperor's attack that was directed at Yan Zhaoge was unceasingly channelled downwards into the great earth down below.

A wound surfaced on the exterior of the Heaven Emperor's body.

No blood could be seen on the wound as it instead flickered with radiance.

This was neither an injury inflicted by the Female Emperor from earlier nor an actual wound. Instead, it was a wound of principles which entailed that deficiencies existed within the concept of the

martial art that the Heaven Emperor cultivated in.

Yan Zhaoge raised his head, looking calmly at the flickering wound on the Heaven Emperor's body as he chanted a sutra.

“Nine Splendour Jade Imperial, Seven Treasure Royal Room.

While bearing Heaven's orders, handling yin managing yang.

Dao extends into glory, virtue accumulates smooth subtlety.

Efficacy Art Vast Heaven, foundational beauty of earth, accessories of form in mother's benevolence.

Disregarding weapons is reliance, all mountains battle, sorrow and desire, holiness and benevolence, Heaven Efficacy Bearing Art, Later Earth Queen Divinity.”

The contents of the scripture being chanted by Yan Zhaoge were none other than the treasured ones of the Later Earth Queen Divinity, known to all Daoism.

Still, as this occurred alongside the ritual which he was currently executing, the Heaven Emperor was shocked, “...Earth Mother Dao Ritual?!”

As these words were said, the Female Emperor was surprised as Cao Jie, Liu Zhenggu, Zhuang Shen and Lang Qing were taken aback even more greatly.

“Unlike the Heaven Bearing Efficacy Formation which is still circulated, this ritual was completely discontinued and lost following the Great Calamity!”

“Even the Earthly Sovereign does not possess that!”

The Heaven Emperor stared fixatedly straight over.

If he was versed in the Earth Mother Dao Ritual, executing it in concert with the Heaven Efficacy Bearing Formation, he would long since have located this hidden text more than a century ago!

“Many questions can perhaps be solved when you think back to

their source,” After the ritual was successfully completed, Yan Zhaoge smiled as he looked at the Heaven Emperor, “Why are you so persistent regarding this place? I believe that there must be a reason for this.”

“You, Heaven Emperor, have the foundation of the dao tradition of Five Manor Locale that was left behind by the Primordial Suppressing Immortal of legend. A pity that it is incomplete and deficient.”

“In order to remedy this deficiency, besides continuing to search for the dao tradition of Five Manor Locale, you have also set your eyes on the dao tradition of the Earth Queen, also having learnt of this text which is located here.”

Yan Zhaoge spread his hands apart, smiling, “This Yan is untalented, inadvertently having obtained the Earth Mother Dao Ritual. I had long since finished preparations for the Heaven Efficacy Bearing Formation. It is just that wanting to truly unearth the text of the Earth Queen, your strength is still necessary as only then can it go smoothly.”

The Heaven Emperor had calmed down by now as he looked at Yan Zhaoge, “So what? The text of the Earth Queen would be useless in your hands. Unearthing it would simply end up benefiting this humble Daoist instead.”

“Give it to me then!” With that, he ignored Yan Zhaoge as he abruptly spread his palm that became incomparably massive, seemingly encompassing the entire Royal Reed Sea and capturing that sigil!

# HSSB 1038: Stomping on the shoulders of an Emperor

---

The Heaven Emperor caught the sigil that enveloped the Royal Reed Sea with his palm.

Yan Zhaoge said in no rush at all, “Its use is indeed limited in my hands.”

“I cannot take it out of the Royal Reed Sea.”

“It would not be of much help in my cultivation.”

“I am also unable to stimulate it to deal with other enemies. However...”

Yan Zhaoge raised his head to look at the Heaven Emperor, “It is basically still sufficient to receive you, Heaven Emperor, here in the lands of the Royal Reed Sea.”

Amidst his words, streams of light congregated beneath his feet with black and gold intermingling before rising upwards.

With the sigil which was formed of the text by the Earth Queen as its foundation, a silhouette was gradually condensed in the air above the Royal Reed Sea.

It seemed just like the blurry idol of some person.

As the Heaven Emperor’s palm descended on that silhouette, his strength was instantly obstructed.

His eyes grew solemn as he discovered that his strength was being forcibly directed into the great earth down below.

“Return to the soil, earthing back to the primordial...” After a brief pause, the Heaven Emperor abruptly changed his stance!

His gaze seemed to transform into the eternal long river of time at this moment.

While his foundation was the dao tradition of Ten Thousand



Longevity Mountain's Five Manor Locale of legend, delving into the profundities of thick earth and familiarising him with the variations in space, aside from that, the Heaven Emperor also had high attainments in the Aeon Light Heavenly Scripture.

Still, as he was about to reverse time, that wound on his body which shone with radiance flickered intensely.

At the same time, the sigil that enveloped the Royal Reed Sea down below suddenly dimmed somewhat.

Yet, the silhouette that was birthed from that sigil was unprecedentedly bright as never before.

A majestic and heavy force was birthed within and infused within the open palm of the Heaven Emperor.

The Heaven Emperor's body jolted abruptly as he retracted his palm, focusing on Yan Zhaoge and the sigil down below.

"Immortals descended into the mortal realm are virtually invincible. True Immortals of Daoism are mighty indeed," Yan Zhaoge formed a seal with his hands, bringing them together before his chest, "With my current cultivation base, even if the Dim Radiant Wheel were an actual Immortal Artifact that was already completely refined successfully, I would still probably be unable to withstand you."

"Still, I only brought out the Dim Radiant Wheel and Extreme Yang Seal to supply sufficient spiritual qi as is needed to maintain the Earth Mother Dao Ritual."

"The Later Earth Text of the Earth Queen that you have always been looking for, Heaven Emperor, is what I really prepared for this day."

Yan Zhaoge said neither hurriedly nor slowly, "There is only you who can kickstart this mechanism as it would only work against you too. Against other people, it would be useless. Still, this would simply be unnecessary against others in the first place."

Zhuang Shen's expression was sunken and heavy as he gazed at Yan Zhaoge as veins vaguely seemed to be throbbing on his forehead.

The faces of Lang Qing, Lian Zulin and Daoist Oneheaven were also sunken as water.

The Female Emperor's descent had surpassed all their predictions.

Yet, the fact that Yan Zhaoge was actually able to withstand even the Heaven Emperor when facing him alone was even more of an unexpected thing!

Behind the Heaven Emperor, the dense forest of towering trees was chopped down in great quantities as her eyes closed, the Female Emperor walked out from within.

"I had originally intended to slowly search for it after killing you lot," The Heaven Emperor's expression remained the same, "Now, it is merely doing these two things at the same time."

With that, he flicked his sleeve which extended out towards Yan Zhaoge and the Later Earth Text.

Amidst illusory space and time along with the shifting of causality, he sought to capture the two all at once.

Still, Yan Zhaoge ignored this, meeting the possibility of myriad variations with passivity as he simply concentrated on maintaining the Earth Mother Dao Ritual.

His true essence and the power of the Extreme Yang Seal and Dim Radiant Wheel were supplied to the ritual in an endless stream, sent within the sigil formed of the Later Earth Text.

The sigil flickered with light once more.

Yan Di who had previously seemed unrelated to what was going on now emitted a low roar.

The Grand Simplicity Splendour Cloud above his head flew up,

leaving him and landing on the sigil.

Affected by this, a change occurred with the sigil once more as the phenomenon of chaos actually surfaced within it.

The power of the Grand Simplicity Splendour Cloud combined with that of the Later Earth Text as the illusory silhouette in the air above the Royal Reed Sea actually formed illusory scenes amidst space as well.

The Heaven Emperor's Heaven Earth Within Sleeve was actually unable to do anything to Yan Zhaoge now.

At the same time, the Female Emperor had already arrived before the Heaven Emperor yet again as he was forced to back off.

Still, he did not lose heart as he shifted space, seeming omnipresent as he continued launching attacks at Yan Zhaoge.

Still, all his attacks were dispelled by the power of the Later Earth Text without exception.

The majestic force of his attacks would be directed into the great earth before instantly being sent back at him!

“You should understand now, Heaven Emperor,” Yan Zhaoge smiled, “The fiercer your attacks, the stronger the retaliatory force that is sent back at you.”

The Heaven Emperor did not speak as he transformed into countless selves, attacking towards the sigil in an endless combo with no time difference in his attacks at all.

He attempted to surpass the rate at which the Later Earth Text could retaliate with a sufficiently high frequency of attacks.

In the end, however, every single attack was returned without having been diminished in the least!

With the final full-powered strike of the Heaven Emperor's, just those aftershocks alone virtually ripped a corner of the World beyond Worlds as it affected the entire southeastern Yang Heaven

Territory.

Yan Zhaoge smiled, “For some things, you really have to experience them first to believe them.”

The sigil formed of the Later Earth Text resembled the deepest, densest earth as it reduced the Heaven Emperor’s hopes to nothingness yet again.

It was not merely that as that tyrannical, vigorous force was completely sent back at the Heaven Emperor.

Having previously been wounded by the Female Emperor, the Heaven Emperor was slightly too slow to react as he was not in time to dispel this blow, only being able to forcibly resist it.

His figure quivered in mid-air as green qi surfaced on his pale face again which did not fade for a long time!

The Heaven Emperor gazed at Yan Zhaoge who was enveloped by radiance at the centre of the ritual down below.

Currently, everyone was speechless within the Royal Reed Sea.

Everyone was just dazedly watching this scene, unable to speak.

That was an Emperor who had pushed open the door to Immortality, becoming a True Immortal!

Entering Immortality from mortality entailed ascending the heavens in a single step, stomping all mortality beneath one’s feet.

Even tenth level Martial Saints who were known as Human Exalts would be instantly suppressed when facing the Heaven Emperor.

Human Exalts were still ‘human’ at the end of the day, hard pressed to withstand true Immortals.

Yet, this Emperor was currently totally helpless in colliding with an Immortal Bridge Martial Saint.

Even the gazes of the Southeastern Exalt Cao Jie and the

Northeastern Exalt Liu Zhenggu who were fighting alongside Yan Zhaoge were no longer the same now as they looked at him.

They had both actually vaguely been aware that there was something that was very important to the Heaven Emperor here in the Royal Reed Sea.

Still, it was very difficult to extract as even with the Heaven Emperor's cultivation base, the time that would have to be depleted in doing so would number into the centuries.

How was one to extract and retrieve it?

After having done so, how was one to make use of all its profundities in resisting an Emperor?

These were conundrums sufficient to stump every single person here.

Yet, the young man enveloped within that radiance had solved all these conundrums.

Thus, he had also just completed a shocking feat which would shake the world!

After sensing the profundities of the Later Earth Text, the Female Emperor no longer attacked as she simply quietly 'spectated' the clash between Yan Zhaoge and the Heaven Emperor off by the side.

While her eyes were closed, she was cognisant about everything.

Even if the Heaven Emperor had not been injured from clashing with her, so long as the Later Earth Text was present, he would still be unable to take down Yan Zhaoge and take down Broad Creed Mountain.

Even without her, even without the Brocade Emperor, Broad Creed Mountain would still have a chance to survive today's battle towering, unwavering and intact!

Yan Zhaoge and Broad Creed Mountain were destined to shock the heavens again this very day.

By stomping on the Heaven Emperor's shoulders, Yan Zhaoge had caused his reputation to blaze even more gloriously!

What left the Heaven Emperor even more despondent was the fact that the Later Earth Text which Yan Zhaoge was using to stomp on him was precisely the existence he had been yearning for all this time!

# HSSB 1039: The arrogant, domineering Yan Zhaoge

---

The Female Emperor Jie Mingkong had no intention of joining forces with Yan Zhaoge and attacking the Heaven Emperor.

While her eyes were closed, her ‘gaze’ was still shifting about Yan Zhaoge, Yan Di and the Heaven Emperor.

Her icy cold features which had always seemed frozen ever since she had showed up defrosted slightly at this moment as the hint of a smile appeared at the corners of her mouth.

“Heaven Emperor, you are bullying the weak as the strong in the first place. Since you failed once, you would not be shameless enough to try this again, right?” The Female Emperor said indifferently.

The Heaven Emperor stood atop the air, the green qi on his face finally fading after a long time as his injuries were temporarily suppressed.

If he did not launch any attacks, the Later Earth Text would naturally not retaliate.

“The item down below concerns this humble Daoist’s cultivation. This humble Daoist must definitely have it,” The Heaven Emperor said calmly, “Moreover, Broad Creed Mountain’s Yan Zhaoge killed this humble Daoist’s most favoured disciple, Qing Shuzi. I cannot let it go just like that no matter what.”

The Female Emperor replied, “Even if I were not here, you would still be unable to do anything to this Broad Creed Mountain.”

The Heaven Emperor said, “With Brocade Fu not here and you not acting, victory and defeat would still remain in question.”

“That’s right, with you the main attacker and Zhuang Shen and the other three assisting you,” The Female Emperor’s eyes were

closed as she raised her brows slightly, “Yan Zhaoge would have to preside over the ritual to resist you, with it only being effective against you. Yan Di, Southeastern Cao and Northeastern Liu would have to battle three against four, this inevitably being harder too.”

“Still, if they were to concentrate solely on defending, they would still be able to last for a long time. The only thing they would have to worry about is you patiently setting up a formation to entrap this Royal Reed Sea, slowly grinding down Broad Creed Mountain over time.”

The Female Emperor chortled, “As a True Immortal, would you not feel ashamed to use this method against Martial Saints?”

While the Heaven Emperor was more badly injured than before, he had already calmed down, “Be it strength or strategy, since they have the ability to hinder this humble Daoist, I will naturally think of them as opponents of the same level. So, how would this have anything to do with shamelessness?”

“The ritual is only maintained with the power of the Dim Radiant Wheel, the Extreme Yang Seal and Yan Zhaoge himself. With the Dim Radiant Wheel not a complete Immortal Artifact, it will ultimately be depleted before you,” The Female Emperor said mildly, “Still, do not feel too happy. Although Fu Yunchi has been hindered for some reason, if this drags on, he will surely show up sooner or later.”

The Heaven Emperor sighed as he looked at the sigil formed of the Later Earth Text, “Right, and so victory and defeat in this Royal Reed Sea is ultimately difficult to predict.”

Gazing at Yan Zhaoge, he said, “Truly an outstanding youngster indeed. Before today, this Daoist would really never have thought that things might end up like this.”

“Thanks for the compliment, Heaven Emperor,” Yan Zhaoge replied mildly, “It is true that at the present time, things have only turned out like this because we are in the Royal Reed Sea. Without



the text of the Earth Queen's, I would probably be unable to withstand even a single blow of yours."

Yan Zhaoge raised his head, meeting the Heaven Emperor's gaze, "Still, if you cannot take me down today, there will come a day when without needing to push open the door to Immortality, outside of this Royal Reed Sea, you will similarly be unable to do anything to me at all."

"Forgive this Yan for my impudence, but this day is not far."

While Yan Zhaoge's tone was casual, as if he was just chatting normally with the Heaven Emperor, all was deathly silent between the heavens and the earth.

Everyone stared dazedly at Yan Zhaoge as there was only a single thought within their minds.

Arrogant! Domineering!

Yet, just remembering how Yan Zhaoge had battled the Southern Exalt Zhuang Shen earlier, everyone felt from the bottom of their hearts that what this youth said was not impossible.

No, it was not merely that it was not impossible. Instead, it was sure to become reality!

As an early Immortal Bridge Martial Saint, he had been at the upper hand against a Human Exalt.

Even though he had used a supreme treasure like the Extreme Yang Seal, this was still a feat that shocked the world.

With his strength being as high as this, his potential should be similarly shocking.

It was true that the higher one's cultivation base, the slower they advanced and the greater the difficulty of their cultivation as the time they spent would be greater as well.

Still, considering Yan Zhaoge's age and his cultivation speed all these years, everyone was certain that this youth would definitely

attain greater heights.

Also, it would be a meteoric rise to prominence!

The name of Fallen Deity was well deserved.

With that, no one thought him to be arrogant any longer.

As long as he did not venture outside and cultivated in peace within the Royal Reed Sea, there would definitely eventually come a day where just as he had said, not yet having become an Immortal, he would still not fear Emperors.

Gazing at Yan Zhaoge, the Heaven Emperor's gaze flickered slightly.

Facing his gaze, Yan Zhaoge spoke casually, "Three Sovereigns Five Emperors, Exalts of Ten Territories. While many may know vaguely of your goal, they are unclear on the specifics."

"This has to do with your cultivation, and obstructing one's path in the dao is akin to killing one's parents. Therefore, they did not interfere in this. The Brocade Emperor merely lent the Southeastern Exalt a hand, never having entered into this too deeply on his own accord."

"Still, after learning about the truth behind the matter, I instead felt it to be rather strange. Heaven Emperor, why were you unwilling to candidly reveal this matter publicly, thus solving it?"

"With the resurgence of Daoism following the Great Calamity, it is precisely the time to strive forward. I believe that the other Majesties also hope that you can remedy the deficiencies, thus advancing further."

Yan Zhaoge looked at the Heaven Emperor, "Is there some other reason besides this?"

The Heaven Emperor showed no reaction whatsoever as he hovered in mid-air.

"While I am unclear even now on what taboo I actually broke

when I obtained the Dim Radiant Wheel,” Yan Zhaoge continued, “With none of the others amongst the Three Sovereigns and Five Emperors supporting you in your attack on Broad Creed Mountain this time, can I interpret this as meaning that your actions too, Heaven Emperor, actually concern some sort of taboo as well?”

Hearing his words, the Heaven Emperor’s gaze finally hardened.

The Female Emperor instead smiled, “An outstanding youngster indeed.”

“The Heaven Emperor’s actions do not concern any taboo. It is just that we are somewhat doubtful about them. Because of that, we are simply observing, neither hindering nor supporting him as we see what exactly he wants to do.”

“As for why I have come...” The Female Emperor’s smile gradually faded as she ‘scanned’ the Heaven Emperor, Zhuang Shen, Lang Qing and the others with her closed eyes, “My attendant already said it at the start. While I myself am willing to come, it is still more at someone’s behest that I came.”

As soon as these words were said, the expressions of Lang Qing and the others changed again.

The Female Emperor was a loner as she had never asked anything of others or helped anyone.

If she had come at someone’s behest, even the other Emperors might not be able to do so within the World beyond Worlds.

There were only the Three Sovereigns who could request her to act!

The Heaven Emperor was taken aback by Female Emperor aiding Broad Creed Mountain as he could not understand it.

He had initially attacked before the Female Emperor’s dao attendant could finish speaking in order to avoid the scenario of the name of one of the Three Sovereigns popping up.

If that happened, whether he attacked or not, someone would inevitably lose face.

If he feigned that he was unaware of this, only coming to ask about it afterwards, it would not hurt the face of anyone as there would be a lot of space to manoeuvre and a lot of room for discussion.

It was just that the events which had occurred thereafter had completely exceeded his predictions.

“Heaven Emperor, rather than thinking about how to conquer the Royal Reed Sea, you should first think more about yourself,” The Female Emperor said coldly.

Everyone’s hearts jolted as they simultaneously gazed towards the west.

Someone was currently approaching from that direction.

That was the direction of the southern Blazing Heaven Territory’s Circumference Mountain.

Yan Zhaoge and the others realised, “The recovery of the impeded flow of the Dynasty River was this person’s handiwork...”

While the Heaven Emperor was not concerned about the newcomer’s cultivation base, the martial concept that emanated from him caused his expression to change slightly as he seemed to have thought of something.

# HSSB 1040: A Human Exalt as a junior apprentice-nephew

---

Due to the descent of the Female Emperor and her clash with the Heaven Emperor, the thick earth which had previously obscured the sky up above had already slowly shattered and fallen apart.

The Royal Reed Sea saw the light of day once more. Still, the scenes of the world were already long since different from before.

Currently, three mighty auras were approaching from Circumference Mountain to the west as they were headed straight for Broad Creed Mountain in the Royal Reed Sea's Spirit Inheritance Region.

Sword-light that split apart the heavens and the earth instantly arrived, appearing before everyone.

The sword-light gradually faded as three figures appeared.

One of them was a tall, white-clothed youth who was spirited and handsome, seeming remarkably transcendent.

A sword hung about his waist. While it was in its scabbard now, it still emanated a shocking feel.

It was like as soon as this sword was unsheathed, the world would definitely be shaken mightily.

Bright sword-light enveloped the entire body of this white-clothed youth as where he passed, space and time seemed to be cleaved apart within the world, all scenes automatically moving to avoid him.

There was also two others who were standing on either side of this white-clothed youth.

The person on the right was a middle-aged man.

While he had an ordinary appearance, he similarly possessed

brilliant sword-light that seemed as if it sought to split the heavens and the earth.

The person on the left was a black-clothed youth. While he was rather handsome too, he possessed a cold temperament as he was silent and unspeaking.

The sword-light was not prominent on his body as he simply followed the white-clothed youth and the middle-aged man in coming before the Heaven Emperor and Female Emperor.

The three first glanced at Broad Creed Mountain. Seeing that Yan Zhaoge, Yan Di and Broad Creed Mountain were unharmed, they all nodded slightly.

As Zhuang Shen, Lang Qing and the others noticed this, their pupils all involuntarily dilated slightly.

Led by the white-clothed youth, the trio greeted the Female Emperor together, “We juniors greet the Female Emperor.”

The Female Emperor nodded, “You were slightly late to arrive.”

“We did tarry,” The white-clothed youth bowed before straightening and looking at the Heaven Emperor, saying, “Heaven Emperor.”

The Heaven Emperor’s gaze shifted from Yan Zhaoge to the trio as he was silent for a long time.

The Western Exalt Lang Qing said from the side with a dark look on his face, “You people actually came here, Bai Tao.”

That white-clothed youth said, “While you and southern Zhuang are willing to give my southwestern Vermillion Heaven Territory some benefits, I would naturally abide by the order of my Master rather than accepting your benefits since he has given one.”

The white-clothed youth was called Bai Tao.

Still, people were more used to addressing him by another name in the World beyond Worlds.

Lord of the southwestern Vermillion Heaven Territory, the Southwestern Exalt Bai Tao.

If Bai Tao was merely the Southwestern Exalt, the Heaven Emperor would not be looking so solemn now.

The thing that could cause an Emperor to feel so guarded did not stem from the trio themselves as it was really the lineage that they were descended from.

The Southwestern Exalt Bai Tao and the other two were from the lineage of the central Jun Heaven Territory's Kunlun Mountain's Northern High Peak's Jade Capital Crag.

Their Master was one of the highest existences of the current World beyond Worlds, the Sword Sovereign of the Three Sovereigns!

While the Sword Sovereign's seniority was lowest amongst these three, he along with the Earthly Sovereign and Concealed Sovereign possessed unshakeable authority that reigned throughout the entire world.

He was currently still amidst extradimensional space, having yet to return.

Still, the appearance of Bai Tao's trio here would inevitably cause others to think of him.

This was especially so since just the three of them alone would be insufficient to request the Female Emperor to act.

"Yan Zhaoge has obtained the relic of the late Dim Radiant Emperor Yin Tianxia, being a true disciple of his!" Lang Qing exclaimed, "Even if the Sword Sovereign treasures talent, you must reconsider..."

Bai Tao shook his head, "Do you still not understand, Western Lang?"

Looking at Yan Zhaoge and Yan Di, he sighed vastly, "They are

surnamed Yan!”

Lang Qing was shocked, “Surnamed Yan...wait a moment!”

He looked like he had seen a ghost as he turned and looked towards Yan Zhaoge and Yan Di, stunned, “It’s that Yan?!”

Zhuang Shen, Daoist Oneheaven, Lian Zulin, Cao Jie and Liu Zhenggu all appeared puzzled initially before shocked looks appeared on all their faces.

They all turned to look at Yan Zhaoge and Yan Di in unison, with Lian Zulin blurting out, “They are the descendants of Yan Xingtang!”

Many atop Broad Creed Mountain had blank looks on their faces.

Still, for some of them, within their minds surfaced a name which, to them, only existed in legends as well as history books.

Yan Xingtang.

Rather than his actual name, there were more who knew of his title.

One of the new Kunlun Nine Luminaries who had established the World beyond Worlds that year, the Exalted Gold Luminary!

The number one figure in the dao of the sword for Daoism following the Great Calamity, the Sword God Yan Xingtang!

It was not for no reason whatsoever that Lang Qing, Zhuang Shen and the others were able to relate this distant legend to the situation at hand.

The current Sword Sovereign of the World beyond Worlds’ Three Sovereigns was precisely the personal disciple and primary descendant of the late Exalted Gold Luminary from back then!

“Could it be that the Sword Sovereign is mistaken?” Zhuang Shen asked in a heavy tone, “The Yan father and son from Broad Creed Mountain originate from a lower world. They are not locals of the World beyond Worlds.”



“If you were to say that they share the same surname, the Exalted Fire Luminary of the Kunlun Nine Luminaries of back then and the Profound Sovereign of the Roving Jade Heavens are both surnamed Gao. Still, they are not related by blood in the least!”

Looking at Zhuang Shen, Bai Tao saw that while he had a heavy expression on his face, his eyes were surging like blazing fire.

He sighed, replying, “He is a descendant of Grand Master’s, but not just any mere descendant.”

Bai Tao’s gaze turned towards Yan Di, a rather complicated look on his face, “To be exact, this Bai would have to call you senior apprentice-uncle.”

Zhuang Shen looked disbelievingly at Yan Di, “He is the son of the Exalted Gold Luminary?”

“It is not surprising that those like Zhuang Shen and Lang Qing have not heard of this,” The Female Emperor now said mildly from the side, “Heaven Emperor, you must have heard of who the Exalted Gold Luminary’s wife was.”

The Heaven Emperor who had been keeping silent throughout finally spoke now, “Of the Prime Clear direct lineage, the Sword Emperor Di Qinglian of the Roving Jade Heavens!”

Sword God Yan Xingtang.

Sword Emperor Di Qinglian.

Several thousand years back, Daoism of post-Great Calamity times had witnessed the union of the two most outstanding sword cultivators whose renown had shaken the world. While few knew of them today, having experienced this for himself during his youth, their names were as familiar as booming thunder to the Heaven Emperor.

“Yan...Di, Yan Di, what a Yan Di!” The Heaven Emperor’s expression changed intensely, “If not for this name of his, this humble Daoist would instead have paid attention to his surname.”

Standing quietly beside his father, Yan Zhaoge looked over and saw that there was neither sorrow nor joy visible on Yan Di's face, just that his gaze was growing increasingly sharp.

Yan Zhaoge looked at the Heaven Emperor again as he was able to imagine his despondence right now.

Yan Di's name was the combination of his parents' surnames.

Still, it was said that the couple had already been dead for over two thousand years.

Yet, Yan Di was not even a century old yet!

This did not correspond no matter what.

It would be much more natural to think of it as a coincidence.

The gazes of the Heaven Emperor's lot were filled with anger as they looked at the Female Emperor and Bai Tao's trio as they just felt as if they were being played.

"This humble Daoist has seen images of the Exalted Gold Luminary before," The Heaven Emperor exhaled slowly, "If they are father and son, how could there be no resemblance between them?"

"The bloodline of the Sword God and Sword Emperor instead cultivates in sabre arts?"

"With so many conflicting areas, how can you be sure that he is a descendant of the Exalted Gold Luminary?"

The Female Emperor Jie Mingkong smiled coldly, not deigning to reply.

The Southwestern Exalt Bai Tao remained well-mannered as he cupped his hands towards the Heaven Emperor, "Please look over there, Heaven Emperor."

Looking where his finger was pointing, the Heaven Emperor's gaze abruptly grew focused.

A cloud that resembled a blooming lotus was hovering silently above Yan Di's head.

The cloud was dim and chaotic as time and space appeared all blurry within.

# HSSB 1041: Not just a single great backer!

---

Grand Simplicity, the head of the Grand Cosmos Five Manifestations, represented the primordial, original state of the universe as it had no brightness and no form, being silent and formless.

Even the boundaries of space and time were blurred.

There was no before and no after, no beginning and no end.

Looking at the Grand Simplicity Splendour Cloud above Yan Di's head, the Heaven Emperor's gaze was solemn as many of his previous doubts were simply resolved just like that.

What remained was more of despondence.

Yan Zhaoge did not speak as listening quietly to the conversation between the Female Emperor and the Heaven Emperor, many of his previous doubts were alleviated and his guesses verified.

Why had the Grand Simplicity Splendour Cloud come to seek out his father on its own accord, and why did Yan Di feel a sense of closeness and familiarity with it?

This was because it was an existence which had been born alongside him in the first place!

The first time Yan Zhaoge had seen the Grand Simplicity Splendour Cloud, its strange form had been different from that of the Grand Simplicity that he knew of.

It was as if it had stepped from earlier heaven at the commencement of the universe into later heaven.

The reason was actually that this Grand Simplicity Splendour Cloud had been born alongside Yan Di like a baby's swaddling clothes, having descended from an earlier heaven womb as they were born into later heaven together.

After his birth, due to some unique reasons, Yan Di had been

resting in the Grand Simplicity Splendour Cloud all along.

The concept of time was blurry within the Grand Simplicity Splendour Cloud as the rate of flow of Yan Di's life was virtually stagnant.

Meanwhile, two thousand years had passed in the outside world in a flash.

And one day, things had ripened as Yan Di had truly arrived in the mortal world.

How had this come to pass?

Yan Zhaoge could not be certain. Still, from the information currently on hand, it should be that his grandparents, Yan Xingtang and Di Qinglian, had met with an unfortunate incident. In consideration for her son's safety, the pregnant Di Qinglian had temporarily entrusted him to the Grand Simplicity Splendour Cloud.

At the same time, his father, Yan Di, had also inherited the legacies and hopes of his grandparents!

In the past, Yan Zhaoge had not been aware that Yan Xingtang of the Jade Clear direct lineage had actually married Di Qinglian of the Prime Clear direct lineage that year.

Otherwise, he would long since have guessed this.

Why was that so?

The purer and more refined his father's domineering, rampant martial true intent that presided loftily over all lifeforms, the more Yan Zhaoge had felt this to be familiar.

The Heaven Opening Scripture of the Jade Clear lineage's Primordial Heavenly Scriptures.

Defining the primordial gulf and splitting the heavens and earth into existence, setting earth, water wind and fire and manifesting new creation.

The Immortal Exterminating Sword of the Prime Clear lineage's Numinous Treasure Four Swords.

One sword breaking all arts, sturdy and indestructible, breaking through all, the conclusion of principles of the myriad heavens as it signified the descent of the art of the end along with the conclusion of all creation.

The former opened the heavens and split the earth while the latter destroyed the heavens and extinguished the earth.

As the two forms merged, there was a beginning and an end, forming the momentum of a great dao in the progress of creation itself.

The momentum lies with me, I am unstoppable, sturdy and indestructible, sweeping through all that stands in my way.

The combination of the Heaven Opening Scripture and the Immortal Exterminating Sword which had already possessed shocking power in the first place displayed even more formidable might now.

Yan Zhaoge wanted to give a thumbs up to his grandparents whom he had never met before.

They had thought of a wondrous idea, one that was both insane and genius at the same time.

More miraculous was the fact that not only had they thought of it, they had even brought it into reality!

What had helped them to accomplish all this was a treasure that they had inadvertently obtained, the Grand Simplicity Splendour Cloud.

Just the Grand Simplicity Splendour Cloud alone was still insufficient. They themselves would not be able to complete this martial art or cultivate with it.

They would have but a single chance of success with a child of

their own.

This was a crystallisation of the efforts of the family of three as only Yan Di could cultivate in such a miraculous martial art.

This was perhaps the final bestowment of Yan Xingtang and Di Qinglian on their son.

It was precisely because this martial art had been born alongside Yan Di that Yan Di had continually been stagnant within the Grand Simplicity Splendour Cloud. It was only when two thousand years had passed in the outside world that it had attained grand completion and he had been born into this world with a unique martial art that belonged just to him and him alone.

As for his descent into the Eight Extremities World, there was no way of telling whether it was a coincidence or had been premeditated.

Yan Di was born with this martial art as what was emphasised was the concept and not the stances.

It made no difference whether he cultivated in the sword or in the sabre.

It was just that as a result, the Heaven Emperor, Lang Qing, Zhuang Shen and the others had all been completely thrown off by this!

Due to the Grand Simplicity Splendour Cloud, Yan Di's appearance had been affected as well such that the Heaven Emperor who had seen an image of the Exalted Gold Luminary before had not noticed any sign of this.

Still, these descendants of the Sword Sovereign's lineage would not have gotten this wrong.

Knowing about the events of back then and the miraculous uses of the Grand Simplicity Splendour Cloud, they would not end up overlooking this due to his age.

Yan Di's name itself already spoke volumes.

Also, his martial concept and his connection with the Grand Simplicity Splendour Cloud were the best proof as others would not be able to falsify this.

“Now that I think about it, the Roving Jade Heavens had no malicious intentions in giving me the Immortal Trapping Sword. This was because of grandmother,” Yan Zhaoge stroked his lower chin, “...It really feels pretty good to have connections in high places.”

Back in the Eight Extremities World, while there had been rivals like the Sacred Sun Clan and the Heavenly Thunder Hall, as one of the six great Sacred Grounds there, Broad Creed Mountain had been rather powerful too.

Yet, after coming to the World beyond Worlds, everything had to be fought for from scratch.

As the vanguard, Yan Zhaoge had really spent quite a bit of effort on this.

Still, for a lazy guy like him, the line he loved to hear most was still this.

“Oi, Yan Zhaoge, isn't it just that you have a good father?”

Now that he could relive his old dream, Yan Zhaoge was in an extremely good mood.

In contrast, the Heaven Emperor, the Western Exalt Lang Qing and the Eastern Exalt Daoist Oneheaven etcetera all felt bitter at this moment.

They finally understood why the Female Emperor Jie Mingkong had made a move.

It might be more because of the Sword Emperor. Still, the Female Emperor had been being honest when she had said that she was willing to assist them in the first place.



The higher echelon experts of the World beyond Worlds all knew that the Female Emperor was descended from the lineage of the Exalted Water Luminary of the Kunlun Nine Luminaries!

“My Master has an aloof personality and seldom made good friends. He was only on rather good terms with the Exalted Gold Luminary amongst the Kunlun Nine Luminaries that year,” Jie Mingkong said mildly, “Because of this past relationship, even if I had not been asked by the Sword Sovereign, I would still have come here to stop you, Heaven Emperor.”

The Heaven Emperor was like a stone statue that hovered in mid-air at this moment.

Yan Zhaoge had discussed many of his guesses with Yan Di before.

Now, Yan Di was able to get to the bottom of many previous doubts too.

His mood was rather more complex.

Taking a deep breath to compose himself, Yan Di thanked the Heaven Emperor before cupping his hands towards Bai Tao and the other two.

Bai Tao hurriedly said that he should not do so, to which Yan Di said, “Like the Heaven Emperor and these Exalts, this Yan has only just learnt of this matter. My emotions are difficult to calm right now. I hope that I can have a chance to meet the Sword Sovereign when he returns to the World beyond Worlds.”

“Suddenly hearing about this now, it is only natural that you are feeling like this,” Bai Tao nodded understandingly.

The black-clothed youth beside him suddenly said, “If Master was here, he would surely not want you, senior apprentice-uncle Yan, to address him by his title. Instead, he would rather you call him senior apprentice-brother.”

Yan Di smiled and was just about to reply when Lang Qing said

unresignedly from the side, “I hope that the Sword Sovereign and Female Emperor can reconsider this. Not only has Yan Zhaoge obtained the Dim Radiant Wheel, Yan Di’s wife, Yan Zhaoge’s mother, is none other than Xue Chuqing, that descendant of the Bright Connection Emperor Hu Xinyue!”

“The things that are related to this matter are far beyond what you imagine!”

The black-clothed youth cut him off, raising a hand as a streak of light flew into the air.

# HSSB 1042: So what if we are overbearing!

---

The Heaven Emperor, Zhuang Shen, Lang Qing and the others were still holding on to hope.

Their final hope was the stance of the Earthly Sovereign and the Concealed Sovereign.

Over the past several millennia, the Three Sovereigns had reigned supreme in the World beyond Worlds, with the Earthly Sovereign at their head.

The Concealed Sovereign seldom ventured outside or expressed his opinions as he gave tacit support to the decisions of the Earthly Sovereign most of the time.

The current stance of the World beyond Worlds regarding the Dim Radiant Emperor Yin Tianxia originated from a decision of the Earthly Sovereign's.

The reason behind the decline and disappearance of the lineage of Yan Zhaoge's mother Xue Chuqing in the World beyond Worlds was similarly because of the stance of the Earthly Sovereign.

While the Sword Sovereign had not spoken up about this, neither had he showed any opposition.

It was because of this that Lang Qing, Daoist Oneheaven and some others had been treating Xue Chuqing like a wanted fugitive.

While the Earthly Sovereign had not given a clear decree on this, the fact that the Earth Exalt Wang Zhengcheng had continually been searching for Xue Chuqing within the central Jun Heaven Territory too more or less spoke for something.

Whether it was Yan Zhaoge having obtained the Dim Radiant Wheel or their relationship with Xue Chuqing, this had more or less been somewhat breaking a taboo within the World beyond Worlds.

If the Earthly Sovereign and the Concealed Sovereign expressed a definite stance on this, there might still be a way to work around this.

“In being unwilling to personally make a move, was Elder Wang already aware of the Sword Sovereign’s relation to the Yan family?” Lang Qing’s thoughts flashed through his mind at lightning speed, “But since he was willing to lend the Breath Soil, that means that he and the Earthly Sovereign are not happy to see the Sword Sovereign connected too deeply with the Yan Family...”

Amidst his thoughts, the black-robed youth beside Bai Tao raised a hand.

Sword-light appeared, slashing through the horizon as it bloomed and transformed into a silhouette within the air.

The silhouette gradually solidified, forming the image of a person.

Upon seeing this figure, the hearts of the Heaven Emperor, Lang Qing and the others all sunk.

Gazing over, Yan Zhaoge saw that this was a middle-aged man in ancient attire and a crown on his head. He looked around forty on the outside as he had deep, tranquil features and a piercing gaze.

This person resembled a sword that opened the heavens, yet did not reveal his sharpness. Simply standing there, he resembled a solitary peak that rose up loftily into the clouds, causing others to stare up in awe.

This stern, authoritative looking middle-aged man was the disciple of the late Exalted Gold Luminary and the current Sword Sovereign of the World beyond Worlds’ Three Sovereigns!

He was the lord of the central Jun Heaven Territory’s Kunlun Mountain’s Northern High Peak’s Jade Capital Crag.

The Sword Sovereign, Yue Zhenbei!

This image could not converse as it was simply a message from Yue Zhenbei which was a reply to his disciple from extradimensional space.

Only Bai Tao's trio had seen it before as the others present were seeing it now too.

“All my present accomplishments were only made possible for me by my respected Master.”

While the Sword Sovereign did not speak quickly, each of his words was filled with strength as it was like the collision of metals.

“My respected Master only left behind a single blood descendant. I will do all I can to ensure his safety, and I will do so even if Elder Jiang and Elder Yang are there.”

“I have kept my promise all these years. If someone else breaks it now, do not blame the sword in my hand for acknowledging no one!”

While this was a message from some time back, everyone present could still feel the domineering will and resolve that surged alongside it.

At this instant, from the Sword Sovereign who had originally not been emitting any sword energy suddenly emanated piercing sharpness which shook the world.

Terrifying sword-intent seemingly transcended the boundaries of space and time, descending in the present World beyond Worlds from the extradimensional space of the past.

Even the Female Emperor and the Heaven Emperor felt solemn as they saw all this.

The Elder Jiang and Elder Yang he had been referring to were none other than the other two Sovereigns of the World beyond Worlds!

At a time like this, whoever dared act lightly would have to face

the sword of the Sword Sovereign.

Even if he was facing the Earthly Sovereign and the Concealed Sovereign, the Sword Sovereign would still draw his sword in battle regarding this matter.

Looking towards the Northwestern Exalt Lian Zulin, the Southwestern Exalt Bai Tao said amiably, “Northwest Lian, please leave. My Jade Capital Crag will attempt to help in mediation regarding the object lost by your Red Sea in the future. If you do not leave now, you risk harming our future ties.”

Lian Zulin sighed, “Lian Zulin dares not forget that I owe the Sword Sovereign a debt of gratitude. Since this is a decree of the Sword Sovereign’s, I will abide by it. I only hope that the Sword Sovereign will help speak for my Red Sea’s lineage after locating that Xue Chuqing in the future.”

She turned and bowed deeply towards the image of the Sword Sovereign in the sky before turning and leaving.

The gazes of the Heaven Emperor, Zhuang Shen, Lang Qing and Daoist Oneheaven flickered simultaneously as a bad feeling arose in all their hearts.

Indeed, that black-clothed youth said, “That senior apprentice-uncle Yan and senior apprentice-brother Yan were able to safely defend the Royal Reed Sea is a testament of their capabilities.”

“Still, since you lot have specifically chosen the day of Broad Creed Mountain’s opening ceremony to visit, you would not be proper guests if you do not leave celebratory gifts behind before leaving.”

The Heaven Emperor frowned, “Jade Capital Crag is being too overbearing. This humble Daoist is willing to let this matter go on account of the Sword Sovereign. Still, the Sword Sovereign is not almighty within the World beyond Worlds, able to obscure the heavens with a wave of a hand.”

“You people have great enmity with senior apprentice-uncle Yan and senior apprentice-brother Yan of Broad Creed Mountain,” Bai Tao sighed, shaking his head, “My Master cherishes talent as seeing how hard it has been for Daoism to return to a flourishing state, with cultivation being a hard thing for us all, he can let this go. Otherwise, even if Qilin Cliff were dissatisfied, he would still not let this go just like that.”

“This now is merely a reminder by my Master.”

The pupils of the Heaven Emperor, Lang Qing and the others abruptly dilated!

“So what if we are overbearing?” That black-clothed youth had an indifferent expression on his face, “It was you who came looking for a fight. And now, you think you can leave just like that?”

He turned and said to Yan Zhaoge and Yan Di, “This is my Master’s first celebratory gift. He says that he will pay a visit in person to congratulate you upon returning to the World beyond Worlds in the future.”

Before his words had fallen, the image of the Sword Sovereign condensed into a streak of sword-light in mid-air which descended before Yan Zhaoge and Yan Di.

“Thank you, senior apprentice-uncle Yue,” Yan Zhaoge blinked, looking at his father.

Yan Di smiled, “Since it is the sword, I will leave it to you then.”

Hearing his words, Yan Zhaoge raised a hand and received that sword-light.

The scenes before his eyes instantly changed.

A streak of light that was bright to the extreme surfaced within the dim, chaotic primordial universe.

The light split apart the chaotic primordial universe as earth,

water, wind and fire were scattered all around, flowing chaotically before finally settling down again.

Yin and yang were distinctly separated, the vast wilderness opening with clear qi rising upwards and turbid qi descending.

A brand new world of creation was thus opened, heaven, earth and causality forged!

In this majestic scene, the powerful concept which opened the heavens and split the earth rampaged unstoppably through the universe!

“Good sword,” Yan Zhaoge praised as he looked in the direction of the Heaven Emperor and co.

Upon seeing that sword-light, the Heaven Emperor sighed, speaking no further as he turned and instantly vanished amidst space.

The Western Exalt Lang Qing and the Eastern Exalt Daoist Oneheaven did the same as they expanded their own miraculous methods, seeking to speedily leave the Royal Reed Sea.

Still, as Yan Zhaoge unleashed this sword, the sword-light in his hand vanished.

The next instant, the silhouetted impression of a sword flashed through mid-air.

That sword shadow resembled a banner whilst also an axe as it easily broke through space.

Three muffled groans simultaneously resounded.

The Western Exalt Lang Qing who had transformed into formless and shapeless space was forcibly jostled out from space, his body distorted at various weird angles.

Daoist Oneheaven who had unleashed An Instant’s Thunder and instantly blazed all his true essence surged forth with that instantaneous thunder, yet was defeated by a single sword which



slashed off his right arm.

The Heaven Emperor had executed Heaven Earth Within Sleeve, yet his sleeve instantly broke apart.

Heavy earth arose from within his sleeve along with a lush green tree that towered into the heavens.

The next moment, however, the great earth shattered as the massive tree was felled about its trunk!

# HSSB 1043: An Exalt perishes

---

One sword opening the heavens, breaking through all that stood in its path.

While there was only this single sword, the Heaven Emperor's trio showed no intention of doing further battle as they hurriedly left.

The intent of destruction was not apparent amidst the broken space as yin and yang were distinctly separated along with the birth of the four phenomena, as if a whole new world was now to be born.

“This is the Illusory Jade Heaven Opening Sword? It is well deserving of its reputation indeed,” After gazing at the sword-light as it vanished into the distance, Yan Zhaoge retracted his gaze.

The Southern Exalt Zhuang Shen was still standing there calmly at this moment.

He had a rather strange expression on his face as he looked at Yan Zhaoge and Yan Di, as if he was seeing them anew for the first time.

Yan Zhaoge was looking at Zhuang Shen too.

The Southwestern Exalt Bai Tao said, “Southern Zhuang, you...”

Zhuang Shen's snowy white hair scattered in the wind, “I am unable to tell if obtaining the Later Earth Text or killing all of you is viewed to be more important by the Heaven Emperor.”

“Still, for me, Zhuang Shen, while it may have been that phoenix bone that was more important before, this has already long since ceased to be the case.”

“The Heaven Emperor was willing to leave because having become a True Immortal, he still has hope,” Zhuang Shen said mildly, “So long as the Earthly Sovereign and the Concealed

Sovereign are willing to make a move and suppress the Sword Sovereign together, he will still have a chance.”

Still, after today’s battle, Zhuang Shen already knew that he no longer had a chance remaining like the Heaven Emperor.

Being a True Immortal, the Heaven Emperor was still lofty and exalted.

While Zhuang Shen too acknowledged that as time passed, with the strength and potential of Yan Zhaoge and Yan Di, so long as they attained the Human Exalt stage, they would have no need to fear the Heaven Emperor, that still required time at the end of the day as it was not actually set in stone.

Yet, in the case of him, Zhuang Shen, the current Yan Zhaoge and Yan Di could already compete with him, a Human Exalt.

Meanwhile, this father and son was one a seventh level Martial Saint, the other an eighth level Martial Saint.

Just thinking about this, Zhuang Shen’s heart would feel heavy.

He had the ominous foreboding that if he could not defeat them today, it would be even more impossible for him to do so in the future.

Martial practitioners at the level of Zhuang Shen would definitely be filled with confidence, firmly believing in their own strength as they would not lightly be convinced of the superiority of others.

Still, feeling a sudden premonition regarding something that was related to himself at his current cultivation level, these would be very accurate rather than baseless most of the time.

This was especially so as he saw the Grand Simplicity Splendour Cloud above Yan Di’s head, which caused his hopes to be dashed for good.

If he could obtain Tang Yonghao’s phoenix bone from Golden

Court Mountain and obtain the true intent of the dawn mist of moral virtue, he would be able to simultaneously cultivate the Five Virtues.

With the Earlier Heaven Five Virtues, he would be impenetrable by all arts, existing alongside the heavens and the earth as he could only be extinguished when they were destroyed.

This was one of the peak defensive methods of Daoism as it possessed extremely shocking defensive power.

While it was merely the addition of a single Virtue, it would be just so much stronger than with the current Zhuang Shen who was bolstered by four Virtues.

Yet, Grand Simplicity that was at the head of the earlier heaven Grand Cosmos Five Manifestations of the Grand Clear lineage could restrict the cohabiting Five Virtues!

With that, he could really only sigh that fate was playing terrible tricks on him.

Zhuang Shen exhaled slowly, gazing at Yan Zhaoge, “I came here today to settle the enmity between us once and for all. Either you die or I perish.”

“With things having developed to this extent, they have completely surpassed my predictions. Yet, there is ultimately no difference.”

“If you are stronger, you will kill me. If I am stronger, I will kill you,” He said slowly, “Aside from these, I have never considered a third way to end this today.”

Yan Di now spoke, “Since you have these intentions, my Broad Creed Mountain will face you properly as martial practitioners.”

He flew into the air, arriving before Zhuang Shen, “My son killed your son. Since you want revenge, let us two fathers bring an end to this matter.”

A slight disturbance arose amongst the guests atop Broad Creed Mountain who had come to view the ceremony.

Yan Di undoubtedly meant that he wanted to duel this Exalt to the death.

No one was concerned about whether Yan Di was strong enough to do so. This had already been proven by the earlier battle.

Many people were surprised that Yan Di was actually still willing to do so even with the Female Emperor, Cao Jie and Liu Zhenggu present and Broad Creed Mountain holding the advantage.

These experts, however, did not appear surprised by this as they actually all nodded.

The Northeastern Exalt Liu Zhenggu looked at the Female Emperor Jie Mingkong and her entourage, “If the Heaven Emperor had not acted, I believe that the Female Emperor would not have appeared either?”

“After this battle, I will personally attend and offer congratulations to Broad Creed Mountain in their opening ceremony,” The Female Emperor had a mild expression on her face as she did not deny Liu Zhenggu’s words.

While the Sword Sovereign would look out for the descendants of his Master, he would not simply protect them heedlessly.

If one was not tempered by experiences, they would not grow.

Of course, the goal of these tempering experiences was to grow and not to send one to their death.

When a threat which clearly surpassed the tolerable limits appeared, the current number one sword of the World beyond Worlds which had been sheathed for many years could be relied on to be unsheathed once more.

If he himself was not in the World beyond Worlds, he would request others to help on his behalf.

The Female Emperor had had similar considerations in lending a hand because of the relationship between their predecessors.

If no existence like the Heaven Emperor had made a move, the Female Emperor would also not have intervened.

It was just that looking at the Later Earth Text that flickered with radiance at this moment, the Female Emperor too was filled with admiration. She had not thought that even without her appearing, Yan Zhaoge and Broad Creed Mountain would still have had a fighting chance.

As a result, she felt greatly admiring of Yan Zhaoge and Yan Di.

It was the same for the three descendants of the Sword Sovereign's lineage as well.

Zhuang Shen turned to look at Yan Di, replying slowly, "That's fine too."

Yan Di nodded before brandishing his sabre and cleaving towards Zhuang Shen.

Zhuang Shen went forth to meet him, sparks flying as their sabres collided.

Above Yan Di's head, streams of qi expanded within the cloud of chaos which resembled a blossoming lotus.

As the battle continued, the Grand Simplicity Splendour Cloud suddenly expanded and surrounded the two.

What remained before everyone's eyes was only that blurry cloud and specks of light that flickered within.

Yan Zhaoge ended the Earth Mother Dao Ritual, looking up and gazing at the Grand Simplicity Splendour Cloud.

Enveloped by the Grand Simplicity Splendour Cloud, Zhuang Shen had no way of undergoing nirvanic rebirth.

Still, the Grand Simplicity Splendour Cloud that was in this state was also no longer able to offer Yan Di protection.

Yan Di's fighting style was just like always.

Clashing head-on in a battle of life and death, deciding victory in a single battle rather than slowly exchanging blows with his opponent.

While people said that Zhuang Shen was proficient in defence and weaker at offence, this was only in relation to other Exalts.

The attack of a Human Exalt was always deadly and fatal to most ninth level Martial Saint experts.

Looking from the exterior of the chaotic cloud, all appeared peaceful, with no ripples being visible whatsoever.

Still, everyone knew that the battle unfolding within must be perilous to the extreme.

Finally, the cloud expanded as that lotus of chaos slowly reopened.

Bright golden light arose from within, transforming into a pillar of light which shot into the heavens.

Within the pillar of light stood a figure, his white hair scattered and his features handsome as there was a golden Wutong tree that was dense with greenery above his head.

This was precisely the Southern Exalt Zhuang Shen.

All those atop Broad Creed Mountain had shocked, uncertain looks on their faces whereas Yan Zhaoge, Jie Mingkong, Liu Zhenggu and the others all smiled in unison.

The next moment, the golden Wutong tree above Zhuang Shen's head began swiftly shrivelling up with its branches and leaves falling, transforming into a golden rain of light and splattering all around as it filled the sky.

With the border as their centre, half the domains of the southeastern Yang Heaven Territory and the southern Blazing Heaven Territory were bathed amidst a golden rain of light at this

moment.

Yan Di's figure now arose from the Grand Simplicity Splendour Cloud, arriving before Zhuang Shen.

Zhuang Shen's lips twitched slightly.

Then, without being able to emit any sound, he too transformed into a rain of light that gradually dispersed.

An Exalt thus perished right there and then.



# HSSB 1044: Father and son, Duo Fallen Deities they are

---

Yan Di was somewhat silent as he looked at the vanishing Zhuang Shen before him.

Meanwhile, the Southeastern Exalt Cao Jie and the Southwestern Exalt Bai Tao had rather complex expressions on their faces as well.

The two of them had both had quite a number of conflicts with Zhuang Shen who occupied the southern Blazing Heaven Territory before.

Seeing their longtime enemy perish at this moment, they simply shook their heads slightly.

Yan Zhaoge walked over to Yan Di's side and cast an inquiring gaze at him, to which he nodded, saying, "This does not affect the upcoming ceremony."

He looked at the Female Emperor, Cao Jie, Bai Tao and Liu Zhenggu, cupping his hands towards them, "Since that is so, the enmity between our sect and the southern Blazing Heaven Territory's Wutong Slope is at an end for now. As for whatever remains, we can speak of it in the future. Our opening ceremony today continues as scheduled."

"Everyone, our Broad Creed Mountain is honoured at your presence, having prepared some meagre wine to enjoy for you who have come from far away. Please make yourselves at home."

The Female Emperor Jie Mingkong straightforwardly said, "I already intended this in having come here today."

Yan Di and Yan Zhaoge exchanged glances, the two tacitly guiding the important guests into their seats together.

Yan Zhaoge's Northern Ocean Clone flew away from the

Mountain.

Just as that black-clothed youth had said, since they had come, how could they leave without leaving anything behind?

In borrowing the sword of the Sword Sovereign to injure the Heaven Emperor and those others, Yan Zhaoge had not merely wounded them.

Looking over amidst space, the Northern Ocean Clone saw three treasured-lights flickering in three different directions.

One of the treasured-lights was comparatively dim as it originated from a massive, sooty-looking orb.

This treasured orb was raised atop a palm and connected to a shoulder that had been hacked off.

It was clearly the Eye of the Thunder Emperor fragment within the hand of Daoist Oneheaven.

This Eye of the Thunder Emperor fragment was extremely massive and relatively complete, amounting to more than half of the whole thing.

Still, having experienced that earlier eruption, this Sacred Artifact fragment was currently devoid of energy as it seemed as though it had fallen into a deep slumber.

Seeing this, the Northern Ocean Clone smiled satisfiedly before reaching out and collecting it.

On the other side, there was another treasure. While it flickered with a lustrous radiance, it seemed transparent and formless in itself as it hovered silently amidst space.

After nearing it, going by its contours that flickered with light, this treasure looked like satin.

“So it is Splendid Gem Thousand Yarn,” The Northern Ocean Clone identified it by its characteristics.

This object originated from the Western Exalt Lang Qing, being

an extremely rare and precious treasure.

This object was produced neither in the World beyond Worlds nor in the Eight Extremities World, the Vast Ocean World, the Floating Gate World and the various other lower worlds.

It had not been produced even in the great thousand worlds of pre-Great Calamity times.

This was a special material which could only be found amidst endless extradimensional space.

Growing neither in soil nor in water was a treasured tree which grew amidst primordial space itself, receiving nutrients from space as transparent, formless strands of silk were born.

Collecting these strands of silk, refining them and selecting one in a thousand before putting them all together one by one, one would have obtained a limited amount of Splendid Gem Thousand Yarn.

The treasured tree itself was extremely rare in the first place. In order to obtain a foot of Splendid Gem Thousand Yarn, the collection of silk from over a hundred such trees would be needed.

After the silk had been harvested, the treasured tree would wither away and die.

This Splendid Gem Thousand Yarn of Lang Qing's had probably consumed upward of ten thousand of these treasured trees.

There was probably only Lang Qing who could collect such a great amount of Splendid Gem Thousand Yarn in the World beyond Worlds, the Three Sovereigns and Five Emperors aside.

Also, even if Lang Qing wished to harvest and collect so much of this, a lengthy period of time would still be required.

Also, this treasure was an extremely rare artifact forging material.

Lang Qing's Splendid Gem Thousand Yarn was of extremely high

quality in the first place. Even then, if it was further refined, it could be used as one of the materials for forging an Immortal Artifact too.

Yan Zhaoge naturally accepted this with glee.

After collecting the Eye of the Thunder Emperor fragment and the Splendid Gem Thousand Yarn, the Northern Ocean Clone looked at the final item.

This should have come from the Heaven Emperor.

It was a small, intricate jade flask.

While it did not look very remarkable, since it was something that the Heaven Emperor kept on him, Yan Zhaoge would naturally not underestimate its utility.

The Northern Ocean Clone carefully kept the jade flask before turning and returning to Broad Creed Mountain.

Atop Broad Creed Mountain, Yan Di was currently at the main seat within the great hall on Heaven Rising Peak. After offering prayers to Broad Creed Mountain's ancestors, he said, "Sound the drum."

Yan Zhaoge was naturally the one who was sounding the drum at this moment.

As he struck the golden bell, Broad Creed Mountain's opening ceremony could be considered as having officially commenced.

The youngsters who were waiting at the foot of the mountain as they prepared to follow the rites for entering Broad Creed Mountain's lineage began successively ascending the mountain as prompted.

The great battle earlier had been at too high a level as it was not something they could spectate.

Still, this did not hinder these youngsters who were soon to enter the sect from knowing the eventual conclusion of the great battle.

Three Sovereigns Five Emperors, Exalts of Ten Territories.

These words had been embedded deeply within the hearts of all those in the World beyond Worlds for many long years.

Those who had a desire to cultivate in martial arts would generally all have heard of them.

While they had once thought this to be incomparably distant, it was now right before their very eyes.

Amongst the honoured guests who were viewing the ceremony, in the foremost position was one of the Five Emperors, the Female Emperor who was an Immortal descended into the mortal world after having pushed open the door to Immortality in the past.

While the Brocade Emperor had not come as had been rumoured, the solitary Female Emperor was probably rather more difficult to invite.

Aside from the Female Emperor, there were also a grand total of three of the Ten Exalts, the Southeastern Exalt, the Northeastern Exalt and the Southwestern Exalt who were attending.

A personal disciple of the Sword Sovereign of the Three Sovereigns had also arrived.

Next, accompanying the Southeastern Exalt in viewing the ceremony were also the martial practitioners of Golden Court Mountain that had always been the hegemon of the southeastern Yang Heaven Territory.

All the prominent powers of the southeastern Yang Heaven Territory who presided over a region had sent representatives over to offer their congratulations.

In Broad Creed Mountain's official opening ceremony this time, the guests had arrived on a scale that had truly never been seen before in the World beyond Worlds for the past several centuries.

If one said that this extraordinary lineup was due to their

connections, that earlier incident had sufficiently displayed Broad Creed Mountain's strength.

The Lord of Phoenix Ritual Mountain's Wutong Slope, the Southern Exalt Zhuang Shen who ruled over the southern Blazing Heaven Territory, had first been defeated by a disciple of Broad Creed Mountain, Yan Zhaoge, before being slain right there and then in a one versus one battle by Broad Creed Mountain's Chief, Yan Di, afterwards.

Three Sovereigns Five Emperors, Exalts of Ten Territories.

They were experts of legend who were deeply rooted in the minds of those who lived in the World beyond Worlds.

One of the Ten Exalts, Zhuang Shen, had just perished before Broad Creed Mountain at the hands of Yan Di.

In just this short time that had passed, this incident had already caused waves in the southern and southeastern Territories as it would also definitely spread rapidly throughout the rest of the World Beyond Worlds.

The shock of an Exalt's death naturally far surpassed the arrival of three Exalts come to offer their congratulations.

What was even more shocking, beyond the shadow of a doubt, was the fact that one of the Five Emperors who were above the Ten Exalts, the Heaven Emperor, had actually been repelled and denied by Broad Creed Mountain.

Even if the Female Emperor had not arrived, even without the descent of the Sword Sovereign's mighty authority, the Heaven Emperor would actually still not have been able to gain any advantage in the Royal Reed Sea.

As a martial practitioner of the mortal realm, Yan Zhaoge had withstood an Emperor of the Immortal realm. This feat was destined to enter the annals of history, becoming a legend!

All this caused those youngsters who were about to enter Broad

Creed Mountain to feel extremely excited and spirited as they felt honoured as well.

Those guests who had come to view the ceremony were naturally filled with admiration as well.

Someone could not help but murmur, “A lineage’s father and son, Duo Fallen Deities they are.”

# HSSB 1045: Gradually becoming the well-deserved East Peak of Daoism

---

“Such a thing being said by you-it is rare indeed.”

That middle-aged man who had come with Bai Tao was his junior apprentice-brother, Wang Pu, who was also a personal disciple of the Sword Sovereign Yue Zhenbei.

He appeared rather inconspicuous next to the Female Emperor Jie Mingkong and the Southwestern Exalt Bai Tao.

Still, he too was a late Immortal Bridge Martial Saint, a top ranked expert amongst the disciples of the Sword Sovereign's lineage at the Northern High Peak's Jade Capital Crag.

While the Southwestern Exalt Bai Tao was the head disciple of the Sword Sovereign, he was usually to be found in the southwestern Vermillion Heaven Territory as very rarely would he return to the central Jun Heaven Territory's Kunlun Mountain.

Thus, it was usually Wang Pu who helped to take care of the general affairs at Jade Capital Crag.

Looking at the black-clothed youth beside him, he felt rather emotional at this moment, “In the decades since you entered our lineage, the number of times I have heard you praising others can be counted on just a single hand.”

The black-clothed youth said calmly, “Well, that is because senior apprentice-uncle Yan and junior apprentice-brother Yan really are strong.”

Looking at Yan Zhaoge and Yan Di, Wang Pu too sighed in admiration, “Indeed dragons amongst men.”

He had still been intending to check out the strength of Yan Zhaoge and his father before this. Thinking back on this now, he could not help but smile as he just shook his head repeatedly.



Sitting beside the Southeastern Exalt Cao Jie, the Northeastern Exalt Liu Zhenggu felt rather emotional too, “This old man was originally just going to act once on behalf of Bright Connection Hu’s descendant to give myself peace of mind. I really never thought that things might actually turn out like this.”

“I recall Yan Zhaoge when I first met him. Back then, he had yet to develop. However, within a mere span of merely around ten years, he already has the ability to stir the winds and the rains within the World beyond Worlds.”

Liu Zhenggu said admiringly, “Such a youth is hard to come by indeed. It is the same for his father.”

Cao Jie looked slightly out of sorts with a rather complex expression on his face as he thought of what Yan Zhaoge had previously told him.

“To be honest, I took a trip to the lands of the Immortal Court and already know some things.”

Remembering this, Cao Jie felt it to be regretful indeed.

The more outstanding Yan Zhaoge was, the more he felt this to be a real pity.

Looking at Bai Tao and Wang Pu’s lot by the side, Cao Jie sighed inwardly, “I only hope that the Sword Sovereign can think of a solution.”

As compared to the Female Emperor, Cao Jie and Wang Pu etcetera, it was another thing that the other guests were feeling.

Bai Ziming who had had dealings with Yan Zhaoge before and hailed from the Floating Gate World, having afterwards become a guest Elder at Golden Court Mountain, felt especially emotional at this moment.

In but around a mere decade, Broad Creed Mountain had already become a massive entity whose strength even surpassed that of Golden Court Mountain.

Those who had felt that it was undeserving of the name of the East Peak of Daoism in the past were actually gradually beginning to feel that it might just have come to be somewhat deserving of it.

Meanwhile, he, Bai Ziming, was still affiliated to and reliant on Golden Court Mountain.

While both hailed from a lower world, the difference between them was really as wide as that between the heavens and the earth.

The Heavy Sun Sect was clearly still the number one power over in the Floating Gate World as it was backed by experts in the World beyond Worlds too. Still, facing a small, rebuilt Towering Wave Pavilion, they still had to show them much respect, not daring to slight them in the least.

The reason for this was none other than the fact that Yan Di's Master, the former Chief of Broad Creed Mountain Yuan Zhengfeng, had some close ties with Towering Wave Pavilion, even having entered a conflict with the Heavy Sun Sect over this before.

Due to Broad Creed Mountain, Towering Wave Pavilion was virtually like a grand ole monarch in the Floating Gate World right now.

While the Heavy Sun Sect did not like feeling so helpless, the problem was that even without Yan Zhaoge and Yan Di making a move, just Yuan Zhengfeng who currently already stood at the peak of Seeing Divinity Martial Saints and could ascend the Immortal Bridge at any moment was sufficient to sweep through the Heavy Sun Sect of the World beyond Worlds.

Great Snowy Mountain that Bai Ziming hailed from naturally had no need to do so. Still, watching all this, they felt undecipherable emotions that were hard to express.

Learning about Yan Di's origins now, Bai Ziming felt no envy or jealousy as he instead felt much more able to accept things than before.

Just thinking about this, Bai Ziming could not help but smile wryly.

Pavilion Lord Gu Hong of the North Sea Sword Pavilion was seated alongside Chief Zhou Haosheng of the Dim Darkness Sect.

Both of them represented local powers of the Royal Reed Sea who had experienced the great tribulation brought about by Shen Lingzi back then and survived to tell the tale.

The heavens of the Royal Reed Sea had changed as they gained a new hegemon.

They were of no mind to resist at all like when the Grand Xuan Dynasty had claimed hegemony over the Royal Reed Sea back then.

This was not because Yan Zhaoge and Broad Creed Mountain had always been on pretty good terms with them.

Instead, it was because the current Broad Creed Mountain was just too much stronger than the Grand Xuan Dynasty of the past.

With the gap between them having surpassed a certain level, the other powers of the Royal Reed Sea instead lost all interest in resisting as they simply obediently acted with Broad Creed Mountain acting as their spiritual supreme leader.

Just thinking about how the Radiant Light Sect and Copper Men Island that had resisted the Grand Xuan Dynasty with them that year were already no more, the two inevitably felt rather emotional.

Zhou Haosheng and the other Dim Darkness Sect martial practitioners felt especially intense emotions over how the Radiant Light Sect which originated from the same source as them, once their longtime enemy, now no longer existed.

“Forgive this Gu for being nosy, but I think it would be best if Chief Zhou just accepts things as they are with the Dim Radiant Wheel,” Gu Hong kindly sent to Zhou Haosheng via sound transmission.

Zhou Haosheng smiled wryly, “You overthink things, Pavilion Lord Gu. First not mentioning the reminder of Golden Court Mountain that obtaining the Dim Radiant Wheel would actually be a calamity rather than fortune, even if this old man was adamant, how would I have any chance?”

He sighed, “It is good enough that our Dim Darkness Sect survived that great tribulation. Now, this old man simply wants to pass down the legacy of our ancestors in the hopes that we will be able to develop and grow strong in the future.”

“The Royal Reed Sea is too small to contain Broad Creed Mountain.”

Hearing these words, Gu Hong nodded emphatically in agreement.

Gazing at the soon-to-be disciples of Broad Creed Mountain who had passed the tests and entered the great hall, he sighed, “They are widely accepting talents today.”

The two exchanged glances, actually both thinking of the same thing.

While this was the first time Broad Creed Mountain was accepting disciples in order to replenish its lack of manpower, their tests had still been strict and involving all areas.

Those who failed to pass these tests still might have the potential to develop into powerful experts.

Many representatives of the other powers who had come to Broad Creed Mountain this time were planning to metaphorically pick up the scraps.

Being located in close proximity and thus more easily benefiting, the North Sea Sword Pavilion and the Dim Darkness Sect would naturally not give up on such a chance.

Despite this sect which had only arrived in the World beyond Worlds over a decade ago rising over their heads to preside over

them, Gu Hong and Zhou Haosheng were feeling very calm right now.

Even without today's battle, they had already long since been convinced by the various miraculous achievements of Yan Zhaoge and Broad Creed Mountain over the years.

Besides accepting new disciples and gaining new blood in their opening ceremony this time, there was also an internal reshuffle within Broad Creed Mountain.

Those of the elder generation gradually began giving up their positions as they entered secluded cultivation and diligently focused on cultivating.

The roles of First Seat Elders of the sect's vital departments were already gradually increasingly coming to be taken up by their third generation disciples who had already grown up.

Those of the younger generation of the past were gradually coming to take centre stage.

Some of those who were stationed outside gradually began to display signs of Broad Creed Mountain's ever-increasing momentum.

This was something that many people were concerned about as they thus attempted to deduce Broad Creed Mountain's prospective developmental plans.

Still, what people paid most attention to was the fact that Yan Zhaoge who was already the most important, central figure of Broad Creed Mountain despite his youth did not assume any position in Broad Creed Mountain.

While this was somewhat unexpected, it seemed to be reasonable too.

While Yan Zhaoge was not assuming any position, no one would doubt the fact that his voice held the greatest weight in Broad Creed Mountain.

Not assuming any position entailed that he would be free to continue cultivating or move freely about outside for longer periods of time.

Whichever it would be, others would still pay attention to it nevertheless.

Everyone could not help but guess: what would this youth who stirred up the winds and rains of the World beyond Worlds do next?

# HSSB 1046: Shallow water cannot sustain true dragons

---

Yan Zhaoge's current strength and fame within Broad Creed Mountain were so high it was insane.

Even if he went to a vital department like the Assignment Hall, the Disciplinary Hall or the Martial Inheritance Hall, it would still feel like it was a waste of his talents.

The only possible exception was if he was to take over Broad Creed Mountain in the near future, becoming their new Chief.

In that case, he would have to familiarise himself with their usual affairs, hence gaining experience.

Otherwise, with Yan Zhaoge's current cultivation base and strength, what he should really be doing was continuing to cultivate and improving his abilities.

It could be said that this was still a world where power reigned over everything else.

In a clash between two forces, when the peak experts were battling and victory and defeat was uncertain, only then would things fall to the strength and quantity of those slightly inferior experts.

This principle similarly applied to Yan Di.

Therefore, since Yan Zhaoge had no official affairs to handle, what he was intending to do next was naturally something that would be paid attention to on a vast scale.

It would be fine if he remained in the Royal Reed Sea to cultivate. If he headed elsewhere, however, the eyes of the whole world would effectively be on him.

When he had taken a trip to the southern Blazing Heaven Territory previously, he had overturned the entire state of affairs

there. It would really be difficult for one not to pay attention to him now.

Originally, while Yan Zhaoge had mightily withstood the Heaven Emperor, causing him to meet with failure at Broad Creed Mountain, out of considerations for his own as well as Broad Creed Mountain's safety, he would still have to stay and defend Broad Creed Mountain.

Only when he could resist a True Immortal without the assistance of the Later Earth Text of the Earth Queen in the Royal Reed Sea would he be able to leave.

Everyone believed that that day would come for sure as it was not even so far away. Still, before that happened, Yan Zhaoge had to remain stably stationed in the Royal Reed Sea.

Still, this had all changed along with the appearances of the Female Emperor Jie Mingkong as well as the Southwestern Exalt Bai Tao and co.

As a descendant of the Exalted Gold Luminary and the junior apprentice-nephew of the Sword Sovereign, one of the World beyond Worlds' Three Sovereigns, Yan Zhaoge would be able to easily and freely traverse the World beyond Worlds in most situations.

With the Earthly Sovereign and Concealed Sovereign not yet having expressed their stance on this matter, the Heaven Emperor too would dare not make any reckless moves.

With that, Yan Zhaoge did not have to stay and defend Broad Creed Mountain as he could instead act freely.

With Yan Di's background having been revealed, the identities of he and Yan Zhaoge as well as their relationship with the Sword Sovereign and the death of the Southern Exalt Zhuang Shen were set to be the most shocking news in the World beyond Worlds in recent years.



Still, while it might seem strange, after Yan Zhaoge had withstood the Heaven Emperor and Yan Di had slain the Southern Exalt, most people did not find the idea to be very difficult to accept at all.

Despite feeling rather envious regarding Yan Zhaoge and Yan Di's good fortune, that was all that there was as no one felt as though Broad Creed Mountain had merely risen through luck alone.

Most people were thinking that this was only to be as expected as descendants of legends.

They were more concerned about what Broad Creed Mountain would be doing now.

It was clear that the shallow waters of the Royal Reed Sea were already hard pressed to sustain a true dragon like them.

The strength that Broad Creed Mountain had displayed in their opening ceremony today surpassed even that of Golden Court Mountain.

What they would be doing from here on out was a question that was weighing on everyone's minds.

This was especially so for Phoenix Ritual Mountain's Wutong Slope who had already been tragically drained of talent during the battle at Circumference Mountain that year as they had completely lost their pillar of support with the death of the Southern Exalt Zhuang Shen.

The heavens of the southern Blazing Heaven Territory would inevitably be changing.

Would Broad Creed Mountain make use of this chance to advance west, becoming the new hegemon of the south?

"What exactly are the thoughts of the Earthly Sovereign and the Concealed Sovereign on this?"

As the opening ceremony ended, the various guests departed. Those who remained were all peak figures who shared a close relationship with Broad Creed Mountain.

Stroking his lower chin, Yan Zhaoge asked, “While the Earthly Sovereign is still in extradimensional space, the Earth Exalt is in the World beyond Worlds.”

“The Concealed Sovereign himself is in secluded cultivation at Kunlun Mountain’s Restful Immortal Valley.”

The Female Emperor had already resealed herself in ice by now. While she knew all that was going on in the outside world, she would again no longer speak.

Yan Zhaoge looked towards the trio from Jade Capital Crag, “Does this mean that the two Sovereigns have tacitly consented to senior apprentice-uncle Yue’s decision?”

“They have generally always kept peace with one another all along,” The Southwestern Exalt Bai Tao said, “As long as you and senior apprentice-uncle Yan are okay, Master will not make things difficult for the Heaven Emperor.”

Yan Zhaoge, Yan Di, Yuan Zhengfeng and the others of Broad Creed Mountain exchanged looks as they thought, “The Sword Sovereign and the Earthly Sovereign probably do not see eye to eye in many matters!”

Meanwhile, the Earthly Sovereign had likely been in the know regarding Yan Di’s matter too.

The Earthly Sovereign’s lineage should not have been aware of the specifics, only knowing that the late Exalted Gold Luminary had descendants who were still of this world.

There might have been an agreement slash compromise between the Sword Sovereign and the Earthly Sovereign to ensure that Yan Di’s growth was not intervened with.

While the Sword Sovereign had not supported the decision of the

Earthly Sovereign with regard to the matter of the Dim Radiant Emperor Yin Tianxia from back then, he had not stood in opposition to it too.

The Kunlun Nine Luminaries had gradually become legends wherein few amongst the World beyond Worlds' middle and lower tier martial practitioners as well as ordinary citizens knew of them. Here, some entity must definitely have manipulated things to diminish overall awareness on this matter.

Despite the Sword Sovereign's respect for his Master, the Exalted Gold Luminary, he had still not been outwardly opposed to such a thing. This was probably part of said agreement too.

Now, more than two thousand years later, Yan Di had finally truly been born into this world from the Grand Simplicity Splendour Cloud, having grown into an adult and returned to the World beyond Worlds.

How would the global situation of the World beyond Worlds develop from here on out?

"The Concealed Sovereign would not intervene unless Master slew the Heaven Emperor," Wang Pu said, "It should be said the Concealed Sovereign is indifferent to the vast majority of all beneath the heavens. Generally, he tacitly supports the Earthly Sovereign's decisions, seldom voicing an opinion of his own."

It was not that the Earthly Sovereign had very deep ties with the Heaven Emperor or something like that.

Instead, all Emperors of the Immortal realm were extremely precious to Daoism who had declined greatly following the Great Calamity.

Bar some unique circumstances, the Three Sovereigns would do their best to preserve their lives.

On hearing this, Yan Zhaoge pondered in silence.

After listening to all this, he really felt increasingly curious about

the situation regarding the Dim Radiant Emperor Yin Tianxia and the Bright Connection Emperor Hu Yuexin.

As those of Broad Creed Mountain as well as Wang Pu and the others were there too, Yan Zhaoge did not bring up the matter of his mother and the Immortal Court for the time being as he decided that he would ask it in private later on.

Wang Pu now said, “Due to his past ties with Grand Master, it is likely that the Concealed Sovereign will help neither side. Still, whatever decision the Earthly Sovereign will make is still difficult to say.”

His voice turned more solemn somewhat, “While no one from the Southern High Peak’s Qilin Cliff directly intervened this time, Qilin Cliff was still standing behind the Heaven Emperor and Zhuang Shen somewhat.”

“The treasure that broke the flow of the Dynasty River earlier was very likely the Later Heaven Breath Soil of the Earthly Sovereign’s lineage!”

Yan Zhaoge raised his brows lightly, “Oh? Later Heaven Breath Soil?”

Wang Pu explained, “When we set off from Kunlun Mountain, we discovered abnormalities in the flow of spiritual qi of the earth veins at the Screen Moat Snowy Mountain where the Dynasty River’s source is that actually impeded its flow.”

“After checking it out at the Screen Moat Snowy Mountain, we discovered that the source of the river was blocked. After dispelling this, the Female Emperor discovered that the treasure that impeded the flow of the Dynasty River had undergone special care such that it immediately disappeared without a trace after being dispelled.”

“Still, there are few treasures with such efficacious uses. With even the Female Emperor being unable to preserve it, its owner is

virtually certain.”

Wang Pu said, “As we have no solid proof in hand, everyone can only act ignorant on the surface.”

Yan Zhaoge stroked his lower chin as he pondered.

He suddenly had a speculation. Could the Earth Exalt Wang Zhengcheng be planning something else?

# HSSB 1047: Kunlun's God Shocking Dragon, Youth Enlightening Eight Sects

---

The Earth Exalt Wang Zhengcheng had no personal enmity with Yan Zhaoge and Broad Creed Mountain.

If one were to say that there existed any points of tension between them, there were two of these.

First was the Dim Radiant Wheel that Yan Zhaoge possessed.

Second was Yan Zhaoge's mother, Xue Chuqing.

Both of these matters were likely related to something that the Dim Radiant Emperor Yin Tianxia and the Bright Connection Emperor Hu Yuexin had done that year which the Earthly Sovereign was opposed to.

The Concealed Sovereign was likely on the Earthly Sovereign's side in this matter.

If it was just because of the Dim Radiant Wheel, Yan Zhaoge was not difficult to find. Those of the Earthly Sovereign's lineage at Qilin Cliff would probably have coming looking for him long ago.

Therefore, this could only be about tracking down Xue Chuqing's unpredictable movements.

Xue Chuqing herself was not important. What was important was some treasure she possibly grasped or some secret she might know.

This was what the Earth Exalt Wang Zhengcheng was truly concerned about.

For this Lord of the central Jun Heaven Territory and grand steward of the entire World beyond Worlds, since Yan Zhaoge and Yan Di were supported by the Sword Sovereign, the Heaven Emperor, Zhuang Shen and the others would naturally be unable to do anything to them.

Under such circumstances, there was no need for him to pay attention to the enmity between their two sides.

He naturally placed his attention on other affairs instead.

“Is there any such possibility? He wishes to make use of this chance to see the name of us father and son become renowned throughout the World beyond Worlds, with everyone hence knowing about the relationship between us and senior apprentice-uncle Yue. Using this, he may mislead mother.”

Yan Zhaoge sent to Yan Di via sound transmission, “As a result, mother might erroneously believe that the Sword Sovereign who neither supported nor opposed her before will protect her now, thus ceasing to hide and coming to look for us.”

Yan Di’s tone was icy cold, “There is such a possibility. Still, it is wishful thinking if he is planning this.”

“He probably does not want to enter a direct conflict with senior apprentice-uncle Yue’s lineage of Jade Capital Crag,” Yan Zhaoge exhaled slowly, “Instead, he wishes to intercept her partway through, not giving us a chance to know at all. Since her whereabouts were unknown before, let them remain unknown forever.”

Yan Di’s gaze flickered with a cold light as he pondered momentarily before saying, “While they will be keeping an eye on us after this, we too must keep an eye on them as well.”

“It is precisely so,” Yan Zhaoge nodded.

The Northeastern Exalt Liu Zhenggu now said, “Since the Earthly Sovereign and the Concealed Sovereign will not intervene directly, Broad Creed Mountain should have no major opposition in henceforth advancing westward into the southern Blazing Heaven Territory.”

“It will be around a hundred years from now that the Ten Directions Heart’s Will Formation is to be established. Bar any

major incidences, Southern Zhuang's death will not affect the overall situation of the World beyond Worlds."

With the deaths of many famed peak experts like Zhuang Shen, Peng He and Zhang Shuren, while Phoenix Ritual Mountain's Wutong Slope still had the ninth level Martial Saint 'Phoenix Crying Southern Territory' Mao Yuansheng, they were already destined to be unable to rule the southern Blazing Heaven Territory any longer.

In order to avoid Broad Creed Mountain and Golden Court Mountain finding trouble for them in the future, it might even be the case that Wutong Slope's lineage ended up going underground, perhaps even went elsewhere completely.

"Southern Zhuang was a notable persona. If Wutong Slope does not try any hidden schemes to harm us, our sect has no intention of pushing them unrelentingly to the brink, trying to wipe them all out," Yan Di said, "Still, if they refuse to give up, I would not mind ending this lineage of theirs for good."

The Southwestern Exalt Bai Tao said, "In the current World beyond Worlds, there is a small number of people who are only a mere half-step away from the Human Exalt stage and might possibly break through at any time."

While ordinary people might not know of this, people of their level had more knowledge of this kind.

"Still, you, senior apprentice-uncle Yan, as well as junior apprentice-brother Yan both possess remarkable strength. At the Immortal Bridge stage, you are already comparable to Exalts."

"While you may be lacking in terms of title, your strength is more than sufficient to reign over the south."

Bai Tao continued, "Just as Northeastern Liu said, the fact that one of the current Ten Exalts has now died should not affect things much. Also, there should be people coming to fill that spot very



soon.”

“Even if this is not the case, with the strength and potential that the two of you possess, you would definitely be able to ascend the Human Exalt stage far earlier than merely within a hundred years’ time.”

Cao Jie and Liu Zhenggu both nodded in agreement.

Actually, if someone were to immediately achieve a breakthrough into the Human Exalt stage and take over Zhuang Shen’s position now, it would really be extremely awkward.

Being on amicable terms with Golden Court Mountain, Broad Creed Mountain did not intend to expand their influence too greatly within the southeastern Yang Heaven Territory.

Still, they would not stand on ceremony for those other Territories.

If that really happened, how would the newly elected Southern Exalt deal with these two Immortal Bridge Martial Saints beneath his reign who were very likely more powerful than he was?

Also, these two Immortal Bridge Martial Saints were of the same family.

Let alone the newly ascended Exalts, even if it were another of the other nine current Exalts who came, besides the Upper Exalt Chen Qianhua and the Earth Exalt Wang Zhengcheng, it would be a tough job for any one of them to handle.

“It’s not that there are no exceptions...” The hearts of Cao Jie and Liu Zhenggu both jolted slightly as their gazes congregated on the same person.

Yan Zhaoge and Yan Di were actually also looking towards that black-clothed youth beside Bai Tao at this moment.

“Senior apprentice-brother Nie should be one of those who can attain the Human Exalt stage at any time, right?” Yan Zhaoge

asked.

A warm smile appeared on the black-clothed youth's usually cold, resilient face, "I can already do it now. Still, I will wait a little longer."

"I came here this time to congratulate senior apprentice-uncle Yan's and junior apprentice-brother Yan's Broad Creed Mountain. Still, it is not that our Jade Capital Crag is greedy for an Exalt position, seeking to be rulers of a Territory."

His tone was casual and breezy as if he was saying something which could not be any more normal.

Heard by anyone else, they would probably find this as shocking as thunder across a flat plain.

Still, all those present, including Yan Zhaoge, Yan Di, Yuan Zhengfeng and the others of Broad Creed Mountain did not find this to be any surprising at all.

The Heaven Emperor and the others had primarily placed their attention on the Female Emperor Jie Mingkong initially.

Still, when Bai Tao and the others had appeared, besides the Heaven Emperor whose expression was as per usual, Zhuang Shen, Lang Qing and the others clearly had vigilant expressions on their faces.

This was not just wariness of Jade Capital Crag which they hailed from. It was also wariness with regard to their martial prowess.

It was just that the Southwestern Exalt Bai Tao was not who Zhuang Shen and the others had been exceptionally concerned about.

It was that cool, silent black-clothed youth!

"Two centuries ago Little Sword God, one century ago Heavenly Young Master."

This was a rather widespread phrase in the World beyond

Worlds.

Besides this, there was another similarly famous line.

“Kunlun’s God Shocking Dragon, Youth Enlightening Eight Sects.”

The latter parts of both sayings referred to the same person, the former Heavenly Young Master and the current Upper Exalt, Chen Qianhua.

Before Chen Qianhua had attained the Human Exalt stage, in his travels about the World beyond Worlds, he had given pointers and brought enlightenment to eight major powers, aiding them in further refining their martial arts.

These eight major powers which were scattered about the World beyond Worlds had all become renowned lineages that presided over a region now.

The southeastern Yang Heaven Territory’s Green Peak High Plain’s Three Foot Mountain had only been one of them.

The eight great sects all had supreme martial arts which specialised in different areas as they even possessed vastly different styles. Still, they all had many experts as they were clouds and profound martial arts.

Yet, it was only because of the enlightenment from Chen Qianhua that the martial arts of these eight sects had achieved the flourishing state they were at today.

While Chen Qianhua had been young and yet to attain the Human Exalt stage at the time, he had already vaguely been worshipped and respected by these eight major sects as their overlord.

He possessed the wondrous reputation of ‘Youth Enlightening Eight Sects’.

The earlier part of the second phrase, ‘Kunlun’s God Shocking

Dragon', referred to another person.

This person's name was Nie Jingshen, or Nie Shocking God.

While he was younger than Long Xueji and Chen Qianhua, he was publicly acknowledged in the World beyond Worlds as yet another otherworldly genius following the Little Sword God and the Heavenly Young Master.

He was the final disciple of the Sword Sovereign Yue Zhenbei at Kunlun Mountain's Northern High Peak's Jade Capital Crag.

Shocking God Sword, Nie Shocking God.

It was rumoured that he was an orphan whom the Sword Sovereign had happened to meet by chance.

When they had met, the Sword Sovereign's sword had reverberated within its scabbard!

This oddity had caused the Sword Sovereign to feel startled and curious too as he had brought him back to Jade Capital Crag where he had raised him, meanwhile also christening him Nie Jingshen, or Nie Shocking God.

His name was Shocking God, his title was Shocking God, and his sword arts also shocked the world and caused all otherworldly spirits to weep in shock.

He had once battled to a draw with the lofty Northwestern Exalt Lian Zulin back in the past.

That had merely been simple sparring as they had let it end in a draw just like that.

They themselves aside, no one knew how things might have ended if they had battled to the death.

Lian Zulin had only said a phrase which had circulated widely afterwards.

Of the Sword Emperor's lineage, Shocking God reigns on top.

At the time, Nie Jingshen had been at the eighth level of the Martial Saint realm.

# HSSB 1048: Geniuses of Daoism

---

The current Nie Jingshen had already long since attained the ninth level of the Martial Saint realm.

At the same time, he was publicly acclaimed within the World beyond Worlds as the martial practitioner who was most likely to become a new Exalt.

Just like him, the likes of Qing Shuzi would be a mere step away from the Human Exalt stage as they could break through that bottleneck at any moment.

Still, even if the likes of them beat him to it, that would still not be anything worth being happy about at all.

Some gossipy people had once theorised something like this in the World beyond Worlds.

Amongst Martial Saints, it was indisputably the Upper Exalt Chen Qianhua who was ranked first.

The one who was ranked second was also obvious, this being the Earth Exalt, Wang Zhencheng.

Yet, the one who was ranked third was Nie Jingshen of the ninth level of the Martial Saint realm!

This had not received widespread acknowledgment due to the prestigious nature of the Ten Exalts.

Still, it was worth thinking about how Nie Jingshen's own senior apprentice-brother, the Southwestern Exalt Bai Tao, as well as the other Human Exalt experts, had all not flared up in dissatisfaction over such a saying.

At the present time, those who were in the know were actually all looking forward to seeing how things would be like when Nie Jingshen accomplished the Human Exalt stage.

The Little Sword God Long Xueji who had still been using the

fake name of Qian Xueji back then had been active for too short a time in the World beyond Worlds as fewer people knew of him now.

Rather than that, everyone wanted to see who exactly was the superior between the Heavenly Young Master and the Shocking God Sword.

And now, yet another new legend had arisen.

The phrase 'A lineage's father and son, Duo Fallen Deities they are' was currently beginning to spread rapidly within the World beyond Worlds.

The ones who were being evaluated as such were Yan Zhaoge and Yan Di, who were well deserving of their reputation in having mightily withstood the Heaven Emperor and slain the Southern Exalt in the battle of the Royal Reed Sea.

The person who had evaluated them as such was the current most outstanding younger generation expert of the World beyond Worlds, 'Shocking God Sword' Nie Jingshen.

It was the combination of these two that caused the wondrous reputation of the Yan Family's Duo Fallen Deities to swiftly seep into the hearts of those of the World beyond Worlds at a rapid pace.

Many people felt emotional at how the resurgence of Daoism really seemed to be happening now.

Apart from the Three Sovereigns and Five Emperors, numerous shocking geniuses had appeared in recent years.

Long Xueji who had made a fleeting but shocking appearance, the current number one Martial Saint Chen Qianhua, Nie Jingshen who was not an Exalt but surpassed some, and finally Yan Zhaoge and Yan Di who had both only risen to prominence over the course of the past decade or so.

These were all genius-like figures who only appeared once in a

hundred or even thousand years following the decline of Daoism in post-Great Calamity times.

Meanwhile, their collective appearance over the past couple of centuries caused people to feel that following so many years of gradual accumulation following the Great Calamity, now was finally when their efforts bore fruit.

Yan Zhaoge and those of Broad Creed Mountain had heard rumours on Nie Jingshen long before this.

It was just that before today, they had not imagined that there was actually such a connection between them.

While it was said that Nie Jingshen was the person closest to the Human Exalt stage in the World beyond Worlds, no one outside of Jade Capital Crag knew that this black-clothed youth had already reached the point where he could achieve his breakthrough whenever he wanted.

If not for the events at Broad Creed Mountain today, he might already simply have done so by now.

And now, Nie Jingshen's stance was equivalent to saying that Broad Creed Mountain would not meet any real opposition in advancing into and taking over the southern Blazing Heaven Territory.

Of the other late Immortal Bridge Martial Saints who might be able to successfully attain the Human Exalt stage within a short upcoming period of time, none of them would be confident of suppressing Yan Zhaoge and his father as they were now.

Even if they successfully completed their breakthrough, they would still not want to go step on mines in the southern Blazing Heaven Territory.

“It is just that while your sect has inherited the name of the East Peak of Daoism from the legends, you will have to develop in the south,” Wang Pu smiled.



Those present could not help but smile.

Meanwhile, Yan Zhaoge stroked his lower chin, his eyes gleaming as he seemed to be thinking about something.

“Everyone, this Yan has something to request. I hope that you can assist us if possible,” Yan Di now said, “I may also have to bother the Female Emperor.”

Cao Jie, Liu Zhenggu, Wang Pu and the others all had solemn looks on their faces as they were feeling curious inwardly.

Yan Di was such a proud and resilient person as it was seldom that he asked others for help. Even when he had been facing pressure from the Heaven Emperor and four great Exalts earlier, he had been utterly fearless. Yet, he was now taking the initiative to ask for help. This was not a common sight indeed.

Yan Di said, “I had a senior apprentice-brother whose descendants have been compromised in some way. We were initially unable to detect this. Only after this Yan and my son’s cultivation bases had grown were we able to realise this abnormality.”

“Still, the things that we can tell are still very limited. Therefore, we would like for you to help us take a look at them.”

He and Yan Zhaoge possessed extraordinary strength that far surpassed the norm. Still, for some matters, a certain cultivation base was required before they could do it.

“It is related to the Nine Underworlds,” Yan Zhaoge now added solemnly.

Having been in the Heavenly Court’s Divine Palace before the Great Calamity, he possessed great knowledge and discernment abilities as he could even see through some things that Yan Di could not. Still, only just having ascended the Immortal Bridge, he was definitely still limited somewhat.

Hearing the Nine Underworlds being mentioned, the expressions

of Nie Jingshen, Cao Jie, Bai Tao and the others all turned solemn.

This was the number one tainted, filthy ground of evil beneath the heavens that had stood in opposition to the entirety of the great thousand worlds in pre-Great Calamity times.

Numerous devils danced in chaos, countless experts existing amongst them.

The Great Calamity seemed to have affected the Nine Underworlds too.

Still, they remained all-pervasive as they encroached into the various worlds of post-Great Calamity times.

A gate to the devilish Nine Underworlds had opened in the Eight Extremities World that year as True Devils had very nearly descended.

With them now sealed, only then had the Eight Extremities World heaved a collective sigh of relief. It was already the limit for them as no one would even consider the idea of counterattacking.

This was unlike the Flame Devil World whose strongest expert was merely the Great Flame Devil King who was comparable to a third level Martial Saint. He had been slain by Yan Di and the others with the formation that they had established back then.

While the Flame Devils were on their home ground and possessed a major advantage as a result with a huge increment to their strength, after Yuan Zhengfeng and the others had attained the Seeing Divinity stage, they were really no longer worth mentioning at all.

Having once been harmed the most greatly by the invasion of the Flame Devils, the first thing that Broad Creed Mountain had done with its newfound strength had been to counterattack the Flame Devil World, completely destroying the place.

The current Flame Devil World was already completely consigned to the dustbin of history by now.

However, the Nine Underworlds were a whole different story altogether.

Encroaching on and invading the Eight Extremities World was just a special characteristic of the Nine Underworlds.

The devils that had nearly descended that year were merely some little underlings who really meant nothing at all when compared to the entire Nine Underworlds.

The actual great Devils truly targeted the entirety of the great thousand worlds as the likes of lower worlds like the Eight Extremities World, the Vast Ocean World and the Floating Gate World did not actually mean much to them.

Thus, the sealing of the gate to the Nine Underworlds in the Earth Domain of the Eight Extremities World had not done much besides leading to the unhappiness of the minor devils in the vicinity of the gate.

As for those of the Eight Extremities World, it was impossible that they would take the initiative to open that devilish gate.

It was just that the situations of Shi Jun and Ying Yuzhen were very unique.

The fact that even Yan Zhaoge who had already ascended the Immortal Bridge stage was unable to get to the bottom of this entailed that the Devil who had left marks on them back then was definitely not simple.

Great Devils like these were limited in the first place. Yan Zhaoge's inability to confirm it was actually equivalent to him only being able to lock it down to a couple of targets within a certain radius.

While he did have some guesses, he was unable to confirm them.

“Nine Underworlds?” The Female Emperor Jie Mingkong who had resealed herself in ice following the opening ceremony and ceased to speak appeared to be very concerned by this.

As the ice sculpture glowed with lustrous light, her voice resounded by their ears, “Let me see.”

“We will be troubling the Female Emperor then,” Yan Di looked at Fang Zhun who nodded and retrieved an ice coffin.

A woman was lying down with her eyes closed within the transparent ice coffin, seemingly in a deep slumber. This was none other than Shi Jun’s mother and Shi Songtao’s wife, Ying Yuzhen.

Having received instructions earlier, Shi Jun had been waiting outside as he now inhaled deeply and entered as instructed.

# HSSB 1049: The reason behind seeking to capture Xue Chuqing

---

Shi Jun sat cross-legged, closing his eyes.

A strange sigil was vaguely visible on his forehead at this moment.

That was the seal concealed at the depths of his soul as it now condensed and took form upon being stimulated by the Female Emperor Jie Mingkong.

Jie Mingkong still seemed to be in a deep slumber within that layer of ice.

Still, the lustre on the surface of the ice statue glowed perpetually, eternally unextinguished.

Meanwhile, there was something like a sigil on the forehead of Ying Yuzhen within the ice coffin too. The pattern it had was different from the one on Shi Jun's head.

Still, from both of these emanated a strange, ominous devilish qi.

Yan Zhaoge and the others observed the sigils silently as they waited patiently.

After a while, the lustre on the surface of the ice sculpture gradually vanished as the sigils on the foreheads of Shi Jun and Ying Yuzhen temporarily disappeared too.

"I regret to say that I too cannot see through the specifics," The Female Emperor's voice resounded.

Hearing this, Yan Zhaoge's eyes lit up slightly, "Even True Immortals cannot see through its foundation. A great Devil that can possess such methods would naturally be extraordinary. As a result, the search radius for the suspects has decreased yet further."

The Female Emperor had evidently come to the same conclusion, “Before the Great Calamity, both Daoist and Buddhism frequently exterminated devils. Many great Devils of the Nine Underworlds were brought to an end by them.”

“During the Great Calamity, the Nine Underworlds was affected too, suffering tragic casualties.”

While Devils would be reborn after they died as they were said to be undying and inextinguishable, there were no absolutes in this world as it was not like they could not be extinguished for good.

“The great Devils currently still active in the Nine Underworlds are limited in number,” The Female Emperor said slowly, “Still, this does not eliminate the possibility of some devils having executed schemes before being extinguished so that they would still have a chance of reviving afterwards.”

Yan Zhaoge nodded slightly.

This was actually his initial guess which had finally been verified now.

It was just that he did not know which mighty figure the mechanisms left behind on Shi Jun and Ying Yuzhen originated from.

Yan Di looked at Nie Jingshen, Bao Tao and Wang Pu, “Shi Jun and his mother are descendants of my late senior apprentice-brother. Now that he is no longer around, I must naturally take good care of them.”

“When senior apprentice-brother Yue has returned from extradimensional space, we may have to bother him to take a look too.”

Bai Tao said, “Senior apprentice-uncle Yan is a loyal, righteous person who values relationships greatly. I believe that Master will understand.”

After a painstaking millennium, the Sword Sovereign Zhen

Yuebei himself too was taking care of the sole remaining bloodline of his late Master.

“Also, since the matter concerns the Nine Underworlds, Master will definitely not let down his guard so easily,” Bai Tao elaborated, “Even if it was unrelated to you, senior apprentice-uncle Yan, he would still concern himself with this matter. After all, this involves great Devils of the Nine Underworlds that could also be extremely powerful.”

Wang Pu said, “Please keep this matter from spreading further before Master’s return if you can.”

Yan Zhaoge, Yan Di and those of Broad Creed Mountain slowly nodded.

“I hope that this little brother here and your mother can return to Kunlun Mountain’s Northern High Peak with us if possible,” Bai Tao said, “No one can know when the great Devil’s sigil might activate.”

Back at Kunlun Mountain, before the Sword Sovereign’s return, the Female Emperor would still be nearby to help them out in the off chance that something happened.

If even the Female Emperor could not do anything, they would have no choice but to request the help of the Concealed Sovereign who was constantly stationed in seclusion at Kunlun Mountain.

Yan Di said, “I’m afraid that not only would this be troublesome for Jade Capital Crag, you would have to bear a risk too.”

“It is fine,” Wang Pu shook his head, “If calamity really struck, the possibility of quelling it would be much higher at Kunlun Mountain than in the southeastern Yang Heaven Territory. With the Female Emperor and maybe even the Concealed Sovereign making a move, the damage caused would thus be greatly reduced too.”

Yan Di considered this for a moment before cupping his hands

towards them, “Since that is so, I will be troubling you.”

Bai Tao’s trio hastily said that this it was no trouble at all. The Female Emperor who was sealed in ice said nothing as she was clearly giving her tacit consent.

Shi Jun felt rather reluctant to part with his sect despite what had been said.

Still, thinking that this was for the good of he and his mother, he said nothing as he abided by these arrangements.

After the matter of Shi Jun and Ying Yuzhen had been decided on, this conversation drew to a close.

Still, afterwards, Yan Zhaoge and Yan Di paid a special visit to the guest lodgings and looked for the Southeastern Exalt Cao Jie in private.

As soon as Cao Jie saw them, he knew what they had come for.

“We have come for the matter of my mother this time. Please tell us what you know, Southeastern Exalt,” Yan Zhaoge cut to the chase.

Cao Jie glanced at Yan Di, “Yes, while you have yet to attain the Human Exalt stage, being protected by the Grand Simplicity Splendour Cloud, there should be no problem for you. You, however...”

Looking at Yan Zhaoge, he could not help but sigh.

“I am deeply moved by the Southeastern Exalt’s concern,” Yan Zhaoge smiled, “Still, maybe it is due to the Dim Radiant Wheel, or maybe it is due to the last of the Dim Radiant Twelve Arts, the art of peerless infinity, but although I journeyed to the Immortal Court and also learnt the name of the Immeasurable Heavenly Lord there, there are no abnormalities at all which have overcome me.”

“It should not to be the extent where I would be illuminated and



converted just like that, the treasured-light of the power of faith being born within me.”

Cao Jie was rather taken aback by this, “Those experts of the Dim Radiant Sect who were proficient in the Dim Radiant Twelve Arts and beneath the Human Exalt stage that year were all unable to resist it. Not yet having become a Immortal Artifact, the Dim Radiant Wheel is this effectual?”

Yan Zhaoge said, “I cannot say this for sure. Still, is that Immortal Court and the Immeasurable Heavenly Lord really so miraculous?”

“Merely learning of the name of the Immeasurable Heavenly Lord, a shadow would be left behind within our hearts as he would be able to illuminate and convert us?”

“In the tens of millennia that the Future Buddha has existed, I have never heard of such domineering methods.”

From Yan Zhaoge’s previous interactions with Cao Jie, the latter already knew that he did also know about the current blessed lands of Buddhism. Thus, he was not surprised to hear the Future Buddha being mentioned.

In reply to Yan Zhaoge’s query, Cao Jie said slowly, “If not for this, the World beyond Worlds would not have had to ban news of the Immortal Court from circulating just as we would guard against a venomous snake.”

“It is actually also because of the Immeasurable Heavenly Lord and the Immortal Court that the news on Buddhism was restricted by us.”

“The Immortal Court and the blessed lands have many conflicts. While they are sworn enemies, they are actually the same kind intrinsically. Therefore, we restricted all the information regarding them.”

Cao Jie raised his head slightly, saying, “As for why the

Immeasurable Heavenly Lord possesses this miraculous ability, I could not know.”

Yan Di asked, “When I came to know Chuqing that year, let alone a Human Exalt, she was still far from even the Martial Saint realm. In that case, she...”

“Her situation is unique,” Cao Jie said, “There is a supreme treasure descended in her lineage which can ensure that she is not illuminated despite knowing of the Immeasurable Heavenly Lord.”

Yan Di raised his brows lightly, “Oh, such a treasure must be very rare indeed.”

“Half the River Diagram!” Cao Jie nodded in agreement.

Yan Zhaoge put a hand to his head, “It is no wonder then.”

The Yellow River and Nine Halls diagrams were supreme treasures of legend which had left countless tales behind.

It was just that they had already vanished from sight for many years even before the Great Calamity.

He had not thought that his mother might actually possess half the Yellow River diagram.

Yan Zhaoge nodded quietly, “My mother...or should I say the late Dim Radiant Emperor and my mother’s Master, the Bright Connection Emperor-what exactly happened between them and the Immortal Court?”

“Long story,” Cao Jie had a rather complex expression on his face, “Essentially, it is all regarding a single object.”

# HSSB 1050: Millennia old secret

---

“In the legends, this object is known as Heavenly Essence Stone.”

Cao Jie said slowly, “I myself was only told of this after attaining the Human Exalt stage.”

Yan Zhaoge and Yan Di focused their gazes on him.

Cao Jie sounded far away as he said, “There is information which indicates that the Immeasurable Heavenly Lord is searching for a treasure known as Heavenly Essence Stone.”

“If this treasure is obtained by him, not only will martial practitioners beneath the Human Exalt stage be illuminated upon hearing his name, even Exalts, even Emperors of our orthodox Daoism who have already opened the door to Immortality would no longer be safe as well!”

Yan Zhaoge’s brows were knit tightly as he pondered, “Heavenly Essence Stone...”

This name was foreign even to him.

He had not heard of it even in the Heavenly Court’s Divine Palace back in pre-Great Calamity times.

“We have not been able to confirm the veracity of this piece of information as it is still contentious even today,” Cao Jie continued, “Still, at that time, someone would not risk disbelieving that this threat did indeed exist.”

Yan Zhaoge said, “The Dim Radiant Emperor, Yin Tianxia!”

“That’s right. The Dim Radiant Sect’s conquest into distant dimensional space that year was but a feint,” Cao Jie said, “The Dim Radiant Emperor’s true goal was to find the Heavenly Essence Stone.”

“At that time, the conflict between Buddhism and the Immortal Court was at its most intense as the majority of the Immortal

Court's experts were engaged in battle with the Buddhists. The Immeasurable Heavenly Lord and Future Buddha had tied each other down too."

"In the end, the Dim Radiant Emperor really pulled the tooth off a tiger, wresting away a fragment of the Heavenly Essence Stone."

At this point, Yan Zhaoge could basically understand what had happened, "Still, the Dim Radiant Emperor also perished as a result?"

Cao Jie answered, "That's right, it is precisely so."

"Although he died, that fragment of the Heavenly Essence Stone still did not fall into the possession of the Immortal Court."

"The Immortal Court was naturally unwilling to let it go just like that. As a result, the World beyond Worlds suffered immense pressure and had to pay a steep price."

News indicated that the Bright Connection Emperor Hu Yuexin and her descendants had obtained that Heavenly Essence Stone fragment. Thus, they became wanted fugitives of the World beyond Worlds and the Immortal Court.

Meanwhile, some people from the Immortal Court also suspected that clues might be concealed amongst the relics of the late Dim Radiant Emperor Yin Tianxia.

While those of the World beyond Worlds could basically confirm that the Heavenly Essence Stone fragment was unrelated to the Dim Radiant Mausoleum and the Dim Radiant Wheel, those of the Immortal Court did not fully believe this.

As a result, those in the World beyond Worlds who were in the know had turned a blind eye to the Dim Radiant Emperor and warned those of their lineage not to get involved with it.

"We originally believed that your mother obtained the Heavenly Essence Stone fragment inadvertently as trouble was drawn to her as a result," Cao Jie looked at Yan Zhaoge, "Still, it is probably

because of your mother that you were able to obtain the Dim Radiant Wheel. As such, it seems that the Bright Connection Emperor and the Dim Radiant Emperor were co-conspirators in that previous incident in the first place.”

He sighed slowly, “The Bright Connection Emperor is a great taboo in the World beyond Worlds as I too do know not much about her. I only know that many of her ideas clashed with that of the Earthly Sovereign.”

“From the looks of it now, the tensions between them must have hinged primarily on their stances towards the Immortal Court.”

Hearing this, Yan Zhaoge smacked his lips, “So, what you mean is that the Earthly Sovereign holds the attitude of trying to appease the Immortal Court?”

Cao Jie answered, “It is not to that extent. Still, the Earthly Sovereign does not like to take risks.”

“The Great Calamity caused us orthodox Daoists of the Three Clear lineages to be depleted greatly as regaining our vitality has not been easy.”

“Ever since the Kunlun Nine Luminaries established the World beyond Worlds, many sacrifices were made for the stable situation we see today to be forged as we finally gradually regained our vitality in recent years under the leadership of the Three Sovereigns. Part of the credit here naturally goes to the Earthly Sovereign.”

Yan Di raised his brows lightly, “If the rumour is real and the Immeasurable Heavenly Lord manages to gather that complete Heavenly Essence Stone, wouldn’t all this have been for naught, dissipating into ashes overnight?”

Cao Jie said mildly, “The problem is that we cannot confirm the veracity of this matter.”

“Perhaps the Heavenly Essence Stone does indeed exist, and the

Immeasurable Heavenly Lord and the Immortal Court do desire it greatly.”

“Still, are its effects really as the Dim Radiant Emperor claimed?”

Cao Jie shook his head slowly, “No one knows if the Dim Radiant Emperor acted for the sake of all or for his own personal gain.”

“Even if he was unselfishly acting on behalf of all Daoism, willingly sacrificing himself in the process with the dao tradition of his Dim Radiant Sect even being destroyed as a result, there is still no one who can guarantee that he was not fooled and made use of by others.”

His mind seemed to drift off somewhat, “Thus, some approved of and supported him while others denied and criticised him.”

Yan Zhaoge murmured aloud, “They suspect it to be a ploy of the Immortal Court’s?”

He exchanged looks with Yan Di, father and son both frowning as they pondered.

The actions of the Dim Radiant Emperor might have been righteous and saintly as he could be said to have performed an immeasurably meritorious service which the entirety of Daoism’s Three Clear lineages had to be grateful to.

Yet, it was also possible that he had found a righteous-sounding excuse for his own personal gain. Being greedy and selfish, he had dragged others down into it with things ultimately ending terribly.

Even worse was if this was a trap that the Immortal Court had set up. By stepping into it, apart from his own death, the Dim Radiant Emperor Yin Tiaxia had also entrapped the World beyond Worlds, forcing them into a passive, vulnerable state.

Yet, there was hardly any way for this to be verified now.

Therefore, this had become a rather contentious issue.

Along with that, Xue Chuqing who had been drawn into things

with the Heavenly Essence Stone fragment was in hot soup too.

Regardless of the intentions of the Dim Radiant Emperor and the Bright Connection Emperor, they had wrecked the plans of the Immeasurable Heavenly Lord. Even with the Dim Radiant Emperor's death, this matter was still not considered over as responsibility ultimately still had to be taken by the World beyond Worlds.

As the head of the Three Sovereigns who led their policies, whether the Earthly Sovereign believed the Dim Radiant Emperor and the Bright Connection Emperor was not important. He had to account for things to the Immortal Court officially, at least.

This was especially so when the reason behind the incident, the Heavenly Essence Stone fragment that had been wrested away by the Dim Radiant Emperor, had always been nowhere to be found.

Therefore, the relics of the Dim Radiant Emperor had become a taboo while the Bright Connection Emperor who had always been hostile towards the Immortal Court had become the dark history of the World beyond Worlds. Meanwhile, Xue Chuqing who might have obtained the Heavenly Essence Stone fragment had become a wanted fugitive.

Still, it was precisely because this matter was contentious that there were many different views regarding it within the World beyond Worlds.

This could be seen in how some sought strongly to capture Xue Chuqing, some were opposed to it and others simply pretended to see nothing.

Xue Chuqing's cultivation base had still been limited when she had first started running around as a fugitive within the World beyond Worlds.

It would not have been difficult for those bigwigs to find her if they truly wanted to.

It was the tensions due to the differing opinions floating around that had given her enough time and space to avoid being caught.

“Despite your relationship with the Sword Sovereign, if your family truly reunites, it would still be best to keep a low profile with how things are right now, not letting this become known,” Cao Jie said earnestly as he looked at Yan Zhaoge, “You must also be mentally prepared in having gotten that Dim Radiant Wheel. This supreme treasure could bring calamity to you.”

“The conflict between the Immortal Court and Buddhism has been the most intense these past few years as they have had no time to pay attention to you. Still, after the peak will come a trough. With things set to become less heated between them, the Immortal Court will be able to keep an eye on us.”

“With the Sword Sovereign present, the pressure on you will be greatly diminished. However, there can still be no letting down your guard.”

Knowing that the other party was speaking from his vast experience that came with age, Yan Zhaoge nodded slightly before asking, “You personally trust and respect the Dim Radiant Emperor, right?”

Cao Jie said calmly, “We are all of the orthodox tradition of Daoism, at least.”



# HSSB 1051: To, Kunlun Mountain!

---

Within the Dim Radiant Mausoleum, a ‘disperse your separate ways’ had seemingly traversed endless time as no regret had been contained within despite that lingering sense of loss.

In the lands of the Immortal Court, recorded images of light had been left behind in which he had defeated two Emperors of the Immortal Court within a single exchange.

“We are all cultivators. Slay the dao, see one’s true self.”

Recalling that majestic figure who had been garbed in black clothes and a white robe, his hair black and his brows white, Yan Zhaoge fell into deep thought for a time.

While he had never personally interacted with him before, while he had long since returned to dust, he could still sense just how imperious and lofty of a person he had been.

People had many faces as making a conclusion about someone from just one time and one incident could inevitably be misleading somewhat.

It was difficult for the current Yan Zhaoge to comment on what sort of a person the Dim Radiant Emperor Yin Tianxia had been.

Yet, as he had obtained the Dim Radiant Wheel and his mother Xue Chuqing was involved in this matter, there was naturally no way for him to stay out of it.

“That the Dim Radiant Emperor perished is already beyond doubt,” Yan Zhaoge rubbed his temple lightly, “What about my mother’s Grand Master, the Bright Connection Emperor then?”

Cao Jie said, “As compared to the Dim Radiant Emperor, less news on the Bright Connection Emperor has been available. I am not sure if she is alive or dead. Still, I can say with certainty that she has long since left the World beyond Worlds.”

This was just as the Northeastern Exalt Liu Zhenggu had said back then.

Nodding silently, Yan Zhaoge then suddenly asked, “What about the Bright Connection Emperor’s disciple, my mother’s Master?”

Cao Jie answered, “I heard that this person is already dead. Still, I am unclear on the specifics.”

“This person was also a wanted fugitive back then, but died in the process of evading capture. However, the Heavenly Essence Stone fragment was still nowhere to be found. Only then did your mother suffer the same treatment.”

Yan Zhaoge and Yan Di exchanged looks, not saying a word.

It was still uncertain if the Dim Radiant Emperor had been selfless or selfish in seizing the Heavenly Essence Stone fragment that year.

It was also hard to say if any of the ones trying to capture Xue Chuqing now had a personal interest in the fragment.

Whatever the actual use of this treasure that had been sought for over a thousand years now really was, since the Immeasurable Heavenly Lord and the Immortal Court valued it so greatly, it definitely had to be a very valuable object.

After thanking the Southeastern Exalt Cao Jie, father and son exited the room and returned to their own lodgings.

As they walked, Yan Di said slowly, “If you did not guess wrong initially and junior apprentice-niece Sikong truly is related to Chuqing, this may have something to do with the Heavenly Essence Stone fragment!”

“It is doubtful, though,” Yan Zhaoge said as he pondered, “There are so many people who look like junior apprentice-sister Sikong. There were at least four such people in our Eight Extremities World back then.”

“The World beyond Worlds is so large as there will only be more of them. Considering population estimates, saying that there may be a thousand would already be giving a conservative estimate.”

Just thinking about it, Yan Zhaoge pulled back the corners of his lips.

There were many people in this world who closely resembled each other despite being completely unrelated by blood. Some of them might even look like identical twins.

Still, if there were over a thousand people who looked the same, that would really make for a magnificent sight.

They did not just resemble each other. Instead, their features were completely the same even though there were both males and females amongst them.

Their appearances were also extremely outstanding as they did not have common faces that would not draw any attention in a crowd.

If they cultivated in martial arts, after cultivating their inner auras and attaining the Martial Scholar realm, they would display shocking martial talent.

While they were not otherworldly talents like Yan Zhaoge, Yan Di, Nie Jingshen, Chen Qianhua and Long Xueji, even if they were from the lineages of the Three Sovereigns or Five Emperors at Kunlun Mountain, they would still be praised for having extraordinary talent.

These people amounted into the hundreds or even thousands...

Of course, they could have died young or lived their entire lives unremarkably without cultivating in martial arts.

The timeflow of the World beyond Worlds was faster than that of the Eight Extremities World. With Sikong Qing's age, if she was not cultivating in martial arts in the World beyond Worlds but was just an ordinary peasant, she would already be very old and almost

at the end of her longevity by now.

Still, in the World beyond Worlds where Daoism was seeing a resurgence, unearthing talent had always been emphasised on greatly. Those who really had talent would not easily be left buried.

That those like Sikong Qing whose talent and potential had already been unordinary even before attaining the Martial Scholar realm could have been overlooked seemed very improbable indeed.

Therefore, Yan Zhaoge found it very hard to believe that the Three Sovereigns and Five Emperors could have overlooked as abnormal a situation as the vast number of ‘Sikong Qings’ existing in the World beyond Worlds.

“If one says that they were all scattered amongst the various lower worlds, we have seen at least two here in the World beyond Worlds,” Yan Zhaoge tapped his temple.

Of the southeastern Yang Heaven Territory’s Royal Reed Sea’s North Sea Sword Pavilion, Yue Baoqi.

Of the eastern Vast Heaven Territory’s Remote Cloud Mountain’s Clear Light Locale and descended of the Eastern Exalt’s lineage, Li Cheng.

The quantity was, of course, far lower than what Yan Zhaoge had expected.

At the same time, the attention of those who were not in the know would still not be drawn by this.

“With things still unclear now, junior apprentice-sister Sikong will probably have to continue keeping a low profile,” Yan Zhaoge sighed, “With senior apprentice-uncle Yue looking after us from up above, the pressure on us has decreased greatly. Still, there are also more people who are paying attention to us.”

“The Eastern Exalt has just returned in defeat from our place. He will definitely be paying attention to all aspects. It might still be

fine if others see junior apprentice-sister Sikong, but if he does and learns that she is a disciple of our Broad Creed Mountain, he might just make that connection.”

Yan Di frowned, “Yet she must continue suffering this indignity.”

Yan Zhaoge said, “That is at least better than being made a target and kidnapped away. If we knew who the other side was, we could still confront them and ask for her back. The worst thing is if she is taken but we have no idea who did it, having no way of looking for her at all.”

Remote Cloud Mountain’s Clear Light Locale’s Li Cheng had precisely been kidnapped by him, Yan Zhaoge. The Eastern Exalt did not even know who had done this as he believed that like his other disciples, Li Cheng had died in that old residence in which Xue Chuqing had formerly been hiding.

If he was all happy in having kidnapped someone yet someone kidnapped one of his own afterwards, Yan Zhaoge would not be able to continue smiling then.

He stroked his lower chin, “Maybe we can set up a trap for someone? It is just that this would be even more unfair for junior apprentice-sister Sikong.”

Yan Di said, “Let us not then. Since that is so, junior apprentice-niece Sikong should remain on the Mountain.”

“She is fully devoted towards the martial dao and skilled in analysis and development as well. I have actually always been hoping that she can take the helm at the Martial Inheritance Hall in the future.”

“If we were to put her on the First Seat of the Martial Inheritance Hall now, it would inevitably be exposing her before the eyes of all. Still, it is fine to simply have her taking charge of the situation.”

Yan Di decided, “Junior apprentice-sister Fu can be the First Seat

Elder of the Martial Inheritance Hall in name for her.”

He turned to look at Yan Zhaoge, “What about you? How go your preparations? You will be setting off soon.”

Yan Zhaoge smiled, “My preparations are more or less complete. Still, my success still hinges on reacting to the situation as necessary after I have gone to Kunlun Mountain.”

Everyone was trying to guess what Yan Zhaoge and Broad Creed Mountain would be doing next.

Actually, Yan Zhaoge would be acting separately from his sect after this.

Yan Di would preside over their development plan as they officially advanced into the southern Blazing Heaven Territory.

With the foundation that Yan Zhaoge had established for them in the vicinity of where the Dynasty River flowed in the eastern parts of the southern Blazing Heaven Territory, such as at Circumference Mountain, they would be able to achieve their goals there much more easily.

Meanwhile, Yan Zhaoge himself would be heading to Kunlun Mountain in the central Jun Heaven Territory along with Nie Jingshen and Wang Pu’s group!

On one hand, this was to search for the whereabouts of his mother, Xue Chuqing, in secret. On the other, there were some plans that Yan Zhaoge wanted to try executing too.

“According to the latest news from Ingenious Flying Peak, the Brocade Emperor who was a no-show seems not to have gone back there too,” Yan Zhaoge forced a smile, “Really, what exactly could this Emperor be busy with?”

# HSSB 1052: Things still aren't over yet

---

While Yan Zhaoge and Broad Creed Mountain had successfully alleviated the crisis of the battle at their opening ceremony, even causing their enemies to retreat hastily and fear returning because the Sword Sovereign had intervened, it was still very strange that the Brocade Emperor Fu Yunchi who had agreed to personally attend Broad Creed Mountain's opening ceremony to congratulate them had completely failed to turn up.

Actually, for an Emperor to personally descend at a power that had only two measly Immortal Bridge Martial Saints was undoubtedly giving them a great deal of face as it should be considered a real big favour.

Even if he changed his mind and decided not to come, no one would think that there was anything wrong with it.

With the gap in their statuses having surpassed a certain level, many rules and manners were no longer applicable.

However minor the private affair of an Emperor, it would still be major for those of the human realm.

It was only natural to prioritise things that were more important.

If it was another power and the Brocade Emperor did not come, everyone would generally still find it to be perfectly acceptable rather than rude and wrong.

Still, the problem was that Yan Zhaoge and Broad Creed Mountain had already proven themselves as they could not be evaluated by ordinary standards at all.

They had proven this yet again in how they had withstood the Heaven Emperor during their opening ceremony and slain the Southern Exalt.

Although they had been able to repel the Heaven Emperor, this did not mean that they could do the same with the Brocade

Emperor.

Still, the potential and strength displayed by Yan Zhaoge and Broad Creed Mountain were already so great that even Emperors would not overlook and underestimate them.

With how the Female Emperor Jie Mingkong had personally descended upon Broad Creed Mountain without any prior indication and helped them out, the Brocade Emperor's failure to arrive appeared even more conspicuous.

The representatives of Ingenious Flying Peak who had come to offer their congratulations at Broad Creed Mountain's opening ceremony all felt as though they were sitting on needles.

After the ceremony had ended, seeing how the Brocade Emperor had still not arrived, they were virtually mortified as they dared not linger, hurriedly offering their congratulations before leaving.

It was they who most wanted to get to the bottom of where the Brocade Emperor currently was at.

While the Brocade Emperor had a casual, carefree personality, he was never someone to go back on his word.

This time's matter was clearly abnormal.

Yan Zhaoge, Yan Di and Yuan Zhengfeng did not feel dissatisfied and unhappy over this.

"It is not that the Brocade Emperor broke his promise and failed to come. It is probable that there is some other incident which is involved here," Yan Zhaoge stroked his lower chin, "Zhuang Shen, Lang Qing, Daoist Oneheaven and Lian Zulin were filled with confidence and acting rampantly and without reservation from the start. From some things they coincidentally said and their attitudes at the time, it seems that they were completely certain that the Brocade Emperor would definitely be unable to arrive. He would not be able to make it in time for sure, at least."

Yan Di nodded, "With the Brocade Emperor having openly voiced



out that he would be attending our opening ceremony, they would naturally have viewed him as the greatest hindrance to their plans. Although the Heaven Emperor would be coming too, if the Brocade Emperor could not show up, they would see it as meaning that their victory was assured with no one being able to stop the Heaven Emperor.”

“They had no way of knowing that you had prepared the Earth Mother Dao Ritual, much less the fact that senior apprentice-brother Yue had made arrangements. If they were going to do something, their foremost target would naturally have been the Brocade Emperor. I fear his no-show was induced by their schemes.”

Yan Zhaoge spread his palms apart, “I initially thought of two possibilities.”

“Firstly, something came up with Fu Ting who went to the Immortal Court with me and is forced to be in secluded cultivation at Red Lotus Cliff now. Thus, the Brocade Emperor was forced to return to Kunlun Mountain.”

“Secondly, maybe Zhuang Shen and co contacted Mars Halberd, requesting that he help to intercept and obstruct the Brocade Emperor.”

Still, news from Ingenious Flying Peak after the opening ceremony was that the Brocade Emperor never returned after having left while there were also no abnormalities with Fu Ting in the least.

If the Brocade Emperor had been intercepted by Mars Halberd, with so much time having passed, there should have been news on this by now even if the Brocade Emperor had failed to make it in time for the opening ceremony.

After all, the Brocade Emperor’s strength surpassed that of Mars Halberd with the Immortal Artifact that he possessed.

Mars Halberd might be able to obstruct him for a while, but doing so for so long a time would simply be impossible.

Father and son exchanged looks as they were only able to helplessly shake their heads.

Yan Zhaoge's gaze flickered slightly as he thought to himself, "Maybe there is still a third possibility..."

"We finally know now why the Roving Jade Heavens sent over the Immortal Trapping Sword Manual that year," Yan Di changed the topic.

Back then, Yan Zhaoge's and Broad Creed Mountain's main opponent had been the Grand Xuan Dynasty.

The Grand Xuan Dynasty's number one expert had been Shen Lingzi.

While no news had been heard of him for many years, news of his death had never spread as well as he would definitely return to the Royal Reed Sea for the final battle between their two sides.

Meanwhile, the Immortal Trapping Sword precisely countered his lineage's Time Flowing Sword.

In the end, Shen Lingzi, Daoist Shi and King Xuancheng had indeed returned to the Royal Reed Sea.

The Immortal Trapping Sword had been vital as Yan Zhaoge had slain Kang Ping and Shen Lingzi, both of whom had been Immortal Bridge Martial Saints.

Through Nie Jingshen and Bai Tao's group, Yan Zhaoge and Yan Di finally learnt of their relationship with the Roving Jade Heavens now.

The Dragon Spring Emperor Long Xingquan who had resided in the Roving Jade Heavens for several thousand years was precisely the junior apprentice-brother of Yan Di's father, the late Exalted Gold Luminary Yan Xingtang.

Meanwhile, one of the Roving Jade Heaven's two Sovereigns, the Profound Sovereign Gao Qingxuan who was also the wife of the Dragon Spring Emperor and the great-grandmother of Gao Qing whom Yan Zhaoge had once met, was precisely the senior apprentice-sister of Yan Di's mother, the late Sword Emperor Di Qinglian.

Thinking of the legend of how eldest apprentice-brother had married little apprentice-sister and how little apprentice-brother had married eldest apprentice-sister, Yan Zhaoge and Yan Di smiled inwardly as they felt rather admiring of this.

Unlike the Sword Sovereign Yue Zhenbei who was often away from the World beyond Worlds, the Profound Sovereign and the Dragon Spring Emperor generally resided in the Roving Jade Heavens.

The two of them clearly knew of the arrangements that Yan Xingtang and his wife had made that year.

Therefore, after discovering that Yan Di had appeared in the World beyond Worlds, they had been paying attention to them in secret, even having sent the Immortal Trapping Sword Manual over back then and helped out them father and son along with Broad Creed Mountain greatly.

It was just that as the Heaven Emperor had come to attack Broad Creed Mountain at their opening ceremony this time, it was inconvenient for them to openly lend their assistance.

The World beyond Worlds and the Roving Jade Heavens did not share a harmonious relationship. Were they to act, it would easily cause the World beyond Worlds to be united against a common external foe, placing Broad Creed Mountain in even more dire straits.

Still, the Dragon Spring Emperor and his wife had had no need to worry with the Sword Sovereign around.

The Southwestern Exalt Bai Tao, though, had discreetly hinted that he hoped Yan Zhaoge and Yan Di would avoid associating with the Roving Jade Heavens as much as possible.

“Even if we do not mention the pre-existing ties between us, we must still thank senior apprentice-uncle Long for the Immortal Trapping Sword Manual from back then,” Yan Di said, “As he and his wife have been thinking greatly for us, we should find a chance to pay a visit to the Roving Jade Heavens and thank them sometime. As for anything else, we can talk about that afterwards.”

Yan Zhaoge said, “You’re right. That’s exactly how it is.”

While things were tense between the World beyond Worlds and the Roving Jade Heavens, it was still not at the point that they were bitter, irreconcilable enemies.

That one descendant of the Dragon Spring Emperor could conceal his identity and reside in the World beyond Worlds at any one time was proof of this.

“It is not easy for you to move about with how you have to lead the sect,” Yan Zhaoge said after thinking for a moment, “Whereas I am comparatively freer. I will find a way to contact those of the Roving Jade Heavens, then go take a look. The Shadow Mountain Sword King did also take care of us quite a bit that year.”

It was not that it was absolutely forbidden to travel from one side to the other. Still, this had to be done with the utmost discretion.

Yan Di nodded, “Yes, just keep that in mind.”

.....

In the central Jun Heaven Territory, atop Kunlun Mountain’s Southern High Peak’s Qilin Cliff, an old man was currently gazing calmly in the direction of the southeast.

He was none other than the Earth Exalt, Wang Zhengcheng.

He nodded slightly, saying slowly, “Off you go then.”

# HSSB 1053: Head of the Ten Exalts

---

Behind Wang Zhengcheng, a man in brownish-yellow garb replied, “Yes, Master.”

He paused momentarily before venturing, “Still, this disciple fears that he may already have lost his courage after what happened in the battle at the Royal Reed Sea.”

“First not speaking of how powerful Yan Zhaoge and Yan Di are, even if they were perfectly average, there is still the Sword Sovereign to consider...”

Wang Zhengcheng did not take offence at his disciple’s doubts, “This might not be the case for those unrelated parties, but he will definitely be concerned.”

“The disciple of the Bright Connection Emperor, the Master of that Snow Crane Xue Chuqing, perished at his hands back then. While the Yan father and son and the Sword Sovereign are not aware of this, that Snow Crane herself is.”

“What exists between them now is merely a conflict. Still, when the Snow Crane reunites with her family, this would have become death enmity then.”

Wang Zhengcheng sighed, “While it was also by accident that he killed her back then, a conclusion must eventually be reached to the matter. There is no way for him to not guard against them.”

The man in brownish-yellow garb realised, “So it was actually like this.”

Wang Zhengcheng said, “Off you go then.”

“He is a cautious person and surely knows not to let news of this get out. It is just that whether we can successfully intercept that Snow Crane before she meets with the Yan father and son must still depend on how much preparations we have made and also what comes to pass.”

“Yes, Master. This disciple will set off now,” The other party bowed and took his leave.

Wang Zhengcheng simply continued gazing towards the southeast as he sighed emotionally after a time, “And these two just had to be related...”

No one could know if he was referring to the relationship of Yan Zhaoge and Yan Di with the Sword Sovereign or that between they and Xue Chuqing.

.....

Southeastern Yang Heaven Territory, Extreme Southern Lands, Duckweed Sea.

While this place was filled with azure waves, the surface of the sea was deathly still as there were no ripples in the slightest.

The surface of the sea was full of floating duckweed, causing it to resemble a moist land of greenery.

A figure flew across the air above the sea.

The newcomer had handsome features with a smile that constantly hung at the corners of his lips, making him feel amiable as he gave off a feeling like a refreshing spring breeze.

He had a refined, elegant bearing as there seemed to be no fault that could be found from his manner at all.

This was none other than the Earthly Young Master, Chen Kunhua.

While attending Broad Creed Mountain’s opening ceremony, he had not done anything in the least, merely having silently spectated everything that had happened just like any other guest.

After the opening ceremony had ended, he had taken his leave with most of the others, showing no abnormalities whatsoever.

Those who understood the enmity between Yan Zhaoge and Xia Guang and Three Foot Mountain as well as the relationship

between Chen Kunhua and Three Foot Mountain only felt this to be slightly inconceivable.

Some also believed that the Earthly Young Master had been intimidated by Broad Creed Mountain's powerful might. As a result, even if he had been planning something at first, he had dared not act recklessly in the end.

After all, while Chen Kunhua was also a famed expert of the World beyond Worlds' younger generation, his strength was inferior to that of those Exalts, much less the Heaven Emperor.

Even these bigwigs had been repelled at Broad Creed Mountain, with the Southern Exalt Zhuang Shen having lost his life there too. It was only natural that Chen Kunhua had maintained his silence. Anything else would simply have been pointless.

Perhaps there might still have been a chance if his elder brother, the Upper Exalt Chen Qianhua, had come.

Still, with the appearances of the Female Emperor as well as Nie Jingshen's group as the Yan family's relationship with the Sword Sovereign had been revealed, everyone felt that the eventual result was probably still something that could not have been changed even if the Upper Exalt had arrived.

The Earthly Young Master himself already stood absolutely no chance.

Some even thought that he was probably considering how to get closer to Broad Creed Mountain, improving his relationship with them.

Therefore, they felt that how normally he had behaved during the opening ceremony was perfectly natural.

Yet, after the opening ceremony had ended, Chen Kunhua who had looked like he was normal before had become slightly abnormal.

He did not return north to the central Jun Heaven Territory as

he instead headed south, arriving in the region of the Duckweed Sea in the southern domain of the southeastern Yang Heaven Territory.

The floating duckweed down below was something that even Chen Kunhua dared not step on lightly with his cultivation base of the eighth level of the Martial Saint realm.

Even if the feather of a goose fell onto the water of the Duckweed Sea, it would instantly sink as the same applied for tiny particles like dust too.

Chen Kunhua sped along till a massive isle appeared before him as only then did he descend.

This was the location of the headquarters of a peak sect of the Duckweed Sea that was known as Overgrown Jade Island. Their Chief was an eighth level Martial Saint as he could be considered a major figure of the entire southeastern Yang Heaven Territory.

Overgrown Jade Island had numerous disciples and as many experts as there were clouds. While it was located within the Duckweed Sea, it had never lost its vigilance as it possessed strong defences despite its peaceful and harmonious appearance.

It was just that this clearly meant nothing at all to Chen Kunhua.

As he journeyed, it was like the martial practitioners of Overgrown Jade Island could not see him, being totally unable to sense his presence at all.

If those who were familiar with the situation of the Duckweed Sea saw this, they would gradually come to find it strange.

The most powerful experts that could be seen were only Seeing Divinity Martial Saints right now, with the true leaders of the sect, their three Immortal Bridge Martial Saints, nowhere to be seen.

Chen Kunhua did not find this to be any strange at all as he passed through the courtyard, arriving at the back mountain of Overgrown Jade Island.



This was the location where the peak experts of Overgrown Jade Island entered secluded cultivation. Chen Kunhua opened the door to a sealed cave manor with practised familiarity, entering within.

It was just that after having entered, Chen Kunhua no longer appeared so laid-back as he instead drew himself to his most vigilant, alert state.

He was going to meet a certain person next.

If he could choose, Chen Kunhua was actually not very willing at all to interact with that person, even though they had grown up together, even though a major part of his glory and ease in the World beyond Worlds these past years could be attributed to him.

Chen Kunhua would still keep a respectful distance away from that person nevertheless.

Still, it was necessary to meet him this time.

Entering the depths of the cave manor, lewd sounds could instantly be heard from within.

Chen Kunhua was not unfamiliar with these noises as he recognised them as originating from acts that occurred between men and women.

Passing through the corridor and arriving at the chamber in the depths of the cave manor, light appeared before Chen Kunhua's eyes.

A stone table and stone chair were arranged simply within the chamber.

Still, besides these, there was a conspicuous object which was clearly not of this place, instead having been brought in from outside. It was a wooden armchair that was a symbol of seniority.

A man rested lazily in the wooden armchair, leaning back against it with a lackadaisical look on his face which expressed that there was nothing which might be able to catch his interest at all.

He looked no older than twenty on the outside as he was dressed completely in purple.

His features somewhat resembled that of the Earthly Young Master Chen Kunhua.

This was none other than the World beyond Worlds' current number one Martial Saint, the Upper Exalt Chen Qianhua.

Still, this Heavenly Young Master who was at the head of the Ten Exalts looked rather ludicrous and sloppy.

While his features were handsome too, they were less radiant than that of his younger brother, Chen Kunhua.

It was just that the brilliant Earthly Young Master was just standing obediently by the side, completely servile at this moment.

Those lewd, bewitching noises were still resounding endlessly even now.

They came from next door.

Listening carefully, one would discover that be they male or female, amidst their extreme pleasure, within these voices were also mixed despondence, pain and even fury.

The purple-clothed youth ignored this completely as he finally turned to look at his brother, asking him lazily, "You're back?"

He looked down at people when speaking to them as it was as if the whole world owed him money.

Chen Kunhua earnestly answered, "Yes, elder brother."

"Wait a moment. I am nearly done with things here. If this still does not go well, I also cannot be bothered to try finding ninth level Martial Saints to continue it with," The purple-clothed youth waved a hand.

Chen Kunhua bowed slightly and stood silently by the side, waiting along with him.

# HSSB 1054: Because I find it interesting

---

The intense emotions from next door finally descended from their peak.

The purple-clothed youth who sat in the armchair finally seemed to slightly have the mood for something as he got up and walked towards the stone chamber next door.

Chen Kunhua was expressionless as he followed after him.

Things were all messed up inside as it was still not over yet.

The male side was a middle-aged man with rather authoritative-looking features. It was just that his face was full of defeat and despondence at this moment.

If the martial practitioners of Overgrown Jade Island were to see him now, they would probably be shocked.

This middle-aged man was clearly none other than the Chief of their Overgrown Jade Island.

He was a mid Immortal Bridge Martial Saint, a local hegemon of the Duckweed Sea.

Yet, he was like a wooden puppet at this moment as his body was totally no longer his to control.

As Chen Qianhua and his brother entered, endless fury surged within his dazed eyes, yet he was totally helpless.

Looking at the woman there, he was filled with even more embarrassment and maddening fury.

That woman clearly looked like she had been forced and unwilling too. Still, her appearance was different from that of ordinary people.

While she had a graceful body which evoked one's fantasies, red blood-light streaked across her purple skin, forming brilliant yet strange demonic patterns which would shake the minds of others.

Within her eyes, no white or pupils could be seen.

It was completely pitch black within her eye sockets.

Yet, these eyes birthed a strange, demonic charm which drew one within, hard pressed to extricate themselves from it.

She exuded an extreme intent of seductiveness from her entire body which no normal woman would be able to achieve.

She was clearly not attempting any such actions as she seemed filled more with a sharp, evil air from the outside. Yet, endless, wild lasciviousness could be sensed from her.

This allure seemed to directly take effect on one's soul as it would be difficult for anyone to stabilise their minds even if they were trying to control themselves.

Seeing this woman, the Earthly Young Master Chen Kunhua sighed inwardly, "Nine Underworld True Devils truly possess some special characteristics!"

The face of the Chief of Overgrown Jade Island was pale and deathly ashen at this moment as he felt so embarrassed and furious he wished he were dead.

This woman was, shockingly, a devil from the Nine Underworlds!

Also, it was an extremely powerful Nine Underworlds True Devil.

Not relying on its powers of bewitchment, it would still possess sufficient strength to battle an Immortal Bridge Martial Saint!

The devils of the Nine Underworlds were of various shapes and sizes, possessing myriad variations.

There were those who evoked restlessness and madness in others and those who bewitched others too.

This female devil could bewilder the minds of others, wresting away their essential qi with their lives being drained away in an instant as they mated.

It was just that this female devil clearly appeared furious as well at this moment.

Amidst that bewitching aura, the sinister, vicious intent of chaos and icy coldness grew increasingly prominent as it virtually totally suppressed her seductive appearance, revealing how unstable her mental state currently was.

During that earlier union, her power had been suppressed as she had been unable to wrest away the essence and qi of the man across from her.

She had only been able to helplessly tolerate it as they had mated just like an ordinary husband and wife, having had to bear the life essence of the man in the end.

Simply thinking of this, the Chief of Overgrown Jade Island too wished that a rift could open in the ground and swallow him up.

A martial practitioner like him who cultivated in qi and refined their essence would be able to consciously keep from leaving behind their bloodline if they did not wish to do so.

Yet, he had been unable to control himself just now as he had only been able to helplessly see himself get wasted in the end.

This had wholly been due to that purple-clothed youth!

Chen Qianhua totally ignored the gaze of the Chief of Overgrown Jade Island which seemed as though flames were about to shoot out from it as he instead looked towards that female devil.

The other party's power of bewitchment seemed not to exist for him at all as after glancing over at her a few times, he regained that totally bored, lackadaisical look, "She's not pregnant."

"It looks like the union between man and devil cannot produce any offspring."

His younger brother, Chen Kunhua, sighed, "Elder brother, didn't you already try this with those two other Immortal Bridge

Martial Saints of Overgrown Jade Island earlier?”

Chen Qianhua had a completely disappointed look on his face, “I should still give this a few more tries to see how it goes.”

“Why are you so persistent regarding this, elder brother?”

“Offspring from two human beings, how rare is that? Offspring from man and demon-there have also been quite a few examples of these over the course of history,” Chen Qianhua said casually, “Still, there has never been offspring from union of man and devil. I have a bit of interest in this.”

Chen Kunhua forced a smile. Everyone knew that fallen practitioners aside, the naturally born devils of the Nine Underworlds were all nourished and birthed naturally from the qi of extreme yin and evil of the Nine Underworlds.

Offspring could not be produced from the merger of yin and yang even amongst devils themselves.

He could not help but blurt out, “Elder brother, why do you always love to do such troublesome whilst also totally meaningless things?”

As soon as the words left his mouth, Chen Kunhua actually already regretted it.

The purple-clothed youth before him seemed not to be concerned about this at all as he casually replied, “Because I find it interesting.”

“You should know that interesting things are so precious and hard to come by. This world is such a dull place. I can only find some pleasure for myself.”

He left the room without so much as a backward glance. The Chief of Overgrown Jade Island and that female devil were completely thrown to the back of his mind as he was already totally not concerned with it. He always simply did as he pleased.

Behind him, Chen Kunhua sighed once more.

His elder brother was just like he had always been. Still, he could not always let him do as he pleased.

Along with the advancement of his cultivation base, his elder brother who had always acted as he pleased had been doing more and more ludicrous things.

However much the Three Sovereigns and Five Sovereigns cherished talent, they would probably feel dissatisfied with and wary of him somewhat.

The titles of Heavenly Young Master and Upper Exalt were still rather glorious, hence allowing him to obtain the approval of most people.

Still, whatever the actual situation was, they had to put on a show up front at the very least.

With that, things were much better for him as the Earthly Young Master.

Chen Kunhua shook his head, not following his brother immediately as he instead came before the Chief of Overgrown Jade Island and that female devil.

He soundlessly raised and brought down his palm, with the lives of human and devil brought to an end at once.

Devils would be reborn in the Nine Underworlds, but that was unimportant.

It was already sufficient so long as they were silenced.

Only now did Chen Kunhua leave the stone chamber whereupon he saw his elder brother seated again on the wooden armchair with a totally lazy look on his face.

Chen Qianhua naturally knew what his brother had done. Still, he didn't care. Whether they were killed or not meant nothing to him.

“So you went to Broad Creed Mountain. How did it go?”

“They were stronger than I expected.”

Chen Kunhua narrated the entire course of events from Broad Creed Mountain’s opening ceremony.

Chen Qianhua listened lazily. Only when he heard about the Earth Mother Dao Ritual, the Grand Simplicity Splendour Cloud and Yan Di’s origins did his eyes light up slightly.

“I like unexpected events like these,” The purple-clothed youth smiled as he got up and stretched lazily, “It has been a long time since I met anyone so interesting. If not for the fact that I have one matter on hand that I am even more interested in, I would really like to have some fun with them.”

Chen Kunhua looked at his elder brother upon hearing this as he was met with a mysterious smile, “Aren’t you curious as to why the Brocade Emperor failed to show up all throughout?”

“Was it your handiwork, elder brother?”

“No, it was Zhuang Shen’s,” Chen Qianhua said with a leisurely expression on his face, “Zhuang Shen was boring his entire life, but who would have thought that he would do such an interesting thing before his death. It is a pity that I did not notice it earlier. Otherwise, there may have been more pleasant surprises if I had headed to Broad Creed Mountain and rescued him.”

Chen Kunhua felt rather curious, “What exactly is up with the Brocade Emperor?”

Chen Qianhua smiled, “He’s gone crazy.”

Chen Kunhua was rendered dazed right there and then.

“You never would have thought, right?” Chen Qianhua laughed loudly, “Me too! That’s why I find it interesting!”

“How could I not go take a look for something like that?”

Amidst his laughter, he transformed into a streak of rainbow



light, directly traversing numerous mountains as he disappeared from Overgrown Jade Island.

# HSSB 1055: Where it all began

---

The Upper Exalt Chen Qianhua waved his sleeve and left.

Regaining his wits, the Earthly Young Master Chen Kunhua shook his head, finding it to be simply inconceivable, “The Brocade Emperor has actually...”

“How did Zhuang Shen do it?”

He had to admit that not only was his elder brother interested in this matter, he too was extremely curious regarding it.

This was a major issue which was likely to change the global situation of the World beyond Worlds!

Its influence was far greater than that from the death of the Southern Exalt Zhuang Shen.

It was a pity, though. As this matter concerned too many things, he could not casually get involved in it like Chen Qianhua.

From the Brocade Emperor, Chen Kunhua came to think of that dazzling figure, “I wonder if there is anything that might be worth manipulating to bring about from this?”

He too left the back mountain of Overgrown Jade Island, not letting anyone be alerted in the least.

The corpse of the female devil transformed into black smoke and disappeared, not leaving any traces behind whatsoever.

The corpses of Overgrown Jade Island’s three Immortal Bridge Martial Saints had all been taken care of by him as it seemed as though they had undoubtedly perished from cultivation deviation.

It was very common for martial practitioners who were in death seclusion to not emerge for decades or even centuries.

Even if other martial practitioners on the isle discovered that their three Immortal Bridge bigwigs were dead, they would only believe that they had failed in their cultivation and thus perished

together as a result, all their painstaking efforts over the years having gone down the drain.

The lofty Overgrown Jade Island which was renowned throughout the southeastern Yang Heaven Territory and reigned supreme over the Duckweed Sea would be falling from the clouds after today.

Everything had happened soundlessly with no one the wiser.

Chen Kunhua left the Duckweed Sea and headed north, returning to the central Jun Heaven Territory.

The Upper Exalt's movements were unpredictable as he had no fixed residence and did everything according to his mood.

His cave manor in the central Jun Heaven Territory's Kunlun Mountain had actually been given to his younger brother.

Second Young Master Chen also travelled outside constantly. Still, he stayed at Kunlun Mountain most of the time.

After all, this was the central part of the World beyond Worlds where the spiritual qi was the most abundant. It far surpassed that of the other eight Territories as well as elsewhere in the central Jun Heaven Territory.

Cultivation efficiency was much greater here as it was as though it was blessed by the heavens.

Still, when Second Young Master Chen returned to Kunlun Mountain, he suddenly received news.

“Yan Zhaoge has come to Kunlun Mountain?” Chen Kunhua wondered, “With the Sword Sovereign yet to return to the World beyond Worlds, what is he doing here at Kunlun Mountain? Is it for the Brocade Emperor or for some other experts? Or could this be regarding the matter of his mother?”

.....

Yan Zhaoge was currently standing amongst the myriad

mountains of Kunlun Mountain.

Sensing the spiritual qi flow of the area, Yan Zhaoge nodded repeatedly, “This place that has inherited the name of the central peak of Daoism is extraordinary indeed.”

Kunlun Mountain’s position had been different even amongst all the five peaks of Daoism.

It was different from the other famous mountains to some extent.

This place had once been the dao arena of the Lord of Primordial Beginning of the Jade Clear lineage, one of the founders of the Three Clear lineages.

The Jade Clear direct lineage had been active in Kunlun Mountain in pre-Great Calamity times.

Sadly, following the Great Calamity, Kunlun Mountain too had been reduced to history.

Only after the World beyond Worlds had been created had Kunlun Mountain been created once more. That was why it was termed as New Kunlun.

Going by the introduction of Nie Jingshen, Wang Pu and the others, tracing the origins of the new Kunlun Nine Luminaries of the past, most of them originated from the orthodox lineage of the Jade Clear direct lineage from pre-Great Calamity times.

The Sword Sovereign’s lineage and that of his grandfather, Yan Xingtang, could be traced back to one of the twelve Immortals of the Jade Clear lineage in the era of the Investiture of the Gods, Cultivated Deity Jade Cauldron who had been a personal disciple of the Lord of Primordial Beginning.

Cultivated Deity Jade Cauldron had been a notable bigwig of Daoism as his legacy had also always been the highest accomplishment of the dao of the sword for the Jade Clear direct lineage.

His grandfather had created something new out of the old, bringing new life to the dao of the sword for Daoism with the Illusory Jade Heaven Opening Sword.

“While I never visited the actual Kunlun Mountain of pre-Great Calamity times, the abundance of the spiritual qi of this New Kunlun has already surpassed the average level of that of the great thousand worlds from pre-Great Calamity times. Only a few cave manors and blessed lands can be compared to this.”

Yan Zhaoge said rather interestedly, “The Northern High Peak, the Southern High Peak and Restful Immortal Valley are probably almost able to match with the Immortal realms of above the heavens from pre-Great Calamity times.”

At this moment, he was standing in the vicinity of Restful Immortal Valley with Nie Jingshen and the others.

Kunlun Mountain was split into north and south. The main peak of the south was Qilin Cliff as it was where the dao arena of the Earthly Sovereign was located. It was habitually known as the Southern High Peak.

The main peak of the north was Jade Capital Crag, being where the dao arena of the Sword Sovereign was located. It was habitually known as the Northern High Peak.

Besides these towering, precipitous peaks, there were also many other mountains and valleys around the area.

Restful Immortal Valley was one of these. Besides its abundant spiritual qi, it did not appear any unordinary at all as its scenery was very normal.

This was where the most mysterious and low key of the World beyond Worlds’ Three Sovereigns, the Concealed Sovereign, lived in seclusion.

He had been one of the new Kunlun Nine Luminaries alongside the Earthly Sovereign that year. Still, he had kept an extremely

low profile in the years afterwards.

Amongst the Three Sovereigns and Five Emperors of the World beyond Worlds, he was a rare bigwig who often resided in the World beyond Worlds yet had an extremely meagre sense of existence. It was to the point where one might even wrongly believe his influence to be lower than that of the Five Emperors.

The Concealed Sovereign had seldom expressed his opinion within the World beyond Worlds all these years. Most of the time, he would stay silent or tacitly support the decisions of the Earthly Sovereign.

Still, those who truly attained greater heights would never overlook an existence like a Sovereign.

As the head of the Three Sovereigns, the Earthly Sovereign would generally direct the decisions in the World beyond Worlds. Besides his own strength, this could also be attributed to the frequent, formless support of the Concealed Sovereign.

Upon his arrival at Kunlun Mountain, due to his relationship with his grandfather Yan Xingtang and his senior apprentice-uncle Yue Zhenbei, according to propriety, Yan Zhaoge needed to pay a visit to Qilin Cliff and Restful Immortal Valley.

As the Earthly Sovereign was not in the World beyond Worlds, there was no need to go to Qilin Cliff for now.

Therefore, led by Nie Jingshen and Wang Pu, he headed to Restful Immortal Valley before going over to the Northern High Peak.

Still, according to the rules of the Concealed Sovereign, there was no need to enter. He merely needed to pay his respects.

Besides a few attendants, there was no one else present in the Restful Immortal Valley.

Amongst the Three Sovereigns and Five Emperors, the Earthly Sovereign had disciples like Wang Zhengcheng while the Sword

Sovereign had disciples like Nie Jingshen, Bai Tao and Wang Pu too.

The Heaven Emperor had descendants like Qing Shuzi and Daoist Leading Mist. Besides his daughter Fu Ting, the Brocade Emperors had other disciples too.

The other three Emperors, the Female Emperor Jie Mingkong included, all had descendants too.

There was only the Concealed Sovereign who had no children, disciples or descendants as he was all alone.

Yan Zhaoge and the others left the Restful Immortal Valley, immediately departing for the Northern High Peak's Jade Capital Crag.

The Southwestern Exalt Bai Tao had already returned alone to the southwestern Vermillion Heaven Territory before this. Thus, it was Nie Jingshen and Wang Pu who brought Yan Zhaoge along.

All these years, Jade Capital Crag's affairs had generally been handled by Wang Pu in an orderly fashion.

Nie Jingshen spent most of his time cultivating.

They first bowed and paid their respects to those ancestral tablets.

As he saw the one that belonged to his grandfather, Yan Xingtang, Yan Zhaoge felt rather emotional.

After settling down Shi Jun and the others, Nie Jingshen bid Yan Zhaoge farewell as he went off to cultivate.

Wang Pu led Yan Zhaoge in leaving Jade Capital Crag and descending the Northern High Peak.

They were headed to a valley at the north of Kunlun Mountain.

This was named Bright Connection Valley.

It was naturally where the cave manor of Xue Chuqing's Grand

Master, the Bright Connection Emperor Hu Yuexin, had been located that year.

While outsiders did not know of this, Hu Yuexin possessed a cave manor in Kunlun Mountain too.

Of course, this had been over a thousand years ago. It had been investigated by several different groups of people countless times as it had long since fallen to dilapidation and ruin now.

However, Yan Zhaoge still decided to begin his search here where everything had first started.



# HSSB 1056: Scheming while fleeing

---

Bright Connection Valley had long since been overturned by others many times through.

Not only had all the things there been taken away and investigated, even the environment had already changed.

The ground had even been dug up, the earth exposed.

According to Wang Pu's words, due to the countless investigations, the current spiritual qi flow of Bright Connection Valley's earth veins was already completely different from how it had been in the past.

"This place has been in ruins for many years. Still, your mother was smart as she even deliberately returned here to stay for a period of time before where no one would think to look for her," Wang Pu said, "Therefore, after her departure, this place was searched and investigated over once more."

Yan Zhaoge stroked his lower chin, "I can understand that."

Many people, the Earth Exalt Wang Zhengcheng included, had been trying to capture Xue Chuqing not only due to the pressure from the Immortal Court.

They too were similarly interested in that Heavenly Essence Stone fragment.

Whether or not the Heavenly Essence Stone truly possessed the function that Yin Tianxia and Hu Yuexin spoke of, it was a treasure that the Immeasurable Heavenly Lord and the Immortal Court yearned for greatly at the very least.

Its value was definitely not low.

Since that was so, whether they would keep it for themselves or hand it over, there was still a need to seize Xue Chuqing and obtain it.

Overturning the entirety of the Bright Connection Valley was naturally something they would have no qualms in doing.

Walking once around the area, Yan Zhaoge did not discover anything.

Still, he was vaguely caught by a rather strange feeling as inspiration seemed to flash past his mind. Still, it was gone in a flash as he was hard pressed to apprehend it.

After investigating the area again and confirming his inability to learn anything from it, Yan Zhaoge could only quell his thoughts and leave the Bright Connection Valley together with Wang Pu.

The two then searched those other places where Xue Chuqing was said to have appeared before.

It was only to be expected that these places would definitely have been searched by others before.

Under such circumstances, even if clues had initially been left behind, they would already have been obtained or damaged by those who had come before.

Wang Pu very patiently led Yan Zhaoge along in visiting all these places.

While he believed that they would not learn anything from this, merely gaining reassurance from the fact that they had made an effort, he bore no resentment in accompanying Yan Zhaoge throughout.

Yan Zhaoge was not disappointed, however. On the contrary, he felt his thoughts growing increasingly clearer the more he saw.

Yan Zhaoge felt that he had grasped that flash of inspiration from earlier.

While Xue Chuqing had not left behind any valuable clues at the places where she had resided before, these locations were actually thought-provoking in themselves.

If one were to connect the various coordinates with lines, they might find that some sort of rhythm seemingly existed within.

After realising this, Yan Zhaoge felt that his mother was really not simple indeed.

While she had been fleeing, this had not been the sole thought on her mind as she had even been up to some kind of scheme.

One might say that she had been fulfilling some sort of mission, which might be hers or instructions of her lineage.

Yan Zhaoge was still unable to get to the bottom of this rhythm right now.

Some of the places that Xue Chuqing had hidden in would surely have been chosen as impromptu hiding places due to some unforeseen circumstances and such.

In other words, they did not fit into that rhythm, not being part of her overarching plan.

At the same time, in order to conceal her true goal, Xue Chuqing would definitely have created many false trails too.

He would have to precisely exclude these locations before he might be able to restore the entirety of her plan.

Moreover, some of her hiding places might still be unknown as no one had discovered them thus far.

Before he had managed to gain a precise grasp of this, Yan Zhaoge would be unable to see through the profundities that existed therein.

This was especially so considering how most of the places that she had been to had been investigated on a large scale by those seeking to find her. Even if she had left some special mechanisms behind, they would long since have been deactivated or cleared away.

How would her scheme exert its effects?

Or was it to say that just having made a single trip to these places was already sufficient?

Next, had she already finished the route that had been pre-planned in her schemes?

How far away was she from the endpoint as of right now?

“Has anyone else besides me managed to see through this?” Yan Zhaoge wondered as he walked.

At this point in time, Yan Zhaoge already no longer planned to continue examining those locations.

He looked at the vast map of the World beyond Worlds and marked the points where Xue Chuqing had previously appeared based on the information provided by Wang Pu.

Then, he quietly observed these points and lines that might exist between any two individual ones.

Yan Zhaoge believed that others should have thought of this possibility as well. While they would doubt that Xue Chuqing had really been doing something like this, they would probably not have neglected any possibility whatsoever.

At a time like this, one would have to depend on their accumulated knowledge to seek the truth, finding the underlying rhythm that potentially existed.

With the current strength of Yan Zhaoge’s soul, it was not difficult for him to construct hundreds of crisscrossing lines in his mind to form thousands, ten of thousands of combinations.

He unceasingly recalled the various diagrams and information from his memories before performing some comparison and selection.

The combinations swiftly decreased as the wrong ones were eliminated non-stop.

While several hundred possibilities still remained, the search

radius had already been reduced greatly.

Yan Zhaoge exhaled, next muttering to himself, “I will require more information from here on out. Rushing matters will not help.”

He composed himself before saying to Wang Pu, “Senior apprentice-brother Wang, it has been tough on you.”

“It looks like it would indeed be difficult to gain anything if we continue searching like this.”

Wang Pu smiled, “I understand your thoughts.”

Yan Zhaoge said, “Let us return to the Northern High Peak then. Still, there is a matter which I may have to ask you about when the time comes.”

“Of course,” Wang Pu nodded before looking at the surrounding environment, “Speaking of which, we are in the vicinity of Ingenious Flying Peak right now. You can be considered acquainted with Ingenious Flying Peak. How about paying them a visit?”

Yan Zhaoge answered, “Passing by without visiting would surely be rude. Also, I wonder if the Brocade Emperor has returned.”

Wang Pu immediately led the way as the two traversed the lofty peaks of Kunlun Mountain together.

Ingenious Flying Peak was a part of Kunlun Mountain. As the main peak of that area, it was surrounded by an endless range of mountains which could all be considered landmarks in their own right.

The Brocade Emperor’s dao arena, Red Lotus Cliff, was the highest peak of Ingenious Flying Peak.

As Yan Zhaoge and Wang Pu paid a visit now, Red Lotus Cliff naturally treated them with due respect.

First not speaking of how Yan Zhaoge currently possessed

unordinary strength and status, Wang Pu was a ninth level Martial Saint and a disciple of the Sword Sovereign Yue Zhenbei who represented the Sword Sovereign in managing the usual affairs of Jade Capital Crag. This was worth Ingenious Flying Peak treating him with the utmost respect beneath only the Brocade Emperor.

Of course, the martial practitioners of Ingenious Flying Peak inevitably felt rather awkward as they saw Yan Zhaoge at this moment.

Amidst their awkwardness, they appeared rather anxious.

As Yan Zhaoge arrived at Red Lotus Cliff, he saw ‘Grand Red Lotus’ Fu Ting whom he had not seen for many years.

Close to seven years had passed, yet Fu Ting still remained in secluded cultivation at Red Lotus Cliff, never once emerging. Her cultivation base had been improving by leaps and bounds, though.

She had been a fifth level Martial Saint in the past. Now, she was at the peak of the sixth level of the Martial Saint realm, the late Seeing Divinity stage, also already being confident of ascending the Immortal Bridge.

It was only because of her father, the Brocade Emperor, that she felt unable to settle down, thus having been delayed.

Both sides felt rather emotional as they saw each other. Fu Ting first congratulated Yan Zhaoge on the success of Broad Creed Mountain’s opening ceremony before expressing her apologies yet again.

“There is no need to stand on ceremony, Miss Fu. Speaking of the Brocade Emperor’s current situation, it might still be because of this Yan and Broad Creed Mountain,” Yan Zhaoge said, “It probably is not the case that the Brocade Emperor went back on his word and failed to show up. Instead, there must have been a cause behind this.”

# HSSB 1057: A deep valley within Kunlun Mountain

---

Looking at Yan Zhaoge, Fu Ting nodded lightly, “Looking from the current situation, my father is indeed being tied down by some matter. Someone did not wish for him to attend your sect’s opening ceremony.”

“Even so, I am still deeply apologetic at how my father ultimately failed to fulfil his promise.”

Yan Zhaoge said, “During my sect’s opening ceremony, the Southern Exalt Zhuang Shen’s lot vaguely hinted at this with their words. They seemed confident from the start that the Brocade Emperor would be unable to make it to our opening ceremony in time.”

“The Heaven Emperor, though, did not seem to be privy to this.”

Fu Ting was rather taken aback upon hearing his words, “Oh? We were still suspecting earlier that it might be the handiwork of the Heaven Emperor or the Southern High Peak’s Qilin Cliff.”

Yan Zhaoge said, “If I am not wrong, this may have been caused by Phoenix Ritual Mountain’s Wutong Slope.”

Fu Ting was even more surprised upon hearing this.

While the Southern Exalt Zhuang Shen had been one of the World beyond Worlds’ Ten Exalts, the lord of the southern Blazing Heaven Territory, it would really be shocking to say that he possessed the ability to trap the Brocade Emperor for a great many days.

Fu Ting knew that Yan Zhaoge had no need to malign Wutong Slope regarding this matter.

Zhuang Shen had already perished in the Royal Reed Sea. Phoenix Ritual Mountain’s Wutong Slope would be completely

unable to withstand Broad Creed Mountain's upcoming domineering advance into the southern Blazing Heaven Territory.

There was no need for Yan Zhaoge to frame Wutong Slope at all, giving them another enemy in the form of Ingenious Flying Peak.

"While I cannot be completely certain of this, I feel that the Southern Exalt Zhuang Shen seemed to have been the most confident back then."

Yan Zhaoge had his own guess about this, but still could not be certain of it. Thus, he merely hinted at the matter. Still, it was already sufficient for Red Lotus Cliff to make a decision.

"When my father and I accepted the invitation of the Brocade Emperor back then, heading to the Minor No Hatred dao arena as guests, the Brocade Emperor suddenly left for outside and only returned after a very long time. I actually think that this might be related to today's matter."

Yan Zhaoge said, "At that time, it was none other than the Brocade Emperor who helped my sect and the southeast to obstruct the Heaven Emperor, wrecking the plans of he and Southern Zhuang."

"Not long afterwards, my father and I arrived to find that the Brocade Emperor had suddenly left. I felt that the matter was out of the ordinary then."

Fu Ting knit her brows, pondering for a moment before she finally said, "I asked father about this afterwards. Still, he merely told me that it was a private matter and did not tell me the reason."

Yan Zhaoge lightly tapped his temples, "I suspect that the matter at the Minor No Hatred dao arena back then was actually a prelude to today's incident!"

The other party had already been scheming for this at that time.

At the Minor No Hatred dao arena, he had simply been testing



things out.

He had not known if this would be effective or how exactly things might unfold.

Following that matter, Phoenix Ritual Mountain's Wutong Slope had basically become confident of this.

It was only because the Ten Exalts had congregated at Kunlun Mountain and the Heaven Emperor and the Brocade Emperor had gone to extradimensional space that this matter had been delayed.

Only when Zhuang Shen had returned from Kunlun Mountain to the southern Blazing Heaven Territory, preparing to seek vengeance from Yan Zhaoge and Broad Creed Mountain, had this been actualised.

Thus, today's situation had been created.

Still, Yan Zhaoge deeply suspected that Zhuang Shen's lot themselves had actually been unclear on what sort of effects their plan might actually be able to exert.

They could only be certain that it would definitely be able to hinder the Brocade Emperor, preventing him from making it to Broad Creed Mountain's opening ceremony in time.

That the Brocade Emperor was still missing even now was probably beyond their predictions.

The disappearance of the Brocade Emperor, one of the World beyond Worlds' Five Emperors, was definitely no minor thing.

It was only because the Concealed Sovereign was in secluded cultivation and the Sword Sovereign and Earthly Sovereign were absent that nothing was happening. Otherwise, the Three Sovereigns would be alerted eventually, coming to look into this matter.

Fu Ting muttered to herself, "Could it be that Southern Zhuang contacted others for assistance?"

“But even Mars Halberd would not possess the ability to continually entrap my father.”

“Could it be some perilous danger from some unique part of extradimensional space?”

Despite their puzzlement, the martial practitioners of Ingenious Flying Peak still directed their attention towards the south.

Though Zhuang Shen had perished, Phoenix Ritual Mountain’s Wutong Slope still existed.

They might just be able to find someone there who was aware of what had happened.

Yan Zhaoge knew that everyone from Ingenious Flying Peak was currently worried about the Brocade Emperor. Therefore, he did not linger as he took his leave of Fu Ting and the others.

The martial practitioners of Red Lotus Cliff apologised again as they respectfully escorted Yan Zhaoge and Wang Pu out.

Gazing back at Ingenious Flying Peak, Yan Zhaoge wondered, “It would be understandable if he were a Martial Saint, even a Human Exalt. Someone who is already a True Immortal should be fine, right?”

He shook his head, ceasing in his thoughts as he returned with Wang Pu to Northern High Peak’s Jade Capital Crag.

“Senior apprentice-brother Wang, there is something which I would like your help with,” Yan Zhaoge requested on the way back.

Wang Pu smiled, “I have been curious ever since you mentioned it before.”

“What is this about? Say it, and I will help you out if I can. If I cannot, we can only wait for Master to return first.”

Yan Zhaoge chuckled, “You would definitely be able to get it done, senior apprentice-brother Wang.”

Wang Pu asked interestedly, “Tell me about it then.”

“Look over there,” Yan Zhaoge halted, standing atop the air as he pointed towards a distant valley.

Wang Pu glanced at it and soon said after identifying their surroundings, “That is Dragon Butterfly Valley which does have abundant spiritual qi. Why? You like it and want a branch altar for your Broad Creed Mountain there?”

He looked back at Yan Zhaoge, “I’m afraid we would have to wait for Master to return first.”

Dragon Butterfly Valley was an ownerless land. Still, according to the rules of Kunlun Mountain, only the Three Sovereigns and Five Emperors could establish dao arenas or cave manors.

The Earth Exalt Wang Zhengcheng resided at Southern High Peak’s Qilin Cliff which was actually the dao arena of his Master, the Earthly Sovereign. His own cave manor was elsewhere other than Kunlun Mountain.

The sole exception was the Upper Exalt Chen Qianhua. When he had attained the Human Exalt stage that year, the Three Sovereigns had granted him special permission to establish a manor of his own at Kunlun Mountain.

Of course, people could look for places to hide like Xue Chuqing had done. Many would sneak into Kunlun Mountain to cultivate. Still, they would be sent off the mountain if they were discovered.

Wang Pu smiled, “This is not me being stingy and tyrannical.”

Yan Zhaoge nodded slightly, “The spiritual qi at Kunlun Mountain is too dense. It would be more efficient for cultivation in the short term. Yet, if they were to reside here for long periods of time, most martial practitioners would instead be unable to take it.”

“Only experts who have pushed open the door to Immortality are suited to reside here, establishing their cave manors amidst the

spiritual qi flow of the heavens and earth of the surrounding area.”

Yan Zhaoge himself would certainly not be worried about this problem. As he bore the Cyclic Heavenly Scripture and Yin Yang Heavenly Scripture, his body would be able to tolerate it.

As his mother possessed a half of the River Diagram, she naturally had no need to fear this as well.

The Upper Exalt’s ability to establish a manor here truly added another brush stroke to his legend.

“You and senior apprentice-uncle Yan are of Grand Master’s bloodline and both possess strength no inferior to that of Upper Chen’s,” Wang Pu said, “While it may still be a bit early for you to establish a manor in Kunlun Mountain, it is not impossible. Still, we would require Master’s help for that too.”

Yan Zhaoge smiled, shaking his head, “You misunderstand, senior apprentice-brother Wang. It is not that my Broad Creed Mountain wishes to establish a manor here. Instead, I wish to personally utilise this place.”

“I would like you to help with making sure that I am not interrupted during this process.”

# HSSB 1058: Affecting the entire World beyond Worlds

---

“You wish to personally use it?” Wang Pu’s gaze flickered as he looked at Yan Zhaoge, “What is it that you want to do there?”

Yan Zhaoge’s skill at creating trouble was not inferior to his talent in the martial dao in the least.

Having collected information on Yan Zhaoge, Wang Pu had gained a deep understanding of him.

He knew how Yan Zhaoge had wrecked the plans of the Heaven Emperor in the Royal Reed Sea initially and how he had made a trip to the south and wrecked half of Phoenix Ritual Mountain afterwards.

Even less had to be said about how he had mightily resisted the Heaven Emperor at Broad Creed Mountain’s opening ceremony in the Royal Reed Sea only recently.

Yan Zhaoge’s name of Fallen Deity was already publicly recognised throughout the entire World beyond Worlds by now.

Still, his reputation for creating trouble was similarly resplendent.

It was just that he was mostly able to take care of the trouble that he himself had provoked and created.

Yet, a warning bell tolled loudly in Wang Pu’s heart now as he felt his head growing slightly numb.

“Why are you so nervous, senior apprentice-brother Wang?” Yan Zhaoge chuckled, “This is a good thing, a good thing of course.”

He gazed over in the direction of Dragon Butterfly Valley, “When passing by there earlier, I noticed some special characteristics in the spiritual qi flow there.”

“I would like to excavate a space in that area. It should be extremely suitable for refining pills and artifacts.”

Wang Pu was slightly taken aback, “Oh?”

While he was not all that familiar with Dragon Butterfly Valley, he was surely more familiar with it than Yan Zhaoge was.

Yet, he had not detected such advantages which were to be found in this area.

Yan Zhaoge smiled, flipping his palm. A massive pill cauldron flew out from his Shadow Shrinking Pouch, growing within the air as it appeared before Wang Pu.

Wang Pu gazed carefully at it, a quizzical look appearing on his face.

He was clearly able to tell that the pill cauldron was unordinary. He carefully observed it again to confirm it before looking at Yan Zhaoge, “This is an Internal Crystal Furnace?”

“That’s right, it is the Internal Crystal Furnace,” Yan Zhaoge nodded, “When I was still in a lower world that year, I inadvertently gained a diagram of this treasure, though it was fragmented and incomplete. Through analysing and developing it over the years, I have made it how it is like now.”

Wang Pu fingered the surface of the pill cauldron, “It is no wonder then.”

Unlike lower worlds like the Eight Extremities World and the Vast Ocean World, the various legacies and relic sites of pre-Great Calamity times in the World beyond Worlds were comparatively better preserved and complete.

It had been rumoured since long ago that there were fortunate survivors of pre-Great Calamity times.

Because of these survivors, while their legacies and culture were incomplete, they were unlike that within the lower worlds like the

Eight Extremities World where all had been severely discontinued.

Before the Great Calamity, Internal Crystal Furnaces had been widespread.

Other varieties of the Internal Crystal Furnace had been developed by many people. Therefore, there were many differences in their specific features.

In the World beyond Worlds, there was a lineage where the Internal Crystal Furnace's construction method was preserved in its entirety.

Still, due to the scarcity of its materials, this Internal Crystal Furnace could not be mass produced.

As the disciple of the Sword Sovereign, Wang Pu was naturally no stranger to the Internal Crystal Furnace. There was more than a single such Internal Crystal Furnace on the Northern High Peak's Jade Capital Crag.

The Internal Crystal Furnace that Yan Zhaoge was currently displaying was different in several aspects from the one that had been successfully reproduced within the World beyond Worlds.

Therefore, Wang Pu had to confirm it a couple of times before he could be certain enough of it.

"If it is the Internal Crystal Furnace, you can use it at Jade Capital Crag too. The spiritual qi there is even more abundant," Wang Pu said, "Also, this is just an Internal Crystal Furnace. There is no need to be overly serious about this, right?"

The Internal Crystal Furnace was immensely beneficial when forging artifacts.

With Yan Zhaoge's Internal Crystal Furnace, he was completely able to casually mass produce ones below the Sacred Artifact level.

Even low-grade Sacred Artifacts could be easily created by Merging Avatar Martial Saints when the materials were sufficient.

There was no need to be worried about their probability of success at all.

As long as there were sufficient, suitable materials, Seeing Divinity Martial Saints would similarly be able to easily forge mid-grade Sacred Artifacts.

If not for the Internal Crystal Furnace, first not speaking of the probability of success and the quality of the produced artifact, just the time that would be depleted alone would mean many long years.

In some cases, decades or even centuries could still be considered short.

Still, the Internal Crystal Furnace was not omnipotent.

The effects that it could exert already seemed meagre when forging high-grade Sacred Artifacts.

There was no need to even think about Immortal Artifacts.

Even though Yan Zhaoge had already ascended the Immortal Bridge now, it would be the same when he ascended the Human Exalt stage or even pushed open the door to Immortality in the future.

This item was limited in its capabilities in terms of its structure.

If there was no revolutionary change, there would naturally be no heaven-roiling, earth-overturning changes to it.

This was just like how the use of the External Crystal Furnace was also limited as it fell behind that of the Internal Crystal Furnace greatly.

Before the Great Calamity, the various Internal Crystal Furnaces of various types had all had upper limits which could be greatly different.

This was indisputably a supreme treasure for the Eight Extremities World and the other lower worlds.



It was similarly a treasure whose worth rivalled a city's for some minor sects of the World beyond Worlds and even the likes of the Dim Darkness Sect and North Sea Sword Pavilion.

Still, this appeared unimportant for the likes of the current Yan Zhaoge and Wang Pu.

“The artifacts that I want to forge now do not depend on the Immortal Crystal Furnace. Of course there is no need to be overly concerned about this matter,” Yan Zhaoge snapped his fingers, “Still, there is a chance of this Internal Crystal Furnace being upgraded further. What do you think, senior apprentice-brother Wang?”

“It is not that its strength will be able to rise for sure. It could also be improved in other aspects. For instance...”

Yan Zhaoge chuckled, “...For example, mass production.”

Wang Pu was shocked, “To what extent can it be mass produced?”

Yan Zhaoge spread his arms apart in an embracing motion, “It would not be able to encompass the entire World beyond Worlds, of course. Still, it could definitely become widespread in some major sects.”

“Even that itself would be shocking,” Wang Pu calmed down and thought about it.

If the Internal Crystal Furnace became widespread in the World beyond Worlds, it would result in the abundance of spirit artifacts and normal artifacts.

Still, Sacred Artifacts would not erupt greatly in terms of quantity.

This was because the materials required were limited.

This was especially so when the materials required for high-grade Sacred Artifacts and mid-grade Sacred Artifacts had always been

scarce.

While Yan Zhaoge seemed like a wealthy guy, the Exalts generally all possessed more than a single high-grade Sacred Artifact too.

Still, from the perspective of the entire World beyond Worlds, considering all their Immortal Bridge Martial Saints, they did not possess even a single high-grade Sacred Artifact on average.

Many Immortal Bridge Martial Saints, especially early Immortal Bridge Martial Saints, had to make do with mid-grade Sacred Artifacts.

Therefore, the widespread use of Internal Crystal Furnaces would not lead to a massive increase in the quantity of Sacred Artifacts.

Simply put, even a skilful housewife would be hard pressed to cook a meal without rice.

However, the mass production of Internal Crystal Furnaces would still lead to many changes in the World beyond Worlds.

On the whole, the strength of the World beyond Worlds' martial practitioners would be increased greatly.

Because of the Internal Crystal Furnace, the speed at which martial practitioners forged artifacts would rise greatly.

While those without the required materials would still lack them, the time required to forge the Sacred Artifacts for those with materials would be reduced drastically.

Several years, even decades or longer, would have been required otherwise. Yet, success would be seen very quickly with the Internal Crystal Furnace.

Wang Pu was naturally able to understand the significance therein.

“The geography of Dragon Butterfly Valley can aid you in this?”

Looking at Yan Zhaoge, he asked curiously.

Yan Zhaoge smiled, “To be honest, it is not just the Internal Crystal Furnace that will benefit.”

# HSSB 1059: Arms dealer Yan Zhaoge

---

The Internal Crystal Furnace had played an important role in Yan Zhaoge's growth and Broad Creed Mountain's rise to prominence.

In the current Eight Extremities World, all Broad Creed Mountain's martial practitioners, regardless of their cultivation base, were armed to the teeth with high-quality weapons, suppressing the other powers.

Still, as the cultivation bases of Yan Zhaoge, Yan Di and the others advanced, the effects exerted by the Internal Crystal Furnace were also decreasing relative to them.

Yan Zhaoge had already long since been thinking of other plans to raise his sect's ability to compete with potential enemies.

As for the Internal Crystal Furnace itself, it could be sold just like some medicinal pills or weapons.

Through this process, he could obtain even more valuable resources and be bolstered in other areas.

Some might say that the resulting increment in strength of the other sects would wipe away a part of Broad Creed Mountain's advantage.

While that would cease to exist, in return would instead come advantages in yet more aspects.

Overall, the benefits would be greater than the detriments.

The Internal Crystal Furnace was no longer to be their classified secret and the source of their ability to compete with others as they could definitely use it as a bargaining chip with which they obtained more benefits.

Yan Zhaoge was not worried about how he would sell this.

Any two opposing powers would be diligently raising their

strength, attempting to suppress and gobble up the other side.

Assume that the peak experts of both sides were fourth level Martial Saints of the early Seeing Divinity stage.

It would be pointless if they did not have sufficient materials, but if this was not the case, they would naturally hope to forge a mid-grade Sacred Artifact of their own.

If two opponents who had originally been evenly matched fought, one being bare-handed while the other possessed a weapon, this would virtually be able to decide victory and defeat.

Both sides would initially have needed to spend a long amount of time working on this. Still, if one of them possessed the Internal Crystal Furnace, it would save them a lot of time as the Sacred Artifact would be successfully completed much more quickly. They would indisputably be able to seize the upper hand and suppress the other party.

The same principle applied for Merging Avatar Martial Saints and low-grade Sacred Artifacts too.

Of course, these were not as rare and scarce as high-grade Sacred Artifacts.

There were as many experts as there were clouds in the World beyond Worlds along with an abundance of treasures.

If one really sought a mid-grade Sacred Artifact, they could attempt to pay an immense price in a trade with someone else.

Still, there would likely be no supply whatever the demand.

It was not difficult for Immortal Bridge Martial Saints to forge mid-grade Sacred Artifacts. Still, the gazes of Immortal Bridge Martial Saints were eternally still focused on high-grade Sacred Artifacts.

If there was a need for artifacts and spirit artifacts that were of a lower tier, a single Internal Crystal Furnace alone would be

sufficient to decide the way the battle went.

For any power which sought to achieve greater heights, what would they do if they did not acquire it but their opponent did?

“It feels like I am about to become a major arms dealer,” Yan Zhaoge stroked his lower chin, “In my impressions, many arms dealers will go around stoking flames and secretly causing conflicts, hence increasing the demand for their weapons.”

“Should I consider doing something in this area too? It seems like that might be a bit too unethical...”

The Internal Crystal Furnace was not the sole good which Yan Zhaoge had prepared for this time’s trade.

It was simply a portion of his overall scheme.

Besides the search for his mother Xue Chuqing, he had also come to Kunlun Mountain this time to take a look around and choose a suitable location to complete the necessary preparations for this.

Next, he would acquire various valuable resources of the World beyond Worlds in large amounts.

The current Broad Creed Mountain reigned supreme over the Royal Reed Sea as they could decide anything that happened there so long as they were willing to.

Outside of the Royal Reed Sea, Yan Di had already led forces in invading the southern Blazing Heaven Territory.

With how things were now, the southern Blazing Heaven Territory was destined to be unable to block Broad Creed Mountain’s footsteps.

While no one from Broad Creed Mountain had yet reached the Human Exalt stage, bar any unexpected circumstances, Broad Creed Mountain was to become the new, crownless monarch of the southern Blazing Heaven Territory.

Yan Zhaoge and Broad Creed Mountain would hence be entitled

to the greatest share of the resources within the southern Blazing Heaven Territory.

However, this might not be the case for sure in other parts of the World beyond Worlds.

Let alone the central Jun Heaven Territory or the likes of the western Turtle Heaven Territory and the eastern Vast Heaven Territory, even the southeast and northeast which had always been on good terms with Broad Creed Mountain as well as the southwestern Vermillion Heaven Territory that was ruled by Bai Tao, a disciple of the Sword Sovereign, would not be able to fully supply Yan Zhaoge and Broad Creed Mountain with what they wanted with all their might.

They would definitely fulfil their own needs and wants before thinking about other people's desires.

This was an understandable thing.

The authority to call upon the resources of the entire World beyond Worlds belonged only to the Three Sovereigns and Five Emperors of Kunlun Mountain.

Prior to the opening ceremony, Yan Zhaoge, Yan Di and the others had not been thinking so loftily and far ahead.

They would gradually strive for greater heights, eventually naturally coming to enjoy the benefits they should be entitled to.

Still, with the major backer that was the Northern High Peak's Jade Capital Crag, Yan Zhaoge and Broad Creed Mountain were sufficiently equipped to strive for more now.

Of course, it would definitely not be okay to simply make use of Jade Capital Crag's name to act powerful and try to expand and acquire benefits everywhere.

Jade Capital Crag was not the sole, undisputed power within the World beyond Worlds.

While the Three Sovereigns and Five Emperors had the authority to call upon the resources of the entire World beyond Worlds, these resources were limited at the end of the day. Conflict might exist amongst they themselves as well here.

Yan Zhaoge was currently planning to collect the various treasures and resources that he wanted using another method.

By doing this with Jade Capital Crag behind him, he could borrow the might of their authority.

Of course, this would also help Jade Capital Crag to acquire more resources and speaking power.

Of the current Three Sovereigns, it was ultimately the Sword Sovereign who had risen to power the latest. While the Concealed Sovereign kept a low profile, the Earthly Sovereign eternally possessed a domineering stance.

Yan Zhaoge was not in a place to evaluate the many policies of the Earthly Sovereign's right now.

He did not have sufficient information on hand as he still needed to observe things rather than hastily come to any judgments.

How someone was thinking inwardly and what he was outwardly doing could often differ.

Therefore, aside from the matter of his mother, Yan Zhaoge was currently neutral with regard to the Earthly Sovereign's ways.

Still, if he had to choose a side to support between he and the Sword Sovereign right now, it would definitely be the Sword Sovereign that he selected, no question about that.

"It isn't just the Internal Crystal Furnace?" Wang Pu quickly noticed the main point in Yan Zhaoge's words.

It could be said that while they were all disciples of the Sword Sovereign, whether it was Wang Pu or the Southwestern Exalt Bai Tao, their styles were both different from that of Nie Jingshen's.



Therefore, Wang Pu understood Yan Zhaoge's meaning at once, "In having come to Kunlun Mountain this time, you are really going for something big, junior apprentice-brother Yan."

Yan Zhaoge smiled, "Senior apprentice-uncle Yue and the Earthly Sovereign are both away from the World beyond Worlds while the Concealed Sovereign is probably unconcerned about such matters. Even if I make a bit of a mess, it would not be hard to get it all cleaned up afterwards."

Wang Pu pondered on this.

His style of acting was actually a more cautious and stable one. Truthfully speaking, he did harbour doubts regarding Yan Zhaoge's plan.

Still, he ultimately nodded after pondering for a moment, "Do as you like. Besides Dragon Butterfly Valley, is there anything else that you require my help with?"

"Thank you, senior apprentice-brother Wang," Yan Zhaoge said, "Dragon Butterfly Valley is for my personal use. I will specifically work on some preparations here, and do not intend to make this widely known too."

"Afterwards, we can officially have it that I will be looking for a place to develop within the central Jun Heaven Territory, outside of Kunlun Mountain. Still, I myself will not be stationed there. It is to be taken care of by Broad Creed Mountain disciples. Still, since we are totally unfamiliar with this area, I have requested for a senior apprentice-brother of Jade Capital Crag to help watch over it."

# HSSB 1060: Hidden Sea Sword, Wind Thunder Manor

---

In the eyes of others, since Yan Zhaoge's plan could be actualised, Jade Capital Crag would definitely have been in the know about it. Thus, it was not important if people actually went to watch over the location or not.

Even if they were totally unfamiliar with the area, with Yan Zhaoge himself going to set things up, he would definitely be able to establish a solid foundation.

Not mentioning his backer, the Sword Sovereign, his own strength alone was already sufficient to sweep through any single place in the central Jun Heaven Territory outside of Kunlun Mountain.

Therefore, his requesting of someone to come from Jade Capital Crag was more to express a stance.

If he benefited from this venture, he was willing to have Jade Capital Crag enjoy the fruits of this too.

“If it truly is inconvenient for a senior apprentice-brother from Jade Capital Crag to appear in person, I wonder if senior apprentice-brother Wang has any sect that you can trust and are closer to within the central Jun Heaven Territory?” Yan Zhaoge added, “Requesting their participation is fine too.”

Wang Pu shook his head, “There is no need for that. Which part of it is inconvenient?”

Yan Zhaoge smiled, “It would naturally be best if a senior apprentice-brother from Jade Capital Crag assists us. Still, to pick things up quickly and for greater momentum with news being spread quickly, we would still require the participation of the local powers.”

“That's easy,” Wang Pu said, “Follow me.”

The two left Dragon Butterfly Valley and returned to the Northern High Peak's Jade Capital Crag.

Wang Pu brought Yan Zhaoge to a secluded chamber, knocking on the door. A young man who looked around thirty on the outside emerged from within.

“What wind has blown you over, senior apprentice-brother Wang, junior apprentice-brother Yan?” The young man smiled, greeting them.

His name was Qiu Jiahai and he was an early Immortal Bridge Martial Saint who was acclaimed as the ‘Hidden Sea Sword’.

He was naturally older than Yan Zhaoge. Still, he was extremely young relative to his current cultivation level.

The other party was comparatively amicable and slick and flexible in his actions as others would virtually be unable to sense that this was a domineering sword cultivator.

Amongst the various disciples of Jade Capital Crag, he was the one who was on the best terms with martial practitioners of the outside world, having the most connections.

Still, he was actually tough on the outside as well as the inside, just that his sharpness was constantly hidden within. Despite appearing casual and easygoing most of the time, he was firm and resolute with regard to his principles. This was why he possessed the nickname of the Hidden Sea Sword.

It described how he was endlessly able to accept and bear others like an ocean, yet still possessed the sharpness of a sword that was concealed within.

When Yan Zhaoge had first arrived at Jade Capital Crag, Wang Pu and Nie Jingshen had introduced him to the people there. Thus, he naturally knew Qiu Jiahai too.

From this, he knew that Wang Pu was indeed acting with him and Broad Creed Mountain in mind.

Of the people of Jade Capital Crag, Qiu Jiahai was the best candidate to assist in the plans that he would be implementing thereafter besides Wang Pu himself.

“I will have to bother senior apprentice-brother Qiu to help with some matters,” Yan Zhaoge cupped his hands, chuckling.

Qiu Jiahai smiled, “Nah, it will be no trouble at all. Just say it.”

On hearing the intentions of Yan Zhaoge and Wang Pu, a quizzical look first appeared on Qiu Jiahai’s face before he asked, “Oh, junior apprentice-brother Yan actually still possesses such methods?”

Still, he smiled soon afterwards, “Well, compared to the Earth Mother Dao Ritual, the Internal Crystal Furnace is really nothing at all.”

Qiu Jiahai nodded straightforwardly, “Alright, I will assist you in this. When will you be starting?”

“First, we must find a power within the central Jun Heaven Territory, outside of Kunlun Mountain. With that as a basis, it will be convenient for our commencement and initial expansion as well as the broadcasting of information,” Yan Zhaoge said, “I wonder if senior apprentice-brother Qiu has a sect that you are familiar with?”

Qiu Jiahai looked at Wang Pu who smiled, “You have better connections than I do. I will leave this matter to you then.”

“We will naturally have to find someone we trust who is also reliable,” Despite being familiar with everyone to the point that he could easily say their names out loud, Qiu Jiahai still considered this very carefully for a time.

Many choices immediately flashed through his mind as he made his selection, ultimately choosing a single power.

“How about the Wind Thunder Manor?” Qiu Jiahai asked Wang Pu.

Wang Pu thought for a moment before smiling, “It could not be any more suitable.”

He said to Yan Zhaoge, “The Wind Thunder Manor is a major power of the eastern Connected Cloud Mountain Range of the central Jun Heaven Territory. Its current manor lord, Heng Xianda, is also someone who has wide-ranging connections.”

He said to Yan Zhaoge, “The Wind Thunder Manor is renowned beneath the heavens for artifact forging. It has branch altars in various areas within the central Jun Heaven Territory with stores laid out everywhere, even having branches in the other eight Territories of the World beyond Worlds.”

Yan Zhaoge smiled, “I too heard the famed name of the Wind Thunder Manor in the southeast. Still, their branch altar that is in the southeast is in the northwest of the southeastern Yang Heaven Territory. The Royal Reed Sea does not have one.”

Qiu Jiahai similarly smiled, “The Wind Thunder Manor has a long history. It was established over a thousand years ago, having always been on good terms with our Jade Capital Crag ever since. They are definitely fully trustworthy.”

This was actually the most important point.

There were also other choices which had advantages in other areas.

Still, after considering it over and over again, Qiu Jiahai still recommended the Wind Thunder Manor in the end.

“It is indeed the most suitable choice,” Yan Zhaoge nodded, “If senior apprentice-brother Qiu is free enough to, how about we pay a visit to this Wind Thunder Manor together now?”

Qiu Jiahai said, “Of course.”

The two took their leave of Wang Pu as Qiu Jiahai led the way and Yan Zhaoge accompanied him east.

Leaving the lands of Kunlun Mountain and heading eastwards, they traversed a vast area of territory and gradually arrived in the vicinity of the Connected Cloud Mountain Range that was in the eastern region of the central Jun Heaven Territory.

Not long after entering the Connected Cloud Mountain Range, the heavens before them dimmed.

The sky was filled densely with thunderclouds as streaks of lightning and thunder unceasingly traversed the area.

In the distant horizon, the phenomenon of violent thunder gradually appeared, dense bolts of thunder and lightning descending from the skies like torrential rain as they unceasingly chopped towards the mountain peaks down below.

The perils therein were virtually comparable to that of the endless magnetic storms within the Clear Scenic Region of the Royal Reed Sea.

“That is where the Wind Thunder Manor is located,” Qiu Jiahai pointed at the ocean of thunderbolts in the horizon, “The descendants of the Wind Thunder Manor are proficient in artifact forging. Thunder from the heavens is employed to help them in this, being quite a unique method.”

Yan Zhaoge nodded, “The Splendid Thunder Metal Forging Art is an ancient art of pre-Great Calamity times. I wonder if that which the Wind Thunder Manor possesses is the complete version?”

Qiu Jiahai nodded solemnly, “The Splendid Thunder Metal Forging Art of the Wind Thunder Manor’s Heng Family is the complete legacy. After being analysed by descendants for many years thereafter, it vaguely appears as if it has been refined and perfected yet further.”

“That is quite remarkable then,” Yan Zhaoge’s eyes lit up slightly.

In this world, it was not that things from the past were always

better than things from the present, the new being inferior to the old.

A small portion of techniques were indeed already at the maximum of what was achievable. They could only attain new heights if they completely broke free of the great dao of this world.

Most of them were still constantly in the midst of being improved and refined though wrong turns could be taken and actions might be repeated.

It was just a pity that the glorious civilisation of Daoism had been greatly damaged during the Great Calamity as many techniques that had already attained considerable heights had been discontinued.

Thus, the people of post-Great Calamity times could only resume their footsteps from the ruins of the past. As a result, some things of the current generation appeared rough and undeveloped as compared to those from pre-Great Calamity times.

This problem was manifested much more clearly in the Eight Extremities World, the Vast Ocean World and the other lower worlds.

Meanwhile, the situation was much more optimistic in the World beyond Worlds.

Yan Zhaoge had a complete version of the Splendid Thunder Metal Forging Art of pre-Great Calamity times.

Still, if the Wind Thunder Manor's Heng Family had really been able to improve that past technique, Yan Zhaoge was very interested in taking a look at it.

# HSSB 1061: Conquest

---

As Yan Zhaoge and Qiu Jiahai approached the vicinity of the rampaging thunder, out of propriety, they halted as Qiu Jiahai reported his identity.

Soon, the thunderbolts began to gradually weaken as they were ultimately quelled.

While the sky was still densely filled with dark clouds, the terrifying thunderbolts from earlier which had seemed as if they could destroy the heavens and extinguish the earth had already disappeared.

Between some mountains, a large manor appeared before the eyes of Yan Zhaoge and Qiu Jiahai.

The manor hovered in mid-air with thunderbolts down below that appeared solid as they were manifested as pillars which supported it.

“This Heng has failed to welcome you who have come a long way. Please take no offence,” Amidst these words, the door of the manor opened as a tall old man emerged from within, walking towards Yan Zhaoge and Qiu Jiahai.

Many others followed him out too as they grandly stood in line to receive Yan Zhaoge and Qiu Jiahai.

That old man was actually a late Immortal Bridge Martial Saint. Yet, while he had grandly come out to greet these two youngsters who were so much younger than him at this moment, all the martial practitioners of Wind Thunder Manor who were present did not find this to be strange in the least.

The old man was the current Lord of Wind Thunder Manor, Heng Xianda.

Not considering Kunlun Mountain, this old man could be considered a major figure of the central Jun Heaven Territory.



“It has been a long time, Mister Qiu,” He first greeted Qiu Jiahai who he was acquainted with before his gaze fell on Yan Zhaoge, “You must be the Yan Family’s Fallen Deity. This old man, Heng Xianda, greets you.”

Yan Zhaoge smiled, cupping his hands, “You are polite, Manor Lord Heng. It was me who arrived unannounced today.”

Heng Xianda led the two inside the manor and got them seated and served with tea before he asked curiously, “I wonder what the two of you have come for?”

“So it was like this...” Heng Xianda was rather taken aback after Qiu Jiahai had explained their intentions in coming this time as he looked towards Yan Zhaoge.

Honestly speaking, Heng Xianda was not all that concerned with the Internal Crystal Furnace.

First not mentioning how his Wind Thunder Manor already had an Internal Crystal Furnace, the martial practitioners of Wind Thunder Manor were virtually all proficient in artifact forging.

The branch altars of Wind Thunder Manor that were scattered throughout the World beyond Worlds actually formed a network which they used to sell various weapons of all kind.

High-grade Sacred Artifacts and mid-grade Sacred Artifacts aside, Wind Thunder Manor sold the excess weapons that they forged with they had an abundance of.

They would even trade away mid-grade Sacred Artifacts occasionally.

As for high-grade Sacred Artifacts, Wind Thunder Manor was one of the few powers besides Kunlun Mountain that could make it such that all their Immortal Bridge Martial Saints possessed one.

The weapons produced here were a well-known brand name within the central Jun Heaven Territory and even the entire World beyond Worlds.

If Yan Zhaoge wanted to make use of their network to pave the way for a store of his own, he would become a business competitor of theirs of a sort.

Of course, Heng Xianda would not refuse to cooperate due to his relationship with Jade Capital Crag.

Deep in his heart, he did not actually believe that Yan Zhaoge could truly create a major disturbance.

Granted, Yan Zhaoge possessed outstanding strength and shocking talent.

Still, martial cultivation was different from artifact forging, pill concoction and formations etcetera.

While they were related, they could not all be measured by the same benchmark.

When he first heard this, Heng Xianda thought that Yan Zhaoge had likely obtained some treasures by chance which he wished to sell.

“I wonder what else Mister Yan intends to sell besides the Internal Crystal Furnace? This old man can contact buyers on your behalf,” Heng Xianda said, “There will probably not be a need to spread this throughout the entire World beyond Worlds. Even if the quantity is large, if the products truly are good, you will be able to sell them for sure.”

Yan Zhaoge smiled, “The products are naturally all good. They are great in quantity and wide in variety too.”

“The Internal Crystal Furnace is just one of them. It is not just a single Internal Crystal Furnace or a dozen of them that I wish to sell. Instead, it is many of them.”

He paused momentarily before emphasising again, “A whole bunch of them.”

Heng Xianda was instantly rendered dazed, “A whole bunch of...

Internal Crystal Furnaces?”

He regained his wits, shocked.

Yan Zhaoge had emphasised that there were a whole bunch of Internal Crystal Furnaces. This meant that they did not number in the single or even double digits.

They would number into the hundreds at the very least!

Heng Xianda did not speak as he snuck a glance at Qiu Jiahai.

He was currently wondering whether he had offended Jade Capital Crag or Broad Creed Mountain in any way such that they were specifically coming to make things difficult for his Wind Thunder Manor now.

The greatest allure of Connected Cloud Mountain's Wind Thunder Manor's Heng Family for Yan Zhaoge and Qiu Jiahai was the fact that they possessed a network for the selling of weapons.

In other words, they could actually be considered a notable arms dealer of the World beyond Worlds.

In coming to borrow their sales network now, Yan Zhaoge was not becoming a business competitor but utterly decimating his business.

He was not going to sell weapons, yes. Still, he was going to sell Internal Crystal Furnaces that aided one greatly in the forging of weapons!

With the power of the Internal Crystal Furnace, people would be able to forge artifacts of their own for sure. How would there still be a need to buy the weapons of their Wind Thunder Manor?

Heng Xianda felt that Yan Zhaoge was not here to establish a cooperative relationship at all. Instead, he had come to find trouble with them!

Considering Yan Zhaoge's strength and Jade Capital Crag's might, those of Wind Thunder Manor felt rather furious yet dared

not voice anything out loud.

The others of the Heng Family looked down at the ground while Heng Xianda gazed fixatedly at Qiu Jiahai.

Qiu Jiahai smiled.

He had not recommended Wind Thunder Manor to Yan Zhaoge with the knowledge that it would fail for sure as he was not finding trouble for Wind Thunder Manor too.

Instead, he had done so because when Yan Zhaoge had revealed his intentions, there had also been some other items besides the Internal Crystal Furnace.

Qiu Jiahai believed that after those of Wind Thunder Manor had heard about one of them, it would definitely not be this expression that remained on their faces.

Therefore, he remained totally composed and not flustered in the least.

Yan Zhaoge similarly ignored the expressions of the martial practitioners of Wind Thunder Manor as he continued, “Besides the Internal Crystal Furnace, there are also Ghost God Heavenly Brew, Vajra Thunder...”

Upon hearing the words ‘Vajra Thunder’, the ears of all from Wind Thunder Manor simultaneously twitched.

Their gazes collectively converged on Yan Zhaoge.

If it were anybody else, they would virtually be steamed alive by the heat of the gazes of those of the Heng Family.

Still, Yan Zhaoge remained wholly composed as he continued speaking, unperturbed.

Despite knowing that he was being rude, Heng Xianda was unable to hold himself back as he interrupted Yan Zhaoge, “Please wait, Mister Yan, please wait. Forgive this old man’s rudeness, but you seem to have mentioned Vajra Thunder earlier?”

“That’s right,” Yan Zhaoge did not mind this interruption, “I did mention Vajra Thunder earlier.”

Heng Xianda inhaled deeply, “Is that the Vajra Thunder that was the treasure of the lineage of Golden Thunder Mountain in pre-Great Calamity times?”

Yan Zhaoge smiled, “It is precisely so.”

Vajra Thunder was a treasure once possessed by Golden Thunder Mountain, a powerful sect of Daoism in pre-Great Calamity times.

It was greatly efficacious, being proficient in harming the weapons of others.

Once released, a streak of golden thunder would fly out and automatically home in on metallic objects before sticking to them and exploding.

It could inflict immense damage on the weapons of enemies.

Even most Sacred Artifacts would suffer a great blow to their vitality and have their spirituality diminished greatly, that is if they were not destroyed first.

If the one who had unleashed the Vajra Thunder attacked at this point in time, they would either possess the advantage in terms of weapons or gain the chance to completely destroy the weapon of their opponent.

If they had been evenly matched before, this would be able to influence the eventual battle result.

Still, the greatest value of this treasure with regard to Wind Thunder Manor was not its function, instead being the fact that it could assist in the cultivation of their martial practitioners!

# HSSB 1062: Skills suppressing all around

---

Their martial arts had been developed from old legacies from the past after the Great Calamity.

Back then, the founder of Wind Thunder Manor had found a small amount of Vajra Thunder left behind from a relic site of the Great Calamity.

After experimentation, it had been found that Vajra Thunder which was best used for suppressing others for normal martial practitioners had immense benefits for those who cultivated in the martial arts of Wind Thunder Manor.

Even as the martial practitioners of Wind Thunder Manor had rejoiced at this, the pressure on them was also immense.

This was because while they had some leftover Vajra Thunder, the method for forging it had already long been lost.

They had used the compete Splendid Thunder Metal Forging Art that they had obtained as a basis in trying to restore the lost art of forging Vajra Thunder, with the descendants of Wind Thunder Manor having constantly been analysing and working on the forging of artifacts as a result.

It was a pity that they possessed too little Vajra Thunder as it was far from something they could use to experiment and research with.

Wind Thunder Mountain had never given up on this all these years, having constantly been working diligently towards their goal.

The result left them rather not knowing if they should laugh or cry.

They simply could not succeed in restoring the lost, much-desired method of forging Vajra Thunder.

The artifact forging skills of the Wind Thunder Manor's Heng Family had gradually increased over the generations as they had ultimately come to reign at the top of the World beyond Worlds in this area.

Yet, they were eternally unable to forge this Vajra Thunder which they so yearned for.

The other weapons that they forged were famous and desired by the entire world, having become a source of income for the Wind Thunder Manor.

Still, Wind Thunder Manor had always been seeking the method of forging Vajra Thunder.

With their high skill in artifact forging, not only did they sell their weapons, Wind Thunder Manor itself naturally did not lack weapons. All their martial practitioners were virtually armed to the teeth.

Still, due to the scarcity of materials and various other reasons, at the present moment, the progress of Wind Thunder Manor which they achieved with their skill in the dao of artifact forging had already gradually come to reach a bottleneck.

It was difficult to forge high-grade Sacred Artifacts at the end of the day as the required materials were also hard to come by.

The Wind Thunder Manor's Heng Family could do nothing about this.

They ultimately had to rely on themselves to break through the bottleneck, advancing yet further.

Not only would the Vajra Thunder aid the martial practitioners of Wind Thunder Manor in breaking through to higher cultivation levels, increasing the number of experts they had, their peak martial practitioners also often came to meet bottlenecks in their usual cultivation which impeded their strength from rising as was only natural.

Therefore, upon hearing the words ‘Vajra Thunder’ emerge from Yan Zhaoge’s mouth, everyone from Wind Thunder Manor lost their composure at once.

“I wonder how much Vajra Thunder Mister Yan has on hand?” Heng Xianda composed himself, “Please name a price, Mister Yan. My Wind Thunder Manor will purchase it all.”

It was no secret in the World beyond Worlds that the Wind Thunder Manor was seeking Vajra Thunder. Heng Xianda admitted this frankly, not fearing that Yan Zhaoge would raise the price upon seeing how desperate they were for this item.

This blow was one that had to be suffered, anyway.

Yan Zhaoge waved his hands, “This Yan does not have any Vajra Thunder on hand right now. Still, if there is a need to, I can produce some batches within a short period of time. Of course, I would have to collect the required materials first before being able to forge some.”

Hearing that Yan Zhaoge had not simply obtained some Vajra Thunder by chance which he wished to sell as he actually grasped the very method for forging it, the gazes of those of Wind Thunder Manor turned more blazing and passionate.

Heng Xianda turned and exchanged looks with the remaining longtime Elders of the manor who all nodded slightly.

Since Qiu Jiahai had come with Yan Zhaoge, with this disciple of the Sword Sovereign as a guarantor, this matter could be ninety-nine percent confirmed to be real. There was no need to worry that Yan Zhaoge was just a swindler who was trying to fool them.

“That is fine. When the first batch of Vajra Thunder is produced, my Wind Thunder Manor will purchase it all.”

Heng Xianda said, “I will give Mister Yan a satisfactory price. Everything can go by the book. You need not overthink things, Mister Yan. This will not affect our partnership. It is just that



while we work together in this, I hope that my Wind Thunder Manor can be the first customers.”

Yan Zhaoge smiled, “Well of course. With your manor participating in this, it will save this Yan much time and effort in the initial stages. Such efforts must naturally be rewarded.”

“No, no. You are too polite, Mister Yan,” Heng Xianda smiled, “Mister Yan looks like a grandmaster of artifact forging too. I hope that we will have the chance to interact on this in the future.”

Yan Zhaoge smiled, “We arrived unannounced earlier, causing the artifact forging of you, the old Manor Lord, to be interrupted. I wonder if anything went badly as a result?”

Heng Xianda’s eyes first narrowed slightly before he said smilingly, “It is nothing much.”

“If the Splendid Thunder Metal Forging Art is interrupted, the materials will generally go to waste,” Yan Zhaoge said, appearing rather intrigued, “Still, I hear that your manor’s Splendid Thunder Metal Forging Art is an improved version of that from pre-Great Calamity times. I wonder if this Yan can get a taste of it?”

Heng Xianda’s gaze focused on Yan Zhaoge as he asked rather cautiously, “Oh? Mister Yan seems to have quite a high understanding of the Splendid Thunder Metal Forging Art too?”

Yan Zhaoge shook his head, “To be honest, this Yan indeed possesses the full version of the Splendid Thunder Metal Forging Art from pre-Great Calamity times. Therefore, I would very much like to have a look at the new accomplishment of your manor.”

He paused for a moment before continuing, “Of course, this Yan is not trying to obtain your manor’s secret technique. I would simply like to view a weapon produced by this new version of the Splendid Thunder Metal Forging Art.”

“You are too polite, Mister Yan. I was just about to present it to you and ask what you think,” Heng Xianda said as he waved a

hand, a streak of purple light flying out from within his sleeve.

The purple light halted before Yan Zhaoge. It was the embryonic form of a sword.

Streams of purple thunder-light traversed the surface of this embryonic sword.

This was the weapon that Heng Xianda had been in the midst of forging when Yan Zhaoge and Qiu Jiahai had arrived.

He had been aiming for a mid-grade Sacred Artifact. For him who was a late Immortal Bridge Martial Saint, this would really be no problem at all.

With his position and status, he had already long since ceased to forge mid-grade Sacred Artifacts.

It was just that an old acquaintance had specially requested that Heng Xianda personally forge a mid-grade Sacred Artifact for his descendant. As a result, this old Manor Lord of Wind Thunder Manor had eventually made an exception and done so.

Yan Zhaoge only glanced at it once before smiling, “Remarkable indeed. If it were the original Splendid Thunder Metal Forging Art of pre-Great Calamity times, the materials would have been reduced to scrap after the interruption. However, with the old Manor Lord’s methods, despite such an interruption, the sword was still preserved and retained in its embryonic form.”

“I have displayed my meagre skills,” Heng Xianda humbly nodded slightly.

He had demonstrated his abilities with this.

Still, while the embryonic form of the sword had been preserved, it would be even more difficult to continue forging it than it would have before.

If others were to continue forging it, they would probably be unable to turn it into a mid-grade Sacred Artifact as they would

likely only be able to produce a low-grade Sacred Artifact from it.

Heng Xianda would still be able to produce a mid-grade Sacred Artifact if he continued forging it. Still, the quality of the artifact would be very ordinary and a poor representation of his abilities. At the time, this would inevitably cause him to lose face in front of his old friend.

He had already long since made up his mind to dig into his own pocket and acquire some materials to forge a brand new mid-grade Sacred Artifact such that he would be able to satisfactorily account for things to this old friend of his.

It was just that Heng Xianda would naturally not mention this to Yan Zhaoge and Qiu Jiahai.

Looking at this embryonic form of a sword before him, Yan Zhaoge smiled, extending a hand and grabbing it.

Then, he retrieved an Internal Crystal Furnace with his other hand, next directly throwing it within.

Heng Xianda and the others were startled by this as Yan Zhaoge smiled, “Having come unannounced and interrupted the forging of the sword by old Manor Lord Heng, this Yan really feels uneasy about this. Fortunately, it is not too late to remedy this. In order to express my apologies, I will be utilising my laughable, lacking skills. Please do not take offence at this.”

# HSSB 1063: A Fallen Deity who pointlessly dabbles in everything

---

Looking at Yan Zhaoge, Heng Xianda and the others felt uncertain.

They suddenly realised that many of their guesses about Yan Zhaoge from earlier might be mistaken.

Yan Zhaoge did not speak much about this as he simply requested for Heng Xianda to help prepare a secluded chamber for him, next entering it.

With the embryonic sword located within the Internal Crystal Furnace, Yan Zhaoge spoke no further as he directly guided thunder in descending, this being the most orthodox version of the Splendid Thunder Metal Forging Art.

This was somewhat inferior as compared to the Splendid Thunder Metal Forging Art of Wind Thunder Manor's.

Still, just from watching Yan Zhaoge's motions alone, Heng Xianda and the others all had solemn expressions on their faces.

Those outside of the trade simply watched the commotion while those in the trade saw proficiency.

While those of Wind Thunder Manor with lower cultivation bases might not be able to tell this, Heng Xianda and the other masters of the art could all tell from a single glance that Yan Zhaoge possessed extremely high attainments in the dao of artifact forging.

It was not just the Internal Crystal Furnace and Splendid Thunder Metal Forging Art.

Yan Zhaoge walked around the Internal Crystal Furnace, striking it with a palm every step he took.

Traces of light were left behind amidst space as a massive nine

palace grid appeared from nowhere, enveloping the Internal Crystal Furnace.

The lid of the Internal Crystal Furnace opened, directing heavenly thunder within. Meanwhile, light intermingled within the furnace, forming a nine palace grid diagram that harboured the embryonic sword within.

Upon seeing this, an old man with white brows who stood beside Heng Xianda frowned, secretly sending to him via sound transmission, “Third brother, is this the Internal External Nine Palace Suppressing Furnace Art?”

“It would appear so...” Heng Xianda nodded with a solemn expression on his face.

He suddenly sighed softly, “We can know the result without even having to watch any further. Despite his apparent youth, this Mister Yan is probably even more skilled in the dao of artifact forging than this old man is.”

“What is laughable is how we thought that he was just doing so on a whim before. From how it seems now, if not for the fact that he wants to save preparatory time for the initial stages, there would be no need for him to look for us at all.”

“Just from what he has currently demonstrated, based on his proficiency in this, he would easily be able to totally jostle out the business of our Wind Thunder Manor if we were to compete normally.”

The expressions on the faces of the other Wind Thunder Manor martial practitioners changed slightly as many of them opened their mouths as if wishing to speak, yet were unable to utter anything in the end.

Everyone quietly pondered on Heng Xianda’s words, all gradually understanding his meaning.

The Internal External Nine Palace Suppressing Furnace Art was

also an artifact forging technique that originated from pre-Great Calamity times.

Comparing it with the Splendid Thunder Metal Forging Art, neither could be called superior as both had miraculous uses of their own.

Wind Thunder Manor had always been renowned for artifact forging, being rather proud of this. Having been further developed by them, the Splendid Thunder Metal Forging Art had reached a whole new level that surpassed the version from pre-Great Calamity times in terms of efficiency.

Yan Zhaoge's Splendid Thunder Metal Forging Art was the version from pre-Great Calamity times.

Frankly speaking, it was inferior as compared to the version currently possessed by Wind Thunder Manor.

Still, if one were to freely control the Splendid Thunder Metal Forging Art and the Internal External Nine Palace Suppressing Furnace Art, fusing them seamlessly together, their efficacy would be in a whole new realm.

In the forging of artifacts, be it the success rate, the quality or the handling of the minor aspects, they all surpassed that of the Splendid Thunder Metal Forging Art of Wind Thunder Manor on its own.

The difficulty of executing two techniques simultaneously certainly had a difficulty greater than one plus one equals two.

If one could not do so effectively, it would end up as a mere mess and a joke in the end.

Still, with Heng Xianda's powerful discernment abilities, while he had not learnt the Internal External Nine Furnace Suppressing Furnace Art, simply from how Yan Zhaoge had started out with his artifact forging, he knew that he had extremely high attainments in both that Internal External Nine Furnace Suppressing Art and

the Splendid Thunder Metal Forging Art.

Failure was really totally impossible here.

Others were not as skilled as Heng Xianda in the dao of artifact forging as their proficiency levels all varied. Still, as time passed and they watched Yan Zhaoge, they were gradually able to witness that overwhelming skill too.

Therefore, everyone's expressions ultimately turned complex.

“Even if he is blessed by the heavens, his fortune overflowing beyond measure as he obtained the complete version of two great secret techniques on his own, being so young, however would he have had the time to analyse and comprehend them?” A martial practitioner of Wind Thunder Manor was unable to stop himself from sighing.

Understanding a technique and actually managing to control it were two different things altogether.

Using and actualising the knowledge written on paper in reality had never ever been a simple thing.

Heng Xianda muttered to himself, “His accomplishments in the martial dao are even more shocking and unheard of.”

Thinking of this, everyone of Wind Thunder Manor could not help but smile bitterly.

All of them were passionate about artifact forging, their skills having been passed down through the generations as they devoted a great amount of time and energy to researching it.

Their accomplishments in the martial dao were actually comparatively limited.

While they did still cultivate usually, they lacked experience in combat and life and death battles too.

As a result, while the average strength of the martial practitioners of Wind Thunder Manor could not be called low, it

was definitely not high as well.

This could be considered 'you win some, you lose some'.

In recent years, the Manor Lord Heng Xianda had gradually come to prioritise this matter more and more as he was already conscious of the fact that this was something which they needed to rectify.

Still, as he gazed upon Yan Zhaoge at this moment, Heng Xianda too was only able to smile wryly.

He looked towards the other martial practitioners of Wind Thunder Manor beside him, sighing, "Fallen Deity..."

Everyone else too sighed in a grand, vastly emotional manner, "Fallen Deity!"

Forging a mid-grade Sacred Artifact was not a tough thing at all for the current Yan Zhaoge, especially when it was already a half-completed product.

When the Sacred Artifact was produced, a majestic beam of thunder-light shot into the heavens, resonating with the heavenly thunder in the sky up above.

Yan Zhaoge flung his sleeve, the Internal Crystal Furnace closing as the thunder clouds in the sky up above gradually faded.

The silhouetted nine palace grid condensed momentarily before fading till it eventually vanished.

Now, Yan Zhaoge reopened the lid of the furnace as another bolt of lightning instantly flew out.

He causally grabbed it, pulling out a blade that was three feet long, the patterns on its exterior bright at times whilst dim at others as it was as if a thunder dragon could indistinctly be spotted within.

"I have displayed my mediocre skills," Yan Zhaoge handed the sword over to Heng Xianda.



Heng Xianda's fingers trailed across the blade as he did not speak.

Even if the process of forging the sword had not been interrupted for him as he had forged it with all his might, it would probably still not be able to compare with this reforged sword of Yan Zhaoge's.

A short while later, Heng Xianda handed the sword to someone beside him before soundlessly bowing deeply towards Yan Zhaoge.

The sword was passed around amongst the Wind Thunder Manor martial practitioners.

Then, the Wind Thunder Manor martial practitioners all bowed respectfully towards Yan Zhaoge like Heng Xianda.

"You are too polite, everyone," Yan Zhaoge made a raising motion with his hand as everyone ceased bowing to him, straightening upwards.

Heng Xianda said, "Mister Yan has really let this old man see a whole new world today as a former frog in a well. I hope that I will have chances to seek advice from the Fallen Deity in the future."

Yan Zhaoge smiled, "I dare not live up to the seeking of advice. It is more about mutual interaction."

Qiu Jiahai felt rather admiring of him too as he watched on by the side.

While he had previously been supportive of Yan Zhaoge's decision, he had not been fully certain of success as he had only been helping him as best he could due to the ties between them.

Now, he could finally completely rest assured for real.

After the two had finished discussing the initial stages of their cooperation with Heng Xianda, they left Wind Thunder Manor, with Qiu Jiahai saying appreciatively, "You are not just powerful in the martial dao, junior apprentice-brother Yan. Your abilities in other fields are truly marvellous too."

Yan Zhaoge smiled, “I was often lectured by my elders when I was young for pointlessly dabbling in everything.”

The two conversed happily as they returned to Kunlun Mountain.

On their way back, they received a piece of news.

The Brocade Emperor who had been missing for quite some time had finally returned to the World beyond Worlds.

Yet, his first stop upon his return had not been his cave manor back at Ingenious Flying Peak as he had instead headed straight for the southern Blazing Heaven Territory!

# HSSB 1064: Amongst thousands, two have sailed

---

Upon returning to the Northern High Peak's Jade Capital Crag, the two met Wang Pu who said at once, "It is indeed like you thought, junior apprentice-brother Yan, and it was actually because of Southern Zhuang that the Brocade Emperor previously failed to show up."

He felt rather curious and shocked, "I wonder how exactly Southern Zhuang managed to do this?"

Whatever method Zhuang Shen had employed, in the eyes of the world, him having managed to tie up the Brocade Emperor for so long was virtually a feat comparable to Yan Zhaoge mightily resisting the Heaven Emperor.

Qiu Jiahai shook his head too, sighing, "With Southern Zhuang having already died beneath the sabre of senior apprentice-uncle Yan, the Brocade Emperor has nowhere to get rid of his embarrassment this time."

"He has always conducted himself in an esteemed manner as he would surely not take his anger out on the remnants of Phoenix Ritual Mountain's Wutong Slope as a result. He can only just tolerate what he has suffered."

Hearing his words, a rather strange expression appeared on Yan Zhaoge's face.

He rubbed his temples lightly, saying in a low tone, "There is no saying for sure this time."

Wang Pu and Qiu Jiahai exchanged looks, both able to sense that Yan Zhaoge was secretly hinting at something as they asked, "Is it that you know something about this, junior apprentice-brother Yan?"

"I too am not clear on the truth of the matter," Yan Zhaoge

answered, “I only have some guesses that are yet to be verified.”

Feeling interested, Wang Pu and Qiu Jiahai asked, “What are they?”

Yan Zhaoge hesitated momentarily before he asked, “How do you think things would be if the Brocade Emperor has another daughter besides Red Lotus Fu?”

These shocking words rendered Wang Pu and Qiu Jiahai dazed on the spot.

It was a long while before Wang Pu regained his wits, exclaiming with a solemn expression on his face, “It could be that nothing would happen, but it could also be that something major will occur!”

He slowly said, “If the Brocade Emperor has another daughter besides Red Lotus Fu, that would not be as simple a matter as having birthed another child outside!”

The Brocade Emperor was an incomparable playboy as he had experienced countless women. Still, he had never birthed a son.

Many people of the World beyond Worlds talked about this behind his back.

Afterwards, when his sole daughter, Fu Ting, had been born, many had even suspected that the Brocade Emperor had been made a cuckold of.

It was only when Fu Ting had travelled about the World beyond Worlds after coming of age and everyone could tell that she was indeed of the Brocade Emperor’s blood that these rumours had gradually quelled.

Still, this was just how the middle and lower echelon martial practitioners saw it. Being of the Sword Sovereign’s lineage, Wang Pu and Qiu Jiahai naturally knew that things were not that simple.

From them, Yan Zhaoge was able to verify a guess that he had

had from the start.

As the current strongest expert of the Grand Clear direct lineage in the World beyond Worlds, the Brocade Emperor Fu Yunchi had indeed established his foundation upon the intricacies of the dao of grand forgetfulness.

The Brocade Emperor who was rather an ambitious person had hoped to regather the complete set of supreme martial arts of the Grand Cosmos Five Manifestations through this.

It was actually because of this that the Brocade Emperor had walked through countless meadows, unstained by a single leaf.

Afterwards, it was similarly the manifestation of this path that amongst thousands, only a single ship had sailed.

The dao of grand forgetfulness did not mean that one was heartless and emotionless.

For the countless outstanding females that the Brocade Emperor had experienced, he had similarly had to devote his feelings for every one of them.

His feelings were always pure and fervent for every single one of them that he was with.

Only with the final person, when this had risen and been refined to the maximum level, had the crystallisation of his emotions been produced in the form of Fu Ting.

He indeed bore deep feelings for Fu Ting, doting on her greatly.

At least, this would not change at all before he begun on the next step as it was both pure and sincere.

Yet, if an accident occurred during the process of this cultivation, things would be completely different then.

It entailed that his entire path might be diverted.

“The Brocade Emperor has already pushed open the door to Immortality at the end of the day, transcending the ties of

mortality,” Qiu Jiahai said rather disbelievingly, “Being a leakless True Immortal, the truth is that he should be perfect and complete. A major problem shouldn’t be occurring, right?”

Wang Pu shook his head solemnly, “It would be fine if the Brocade Emperor was not so ambitious. Yet, he had to choose this as his foundation. With an anomaly having arisen here, it will immediately be a calamity on the level of the heavens collapsing for him.”

Qiu Jiahai frowned, “Having birthed descendants is something that the Brocade Emperor did after he had become an Immortal as he sought a path to advance further.”

“As he had already surpassed the gulf between the mortal and Immortal realms at that time, gaining a leakless body as a result, he should be able to adjust even if something has happened, right?”

“There is something you are not aware of, junior apprentice-brother Qiu,” Wang Pu sighed, “While I am not clear on the specifics, I once heard Master mention this.”

“Master once said that the Brocade Emperor was fortunate to have accomplished his dao. He has to be cautious and vigilant in the future, for the slightest mishap and perils would abound.”

Wang Pu forced a smile, “I was puzzled by Master’s words, unable to comprehend it at all. Only now have I gradually come to understand part of what he meant.”

Qiu Jiahai was momentarily stunned before he too could only smile bitterly.

Yan Zhaoge put a hand on his head, “Really, this is...”

Actually, he too was basically able to guess that while the Brocade Emperor had been incomparably lofty and carefree in the past, it was not that he had not been under any pressure.

Despite having been suppressed, Mars Halberd would definitely

return one day.

For having assisted the dragon race in suppressing Mars Halberd that year, the Grand Clear lineage was sure to be a target of Mars Halberd's once he had broken free of his seal.

As the Brocade Emperor had gradually become the foremost figure of the Grand Clear direct lineage, this was something which he would definitely have to face sooner or later.

Events afterwards had proven this to be true.

Mars Halberd had indeed made a comeback.

In the end, it was also none other than the Brocade Emperor who had repelled him.

Sadly, having improved heedless of the consequences back then, he had left roots of calamity buried within himself.

Only he himself could know how intense and troublesome this could prove.

The Brocade Emperor's accomplishments in the dao originated from grand forgetfulness. If something went wrong here, a problem would thus surface with the feelings of he himself.

There was just no way of knowing how this Emperor could have made a mistake in something so crucial.

While only a single ship should have sailed, he had left his seed on another one too.

As a result, in the art of grand divination where there were forty-nine points that were used and only the point of grand unity that was to be unused, 'unity' had instead become 'duality'.

"It would spell cultivation deviation at least, and falling out of the Immortal realm at worst!" Yan Zhaoge sighed, "Still, an outstanding figure like the Brocade Emperor would probably forcibly make adjustments so that his cultivation realm would not fall. It should have been cultivation deviation..."

His expression was rather strange, “He should not have become psychotic, right?”

Wang Pu looked at Yan Zhaoge, “How do you know of this, junior apprentice-brother Yan? Also, if I did not listen wrongly, you asked from the start how it would be like if he had another daughter, and not if he had a son?”

“I cannot be certain if this really is the case,” Yan Zhaoge said, “What I said earlier cannot be verified, just...”

He sighed, “After hearing what the two of you have said, I increasingly fear that my guess was right.”

“The reason for this guess of mine also lies with Southern Zhuang.”

Yan Zhaoge narrated the matter of Meng Wan and her mother, Liu Xianting.

After hearing of this, Wang Pu and Qiu Jiahai sighed emotionally, “Why must it be so?”

Wang Pu said quietly, “Having been able to cause such abnormalities in the Brocade Emperor, your guess is probably close to the truth, junior apprentice-brother Yan.”

The trio exchanged looks.

The most pressing concern now was already not how the Brocade Emperor might have become.

Instead, the question was this: What would he do next?

Simple madmen were nothing much to be afraid of.

One would be able to interact with an Emperor who was in his right mind.

Yet, if an Emperor had gone crazy, no one could predict what might happen as a result.

This was especially the case with how this Emperor was also in



possession of an Immortal Artifact.

# HSSB 1065: The compromised Emperor

---

Wang Pu, Qiu Jiahai and Yan Zhaoge exchanged looks.

Qiu Jiahai sighed, “Southern Zhuang really is...”

“He probably never thought that things would end up like this. He likely just wanted the Brocade Emperor to be distracted so that he would be unable to make it to our Broad Creed Mountain’s opening ceremony,” Yan Zhaoge sighed too, “After all, being an Emperor who has already accomplished the realm of a True Immortal, he should be able to remedy his deficiency.”

“It was only from hearing you mention the evaluation of senior apprentice-uncle Yue from back then that I know that the Brocade Emperor probably had some hidden problems left behind from pushing open the door to Immortality that year, thus having become like this now.”

Qiu Jiahai asked, “Why is that such a problem has only happened now? If that Meng Wan grew up in the World beyond Worlds, she should be around the same age as Red Lotus Fu, right? It has been so many years.”

The corners of Yan Zhaoge’s mouth twitched, “The Brocade Emperor was probably wholly unaware of this that year, only having come to learn of this recently because of Zhuang Shen. He must have seen Meng Wan in person this time, the crisis hence erupting.”

There was no need for further words or explanation. As long as the Brocade Emperor saw Meng Wan in person, it would have been enough then.

Qiu Jiahai stared wide-eyed, “How could he have been wholly ignorant?”

Let alone the Brocade Emperor, any random martial practitioner who had accomplishments in the martial dao would be able to

control whether they left their seed.

This was unless they had been ‘harvested’.

Still, there was probably no one at all in the World beyond Worlds who might be able to harvest the Brocade Emperor.

It was even more impossible that someone might have been able to do so with the Brocade Emperor wholly unaware.

Liu Xianting’s cultivation base had been much lower than the Brocade Emperor’s that year. There was no possibility of this happening at all.

“Heaven knows what happened,” Yan Zhaoge curled his lips.

Wang Pu said, “While this matter seems not to have any direct connection to us, it is actually no minor affair at all.”

The Three Sovereigns and Five Emperors were the ultimate figures in the World beyond Worlds.

Any slightest disturbance that occurred might be able to affect the entire World beyond Worlds.

“There may actually be some direct connection,” Yan Zhaoge smacked his lips, “My father’s Grand Simplicity Splendour Cloud may well have caught his eye. Otherwise, that could have happened with my Taiyi Fist of Grand Simplicity too.”

Who knew what might be done by the Brocade Emperor whose rationality had been compromised.

“The question now is: Could the Brocade Emperor recover?” Wang Pu looked at Yan Zhaoge, “If the Brocade Emperor had obtained the Taiyi Fist that year, things may not be as troublesome as they are now.”

“Of course, I am not asking you to offer it up for nothing, junior apprentice-brother Yan. If you offer some conditions now, I trust that Ingenious Flying Peak will not try to bargain the price lower at all.”

Yan Zhaoge lightly rubbed his temples, “If only it could be so simple.”

“In having studied supreme martial arts of the Grand Clear lineage these past years, I have gained some insights into them.”

He forced a smile, “The foundation of the Brocade Emperor is already fixed as it cannot be changed. Studying the Taiyi Fist now would certainly help him as it would raise his strength greatly. Sadly, though, its effects would still have to exerted atop the current foundation that he possesses.”

In other words, it would not solve the current problem as it would simply make a madman even stronger than before.

Hearing his words, Wang Pu felt helpless as well.

Qiu Jiahai pondered for a moment before asking, “What state is the Brocade Emperor in now? Is he simply not in his right state of mind, or has something like a split consciousness occurred with him?”

“If I were to guess, it should be the latter,” Yan Zhaoge raised his head slightly, “With the Brocade Emperor having entered cultivation deviation, the most possible situation is a split personality in him, with one who emphasises greatly on feelings, and another who has already forgotten it all!”

The Brocade Emperor’s journey of mental states all these years had proceeded in stages.

Before birthing Fu Ting and Meng Wan, he had walked through countless meadows, unstained by a single leaf.

At this stage, the Brocade Emperor could be described as not letting a single ship sail amongst thousands.

Of course, over the past millennia and more, the actual number of women he had experienced should long have surpassed thousands.

At this stage, he had existed in between emotionality and forgetfulness.

He invested sincerity and devotion into every relationship of his. Yet, it was like he had countless selves who respectively dealt with these countless relationships.

Around a hundred years ago, the Brocade Emperor had entered a whole new stage or phase.

Amongst thousands, only a single ship had sailed.

He could be considered solely devoted at the extremity of feeling at this point.

In this refinement process, there had indeed existed the possibility of the Brocade Emperor's cultivation base advancing further.

Yet, during this process, for some unknown reason, a flaw had appeared for the Brocade Emperor.

It should originally have been 'many' becoming 'one'. In the end, it had been 'many' becoming 'two'.

The roots of calamity had been planted in the end.

As it erupted now, the lofty Emperor had really been compromised.

Of course, despite that, he was still an Emperor.

He was also even more dangerous.

With just a casual wave of a hand, he would be able to render countless people dead.

"While the state of extremity of feeling has receded, he should be unable to return to the first stage from before, that which looks like emotionality whilst also forgetfulness," Yan Zhaoge guessed, "Instead, a split has occurred in his mind as his feeling and unfeeling sides have separated."

Qiu Jiahai was silent for a time before he suddenly asked, “That is to say that the Brocade Emperor should still be in possession of his rationality and his memories. He will definitely be able to judge the current state of his body, seeking a way to remedy it.”

“With that, is it possible that he might...” Qiu Jiahai made a slow, chopping motion with his palm.

After pondering in earnest for a moment, Yan Zhaoge shook his head, “It would probably be useless. To him, the main thing is not that he has two daughters right now, but that he birthed two daughters in the past. He cannot change this past simply by denying the present.”

“Killing one of them would not be able to let him start over.”

Yan Zhaoge paused for a moment before continuing, “But if he killed both at once, maybe then...”

Wang Pu said, “If your words are true, junior apprentice-brother Yan, and the Brocade Emperor’s soul has indeed been split into two, the unfeeling side will probably have such intentions in mind.”

Qiu Jiahai said, “Whereas the feeling side will definitely move to prevent this.”

The three simply looked at one another.

Yan Zhaoge slowly said, “These are all just guesses on my part. We should take a look at what exactly is up with the Brocade Emperor before considering what should be done.”

Qiu Jiahai gazed towards the south, “In heading to the southern Blazing Heaven Territory right upon his return, it should have been to take revenge on Southern Zhuang and Wutong Slope?”

“It would have been a wasted journey...”

Upon Zhuang Shen’s death, facing the looming threat of Yan Di and Broad Creed Mountain, beneath the lead of its new Chief, Mao

Yuansheng, Phoenix Ritual Mountain's Wutong Slope had already long since moved away from Wutong Slope, seeking to find a new, secret location.

“No, that's not right,” Partway through his words, Qiu Jiahai rejected his own guess, “Not only would the unfeeling one not have love or sympathy, he would also not have emotions like hatred and fury.”

Yan Zhaoge nodded, “That's right. For the unfeeling Brocade Emperor, emotions would not be his benchmark in considering affairs. Instead, it would be how reasonable something is, or whether such might benefit him.”

“Being unfeeling does not mean that one has no desires. Still, in the process of seeking to achieve a goal, he will do whatever it is that might aid him in doing so, and avoid all that would be pointless.”

“For example, if he wishes to regain his original state or advance further, and taking revenge on Zhuang Shen and Wutong Slope would not be of any help in this, he would probably not do so.”

“But...” Yan Zhaoge lightly rubbed his temples, “The feeling one would probably have the exact opposite benchmark in his decision-making process.”

It was just-exactly what state of mind was the Brocade Emperor currently in?

# HSSB 1066: Difficult to identify as friend or foe

---

Qiu Jiahai looked at Wang Pu, “Has the Concealed Sovereign been notified of this?”

Wang Pu shook his head, “The Concealed Sovereign definitely already knows of the Brocade Emperor’s return. Still, we are only guessing about the Brocade Emperor’s current state, having no actual proof of this.”

“Of the bigwigs who are currently in the World beyond Worlds, the Female Emperor will definitely not be involved in this,” Qiu Jiahai said, “That leaves...the Heaven Emperor?”

He, Yan Zhaoge and Wang Pu exchanged glances, the three shaking their heads in unison.

It would already be great if that person did not stage a robbery amidst the fire.

Wang Pu said, “Whatever the case, the main thing now is to confirm what the Brocade Emperor is thinking and ascertain if junior apprentice-brother Yan’s guess is accurate.”

He looked at Qiu Jiahai, “Junior apprentice-brother Qiu, I will have to trouble you to make a trip to the south.”

Qiu Jiahai nodded, “Very well.”

Yan Zhaoge suddenly said now, “I should be the one to go.”

Wang Pu and Qiu Jiahai both looked at him, with the latter hesitating momentarily before he asked, “Junior apprentice-brother Yan, it couldn’t be that towards Red Lotus Fu, you...”

“Red Lotus Fu is outstanding and I admire her greatly. Still, that’s all this is to it. I have no intention of pursuing her,” Yan Zhaoge waved a hand dismissively.



He lightly rubbed his temple.

Back then, he had already thought about this when he had guessed that Meng Wan's father should have an extraordinary background.

It was very difficult to say how the Brocade Emperor would treat this additional daughter of his who had suddenly appeared.

She could be too much of a stranger to him as the relationship between them thus remained distant.

The Brocade Emperor could dislike her for having caused him to plummet to his current dismal state.

Yet, it might also be that he would give her whatever she wanted in order to compensate her due to his guilt.

The first two possibilities would not affect him. Still, Yan Zhaoge had to pay attention to the last one.

Meng Wan who hailed from the Sacred Sun Clan had never displayed clear hostility towards Broad Creed Mountain before. All and any friction between them had stemmed from the battle between the two sides in the Eight Extremities World as she had no personal enmity with them whatsoever.

She was also close as sisters with Feng Yunsheng.

Still, the Sacred Sun Clan had been destroyed by Broad Creed Mountain at the end of the day.

It was fine when Meng Wan had lacked the capabilities, but what would she do after she had gained them?

Meanwhile, what sort of attitude would the Brocade Emperor have towards this?

The current Broad Creed Mountain was supported by the Northern High Peak's Jade Capital Crag.

The problem was that the current Brocade Emperor was in an abnormal state and could not be judged by normal standards.

This was especially significant as the Sword Sovereign, Yue Zhenbei, had currently still yet to return to the World beyond Worlds.

Yan Zhaoge had no choice but to pay attention to this problem.

If some Martial Saint expert were to descend to the Eight Extremities World, Yan Zhaoge would not be concerned about it at all.

He would descend too, with both sides being suppressed at the third level of the Martial Saint realm together as anyone who came would not be able to return.

Still, when True Immortals descended to lower worlds, their cultivation bases would not be restricted by the dimensional boundaries of the heavens and the earth!

It would not be an exaggeration to say that if the Brocade Emperor descended into the Eight Extremities World, just one single loud cough on his part could simply reduce it all to nothing.

If he headed to the Eight Extremities World through the Royal Reed Sea, Yan Zhaoge would be helpless.

First not speaking of how the Brocade Emperor possessed an Immortal Artifact, even if he was bare-handed, the method that had been effective against the Heaven Emperor would not work on him.

Of course, this was the worst case scenario.

Meng Wan might not do anything to harm Broad Creed Mountain, and it was the same for the Brocade Emperor.

It was even the case that whether or not Meng Wan was currently still alive was unknown.

Therefore, Yan Zhaoge was currently rather curious as to what the Brocade Emperor was thinking.

Also, his father was currently leading members of the sect in

expanding into the southern Blazing Heaven Territory. His path would coincide with that of the Brocade Emperor as he headed south.

Fortunately, Shi Jun and the others had already settled down at Jade Capital Crag, and his affairs at Dragon Butterfly Valley and Wind Thunder Manor were already settled too. Wang Pu and Qiu Jiahai would be assisting him in the initial stages of preparations after this.

Yan Zhaoge did not mind departing from Kunlun Mountain at this moment.

After taking his leave of Wang Pu and Qiu Jiahai, Yan Zhaoge headed south for the southern Blazing Heaven Territory.

As he travelled, news was unceasingly transmitted to him.

With Jade Capital Crag supporting him, the thing Yan Zhaoge was most satisfied with was that he was able to utilise its information channels a great deal.

While it would still surely be impossible for him to have full control over them, Wang Pu was still rather generous with him in this area.

Therefore, after Broad Creed Mountain's opening ceremony, Yan Zhaoge had felt all at once like many things in the Worlds beyond Worlds which he had not understood before were no longer completely unbeknownst to him as there was more information which was accessible for him.

The latest news that had arrived was that the Brocade Emperor had arrived at Phoenix Ritual Mountain's Wutong Slope.

It was already a deserted location now.

The Brocade Emperor had remained there for a short while before immediately leaving, going around everywhere to search for those of Wutong Slope who had moved away!

“Is it because he wants to take revenge for Zhuang Shen’s actions or is it because of something else?” Yan Zhaoge wondered.

As he left the central Jun Heaven Territory and arrived in the southern Blazing Heaven Territory, some more information came in.

The Brocade Emperor spread word that he was not going to find trouble for Mao Yuansheng and co. He had only come to the south to look for someone, wanting them to tell him the person’s location.

The first name that immediately appeared in Yan Zhaoge’s mind was none other than Liu Xianting!

This was Meng Wan’s mother.

“I just wonder how this will end,” Yan Zhaoge traversed the Region of Thousand Lakes.

This was where the southern Blazing Heaven Territory bordered the central Jun Heaven Territory.

When Yan Zhaoge had rampaged through the south that year, this was where Peng He, Qing Shuzi and the others had believed he would leave the south through.

Going further south from the Region of Thousand Lakes, one would arrive at the Endless Mountain Range which Yan Zhaoge had once visited before.

As Yan Zhaoge continued heading south, yet more news was transmitted to him.

‘Phoenix Crying Southern Territory’ Mao Yuansheng had finally appeared. He had left after a short meeting with the Brocade Emperor, who had indeed not made things difficult for him.

Also, after Mao Yuansheng had left, the Brocade Emperor had not stayed where he was as he had instead gone to the Flooded Flat Plains in the southeast of the southern Blazing Heaven Territory.

Finally, he had stopped by a huge lake in the northern region of the plains.

The Star Reflecting Lake was a famous scenic spot of the Flooded Flat Plains which was renowned throughout the entire southern Blazing Heaven Territory, being relatively well-known even in the World beyond Worlds itself.

After arriving at the Star Reflecting Lake, the Brocade Emperor had stopped and ceased to move.

His strength had completely sealed and locked down the heavens and earth about Star Reflecting Lake.

When everyone else got there, they were unable to approach, only able to watch on from the side while waiting for stronger experts to arrive.

The news transmitted by Wang Pu had already drawn the attention of the Southern High Peak's Qilin Cliff as the Earth Exalt Wang Zhengcheng had sent disciples over to take a look at things in the south.

Yan Zhaoge travelled southward, arriving in the Flooded Flat Plains.

Gazing over from far away, he saw a black hemisphere in the horizon which looked incomparably massive as it was affixed above the great earth.

Closer to it, one would discover that it was not pure black as it was half white and half black, resembling Taiji as the two colours intermingled.

This hemisphere was located at Star Reflecting Lake as the entire lake was currently enveloped by it.

Approaching the black and white hemisphere, Yan Zhaoge discovered that people were gathered on its outskirts in several groups as they observed it.

Yan Zhaoge was more familiar with two of them.

One of them was his second apprentice-uncle, Fang Zhun of Broad Creed Mountain. The other was a personal disciple of the Brocade Emperor's from Ingenious Flying Peak's Red Lotus Cliff, He Xixing.

Fang Zhun had accompanied Yan Di in their conquest of the southern Blazing Heaven Territory.

He Xixing had come from Ingenious Flying Peak not long ago at Yan Zhaoge's reminder as he had specifically come south to look for the Brocade Emperor of whom no news had been heard at all.

In the end, not long after he had arrived, the Brocade Emperor had returned to the World beyond Worlds, even having come straight to the southern Blazing Heaven Territory.

Yet, He Xixing felt helpless at the fact that he had yet to meet his Master even once since his return.

# HSSB 1067: The dead are departed

---

‘Embracing Grand Ultimate’ He Xixing was an expert of the late Immortal Bridge Martial Saint realm.

He was a prided disciple of the Brocade Emperor’s and the peak descendant of Red Lotus Cliff.

He had always been acclaimed alongside the likes of Nie Jingshen and Qing Shuzi in the World beyond Worlds.

While not as famous as Nie Jingshen, he was still a peak expert of the World beyond Worlds’ younger generation.

He was one of those who stood at the peak of the ninth level of the Martial Saint realm and merely a step away from the Human Exalt stage, having a chance of becoming a new Exalt in the near future.

When talking about her fellow disciples to Yan Zhaoge, Fu Ting had been full of praise towards this He Xixing.

Yan Zhaoge had also met him once at Ingenious Flying Peak before.

Afterwards, due to Yan Zhaoge’s reminder, He Xixing had come south in an attempt to locate the Brocade Emperor.

Now, while he had finally managed to find him, He Xixing could not feel happy at all.

“Why exactly has Master come here?” After greeting Yan Zhaoge, He Xixing gazed again towards that hemisphere of black and white above the great earth with a troubled expression on his face.

Yan Zhaoge glanced at him and hesitated, not telling him about his guess that he had told Wang Pu and Qiu Jiahai about in the end.

Through sound transmission, he conveyed a bit of this to Fang Zhun. A strange light instantly glowed in Fang Zhun’s eyes upon

having heard this.

While shocking waves surged within his heart, his expression remained unchanged and as per usual.

After a while, he took his leave of He Xixing before departing in a nonchalant manner like nothing was the case.

He had left to contact others of Broad Creed Mountain and make some preparations beforehand.

Yan Zhaoge remained where he was, gazing at that hemisphere of black and white along with He Xixing. There was no use in being anxious now as they could only await patiently.

Soon after, yet another person arrived from the north.

Gazing over, Yan Zhaoge and He Xixing saw the newcomer who was garbed in brownish-yellow clothing and had a solemn expression on his face.

“Li Junxin...” After seeing that person’s features, a name appeared within Yan Zhaoge’s mind.

This was a disciple of the Earth Exalt and a descendant of the Earthly Sovereign, ‘Earth Spirit Lord’ Li Junxin.

He was also a late Immortal Bridge Martial Saint who was acclaimed alongside He Xixing and Qing Shuzi’s lot.

His fame surpassed even that of He Xixing and Qing Shuzi somewhat, being inferior only to Nie Jingshen’s.

The Heaven Emperor had said that besides his disciple Qing Shuzi, there were three others who had an extremely high possibility of attaining the Human Exalt stage within a short period of time.

This referred to none other than Nie Jingshen, Li Junxin and He Xixing.

The Earth Exalt Wang Zhengcheng had an extremely high age and seniority within the World beyond Worlds. As a result, Li



Junxin's seniority was remarkably high as well.

Still, Li Junxin was not putting up any arrogant act as he was simply looking with a grave expression on his face over at that massive hemisphere of black and white that enveloped Star Reflecting Lake.

As he saw Yan Zhaoge, his gaze flickered slightly before he took the initiative to walk towards them.

"Long time no see, Fellow Daoist He," Li Junxin greeted, "This is our first meeting, Fellow Daoist Yan. This Li greets you here."

Yan Zhaoge and He Xixing returned proper greetings to him, "You are polite, Fellow Daoist Li."

The trio stood together. As more people arrived in their surroundings to take a look at the situation, their attentions momentarily shifted away from that white and black hemisphere, instead falling on them.

One was a personal disciple of the Brocade Emperor, another a descendant of the Earthly Sovereign.

There was another who was the junior apprentice-nephew of the Sword Sovereign. Not even looking at his background, this person had also stirred up incomparable waves in recent years, being a figure of the younger generation of the World beyond Worlds who had most been in the limelight recently.

As the three stood together, while Yan Zhaoge's cultivation base was the lowest amongst them, he drew the most gazes.

In Broad Creed Mountain's opening ceremony, Yan Di had slain the Southern Exalt Zhuang Shen and shocked the world.

Still, prior to that, Yan Zhaoge had also majorly grasped the upper hand while battling Zhuang Shen.

As an Immortal Bridge Martial Saint, he had left a Human Exalt hard pressed to parry his blows. He would naturally be the subject

of all eyes with that.

It need not even be mentioned how Yan Zhaoge had mightily resisted the Heaven Emperor.

While Li Junxin and He Xixing had yet to attain the Human Exalt stage, even if they had, they still might not be able to defeat Yan Zhaoge.

Still, Yan Zhaoge felt somewhat alert.

He vaguely felt as though there seemed to be someone who could truly threaten him present.

It was just that this feeling was extremely indistinct as it was as if he was just imagining it.

“How long has the Brocade Emperor been like this?” Li Junxin now asked in a low tone.

He Xixing took a deep breath before answering, “It has almost been a full day already.”

Yan Zhaoge and Li Junxin both frowned upon hearing this, neither of them speaking.

Everyone remained silent as they simply focused their gazes on that black and white hemisphere.

After who knew how long, Yan Zhaoge’s heart suddenly jolted slightly.

Then, that black and white hemisphere visibly began to collapse as it flattened, finally transforming into a Taiji diagram.

The Taiji diagram rotated, shrinking towards its centre.

As the black and white receded, Star Reflecting Lake which had previously been enveloped by it now finally saw the light of day once more.

Everyone’s eyes lit up at once. The scenery at the lake was indeed intoxicating.

The bright starlight was reflected on the lake's surface as it was beautiful and majestic, profound and abstruse, causing those who saw it to forget about wanting to leave.

“Could here be where the Brocade Emperor met with Liu Xianting that year?” Yan Zhaoge wondered, “It is indeed a good place for picking up chicks.”

Although the black and white Taiji diagram was receding, everyone dared not approach immediately as they continued to observe it from a distance away.

There was only the Brocade Emperor's disciple, He Xixing, who strode forward, slowly heading for the centre of the Taiji diagram which was also the centre of Star Reflecting Lake.

Yan Zhaoge looked towards Li Junxin beside him and saw that he too was looking at him.

The two retracted their gazes, heading towards the centre of the lake as well.

The scenery of Star Reflecting Lake was beautiful as it vaguely appeared intricate and graceful somewhat. Still, this entire lake actually occupied a very big region.

At the centre of the lake, there were a few small isles which were all very tiny, resembling some stars which were scattered amidst the starry sky of the universe.

Yan Zhaoge, He Xixing and Li Junxin jointly ascended one of these isles based on their intuition.

The isle was dense with greenery and beautiful too.

Still, the trio was not in the mood to admire this.

Their gazes traversed the countless trees and finally came to rest on a clear spring of the forest.

There were two people seated there.

Beside them was a grave. From the difference between the soil

and the surrounding environment, one could tell that it was an old grave which had been newly shifted over from elsewhere.

Controlled by an expert of the martial dao who had the power to move mountains and fill seas, the grave did not have to be dug up at all for this to be done.

The entire surrounding area could be unearthed and moved over to a new area before being settled down again.

For example, the graves of the ancestors of Phoenix Ritual Mountain's Wutong Slope had also been moved away by Mao Yuansheng and the others as they had abandoned their original headquarters.

Looking at the words inscribed on the stone tablet before the grave, Yan Zhaoge raised his head slightly, "So Liu Xianting was already dead..."

The Brocade Emperor had indeed been looking for Liu Xianting in seeking a person's whereabouts from the martial practitioners of Phoenix Ritual Mountain's Wutong Slope.

From the looks of it now, Liu Xianting had already died and been buried long ago. When the martial practitioners of Phoenix Ritual Mountain had left, they had moved her grave along with the others.

Mao Yuansheng had handed it over to the Brocade Emperor afterwards.

The Brocade Emperor had moved Liu Xianting's grave over to the Star Reflecting Lake.

Yan Zhaoge gazed at the two who were seated before the grave.

One of them was a handsome middle-aged man who appeared around forty on the outside.

He was garbed in snow white clothes and a red robe as his hair streamed untied behind his back.

This was none other than one of the World beyond Worlds' Five Emperors, the Brocade Emperor Fu Yunchi.

# HSSB 1068: *A meeting long overdue*

---

Across from the Brocade Emperor sat a girl.

Others might find her extremely unfamiliar.

Yan Zhaoge, however, found her extremely familiar, despite the fact that he had already not seen her for more than ten years.

She was still fresh and beautiful with her features virtually perfect and without flaw. She had a pair of small, doe-like eyes that were intelligent yet tender, instinctively making one want to protect her.

As compared to in her youth, her spiritual air had not faded over the years as she had instead seemingly become more transcendent as though she was some beautiful spirit of nature.

She did not have Fu Ting's beautiful, exposed sharpness which dazzled one's eyes, yet possessed a flair of her own that was not inferior in the least.

This was none other than Meng Wan.

She had been the Sacred Sun Clan's Maiden of Extreme Yin in the Eight Extremities World, having presided domineeringly over the rest multiple times and won the right to control the Extreme Yin Crown.

Afterwards, she had been brought to the World beyond Worlds by the Radiant Light Sect. When the Grand Xuan Dynasty had destroyed the Radiant Light Sect, she had been defeated by Feng Yunsheng with the Extreme Yin Crown hence finally falling into the hands of Feng Yunsheng and Broad Creed Mountain.

Back then, Meng Wan had been abducted by the late son of the Southern Exalt, Zhuang Chaohui, who had been passing by.

Her whereabouts had remained unknown afterwards.

When Yan Zhaoge had rampaged through the south that year,

besides the battle where he had killed many famed experts of Phoenix Ritual Mountain's Wutong Slope like Peng He, Zhang Shuren and Yuan Xiancheng with the help of the Nine Bends Yellow River Formation, he had also asked about Meng Wan's whereabouts from some martial practitioners of Phoenix Ritual Mountain's Wutong Slope whom he had casually captured. Still, he had not been successful in gaining any information.

It seemed like only the coremost martial practitioners of Phoenix Ritual Mountain like Zhuang Shen, Mao Yuansheng and Zhuang Chaohui had been in the know about this.

On seeing Meng Wan again now, Yan Zhaoge saw that she looked to be in an okay condition. While it probably could not be said that she had lived well over the past few years, she had probably not been ill-treated too.

Looking at her, Yan Zhaoge sighed, unable to stop himself from shaking his head and smiling bitterly as he recalled Feng Yunsheng whom he had not seen for many years since her departure previously.

Meng Wan sat quietly there with a calm, tranquil expression on her face.

Still, all her attention was clearly on the Brocade Emperor before her at this moment as she could not be focused elsewhere at all.

While this handsome middle-aged man was gazing entrancedly at the grave beside her most of the time, his gaze that would land on her from time to time just left her feeling vaguely uneasy within.

That was a very strange gaze.

If it was simple killing intent, hostility, evil or malicious intent, Meng Wan would not be feeling as uneasy as she was now.

Instead, the Brocade Emperor's gaze seemed to be flickering unceasingly.

With this frequency being too high, one might mistakenly believe

it to be unchanging.

Actually, however, interchangeably appearing in the Brocade Emperor's pupils were a warm gaze and an indifferent gaze.

It changed countless times in an instant!

Not only was his gaze like this when he was looking at Meng Wan, it was flickering all the time at any single moment.

It was just that no changes visibly appeared on the Brocade Emperor's face as his aura was eternally stable too, looking just like it always did.

Li Junxin did not notice any abnormalities for the time being. Still, Yan Zhaoge who had long since had his suspicions and He Xixing who was familiar with his Master were vaguely able to tell that something was up.

"This disciple greets Master," While He Xixing felt quizzical, he still went forward and greeted the Brocade Emperor at once.

Li Junxin did the same, greeting the Brocade Emperor.

Yan Zhaoge did the same too, but observed the surroundings even as he paid attention to the Brocade Emperor.

The feeling of crisis that had existed in his heart earlier was even more intense than before.

Suddenly, his gaze shot towards the distance at lightning speed.

Yan Zhaoge's gaze traversed space, falling on a mountain peak by the Star Reflecting Lake.

At the same time, he felt a gaze falling on him from that location. Their two gazes clashed.

The space between the mountain peak by the lake and this isle that was on it distorted at this moment with electricity being born from nowhere.

The originally calm surface of the Star Reflecting Lake suddenly



surged.

“Oh?” A rather surprised voice seemingly resounded by Yan Zhaoge’s ear.

He too clearly saw the other party’s appearance now.

At the top of the mountainous rocks and by a dense forest, there was a rather obtrusive old wooden armchair with a dense scholarly air about it.

Atop the wooden armchair sat a purple-clothed youth with rather pale skin. He looked very lazy, as if there was nothing which could get his spirits up at all.

At this moment, however, this youth no longer appeared so listless as he looked at Yan Zhaoge through the corner of his eye.

With one look at him, Yan Zhaoge recognised him as the head of the Ten Exalts and the current strongest Martial Saint of the World beyond Worlds, the Upper Exalt Chen Qianhua!

Chen Qianhua too was appraising Yan Zhaoge at this moment.

He had been the first one to arrive, having even beat He Xixing, Fang Zhun and the rest to it.

Chen Qianhua who always acted as he liked just focused on watching the commotion, having no intention of interacting with anyone else.

While he did not reveal his location, he did not intentionally conceal himself as well.

Even so, however, there was no one else who had discovered his presence besides the Brocade Emperor.

Chen Qianhua had not minded this whatsoever as he lazily awaited that beginning of what he was sure would be a good show.

Only when the hemisphere of black and white had disappeared and Star Reflecting Lake had seen the light of day once more, with the Brocade Emperor appearing and Chen Qianhua paying more

attention to the small isle in the middle of the lake, had he suddenly discovered that the Brocade Emperor aside, there was also someone else who had detected his presence, even having located him with a single glance.

He immediately gazed back in that direction.

After appraising him and recognising him to be Yan Zhaoge, a hint of a smile involuntarily appeared by the corners of Chen Qianhua's mouth.

Seeing this, Yan Zhaoge raised his brows slightly.

A deep yet pleasant voice resounded by his ear now, "In having been able to deduce Chen Qianhua's location, you are indeed not simple."

Retracting his gaze and looking over, Yan Zhaoge saw that the Brocade Emperor was currently gazing towards him too.

Facing the Brocade Emperor's gaze, Yan Zhaoge's heart jolted slightly as he could be even more sure that while this Emperor might appear normal, he was currently in an extremely unstable state just as he had predicted.

"At this moment, he is probably locked in an inner battle with himself at every single point in time."

Yan Zhaoge thought, "His unfeeling and feeling sides have really split apart and become opposed, merely being in a subtle equilibrium for now as neither has been able to clearly grasp the upper hand."

The Brocade Emperor's current state was one that Yan Zhaoge least wanted to see.

Whether it was feeling or unfeeling, both had a general way in which they operated which one could be certain of. There would be methods and ways with which to interact with them.

Now, however, there were too many variations that were really

difficult to predict.

Far away on the mountaintop, Chen Qianhua showed no intention of approaching as he was instead smiling happily.

“This trip was not a wasted one,” He now rejoiced, “Right, just like this, it’s only interesting like this!”

Despite knowing that Chen Qianhua was there, the Brocade Emperor had a calm expression on his face at this moment as he just looked mildly at Yan Zhaoge, “While I wanted to meet you since way back, it happened that it was continually delayed as I have only gotten to meet you in person today.”

Yan Zhaoge said, “You overpraise me, Brocade Emperor.”

“My little daughter...” The Brocade Emperor smiled, glancing at Meng Wan, “Not this little daughter, but my eldest daughter, Little Red Lotus.”

Little Red Lotus was Fu Ting’s nickname which only her parents could call her, and not any of her other elders.

The Brocade Emperor said, “I must really thank you for helping out when Little Red Lotus was in danger back then.”

Yan Zhaoge cupped his hands, “Sadly, some regrets were still left behind. This Yan too finds it a great pity.”

# HSSB 1069: The madman whose actions are hard to predict

---

Yan Zhaoge had spoken in an obscure manner, naturally referring to how the seed of trouble had been planted within Fu Ting from her learning the name of the Immeasurable Heavenly Lord as this matter had still not been resolved in a satisfactory manner even now.

Hearing his words, the Brocade Emperor nodded before saying very naturally, “There was just no helping how she stumbled into the lands of the Immortal Court and heard the name of the Immeasurable Heavenly Lord.”

Yan Zhaoge’s pupils dilated abruptly as he broke out in a cold sweat, his hairs standing on end.

The Brocade Emperor had not actually conveyed this latest message to him via sound transmission.

Instead, he had blatantly said it out loud in front of so many people!

Moreover, while he had not spoken very loudly, his voice had spread far into the distance towards the surrounding world.

Without needing to spend any effort at all, the Brocade Emperor could let his own voice resound throughout half of the entire southern Blazing Heaven Territory!

He Xixing and Li Junxin who were standing beside them heard the Brocade Emperor’s words at once.

As the prided descendants of the Brocade Emperor and the Earth Exalt, they were privy to much top secret information.

They even knew about the opposing entities that were the Immortal Court and Buddhism.

However, even for late Immortal Bridge Martial Saints like them,

the name of the Immeasurable Heavenly Lord was an absolute taboo!

It was impossible that the Brocade Emperor was not aware of this.

Therefore, while He Xixing had heard of the Immortal Court before, it was just limited to this concept alone as he did not know about its specific details at all, much less the Immeasurable Heavenly Lord.

Now, however, he was rendered somewhat stunned right there and then.

As the name of the Immeasurable Heavenly Lord flashed through his mind, even as he felt curious, a strange feeling also vaguely appeared within his heart.

While this feeling was totally baseless and indistinct, He Xixing just felt like something extra seemed to have appeared at the very depths of his soul.

Yet, trying to zero down on that feeling, there seemed to be nothing at all, as though he had been hallucinating it all.

Despite that, He Xixing's lifeblood surged as he vaguely had a foreboding premonition now.

Meanwhile, Li Junxin who had also been paying close attention to the Brocade Emperor felt the same thing as He Xixing as he heard the name of the Immeasurable Heavenly Lord at this moment.

As the voice of the Brocade Emperor spread, those in the vicinity of Star Reflecting Lake who were paying attention to this matter, having come over to gather news, naturally heard these words too.

Everyone felt bewildered, "Immortal Court, Immeasurable Heavenly Lord? What are those?"

Amidst their puzzlement, they also felt that some strange feeling

now additionally existed within their hearts, undetectable at times whilst obvious at others.

On the mountaintop across the lake, Chen Qianhua blinked, shooting straight up from the wooden armchair as he burst into applause, “Magnificent indeed!”

Meng Wan who was seated beside the Brocade Emperor was also feeling slightly at a loss as to what was going on. Still, like those others apart from Yan Zhaoge and Chen Qianhua, she had not realised what exactly this latest occurrence really entailed.

“This is why I hate madmen,” Yan Zhaoge touched his forehead with his left hand, next raising his right hand.

The Myriad Dragon Palace appeared, its gate now opening.

A black metal wheel rotated within, containing twelve slots of which nine were lit.

This was none other than the Dim Radiant Wheel.

The black metal wheel suddenly ceased to rotate, the radiance of the slots dimming as only one emitted a lustrous radiance.

The radiance surged up into the heavens, scattering in all directions within the sky to form a screen of light which expanded to overtake the sound waves emitted by the Brocade Emperor’s voice.

Finally, the screen of light transformed into a hemisphere which enveloped the entire surrounding region, preventing the Brocade Emperor’s voice from travelling outwards.

The sound waves that looked ordinary and formless visibly manifested at this moment, unceasingly striking at the screen of light before being reflected by it.

Fortunately, the Brocade Emperor did not attempt to break that screen of light. He let his voice be blocked, not minding it at all.

He completely ignored Yan Zhaoge’s actions, seemingly wholly

unaware of what might be wrought as a result of his earlier action.

This True Immortal continued speaking mildly, “Little Friend Yan, the sect that you hail from, Broad Creed Mountain, will be attempting to occupy the southern Blazing Heaven Territory after this, is it not?”

“If that is so, I have something to request of you.”

He looked at the grave beside him before sighing, “I came to know Xianting here that year, falling in love and standing by each other. Still, I let her down in the end.”

“Now that the dead are departed, I can only abide by her wish and have her buried here.”

“After occupying the southern Blazing Heaven Territory, I hope that your Broad Creed Mountain will not disturb her. If you can help take care of things here, I will first thank you here.”

After saying so, he even half-bowed towards Yan Zhaoge in thanks.

Even though Yan Zhaoge had the background of the Exalted Gold Luminary and the Sword Sovereign supporting him, a True Immortal like the Brocade Emperor doing this was shocking within this world.

Let alone those by the shore in the distance, He Xixing and Li Junxin were both looking on in shock at the Brocade Emperor.

The corners of Yan Zhaoge’s mouth twitched as he did not feel honoured in the least.

With a strange expression on his face, he looked first at He Xixing and then at Meng Wan.

He Xixing could be said to be the Brocade Emperor’s most prided disciple at the present time.

Meng Wan was the birth daughter of the Brocade Emperor.

Yet, the Brocade Emperor had been wholly unreserved in

mentioning the Immeasurable Heavenly Lord in front of them, next having acted as if nothing had happened at all.

One must know that it was not that the trouble hidden within He Xixing, Meng Wan and the others would simply disappear after they had attained the Human Exalt stage.

Only those who were already Exalts would not be affected after hearing the name of the Immeasurable Heavenly Lord.

The problem would still exist for those who had heard it beforehand and become Exalts only afterwards.

“So long as they do not find trouble with us, our sect had no plans to relentlessly pursue and kill those of Wutong Slope in the first place,” Yan Zhaoge locked down sound from travelling into the outside world while conversing with the Brocade Emperor, “Moreover, the dead are departed. We would naturally not make things difficult for a lover of yours, o Emperor.”

“You and Meng...” Yan Zhaoge paused briefly, looking towards the Brocade Emperor and Meng Wan.

The Brocade Emperor smiled, “Fu Mengwan. This is the name that Xianting christened Wan’er with.”

Yan Zhaoge nodded, “If the Brocade Emperor and Miss Fu do not mind, our sect will send people to take charge of things here at Star Reflecting Lake, making sure that it is not disturbed by anyone.”

“In that case, thank you then, Young Master Yan,” Meng Wan rose, bowing towards Yan Zhaoge too.

She had a tranquil expression on her face at this moment with the attitude of simply awaiting and going wherever things led her.

Meng Wan would definitely not be able to feel calm for this most major upheaval in her life.

It was just that she could only go along with the flow and see where things led her now.



The Brocade Emperor now said, “I feel immense gratitude at Little Friend Yan’s assistance. I will have to trouble your sect in the future then.”

“I would like to take a look at the land where Wan’er grew up in her youth. Wan’er also rather misses her Master who raised her in the past. I should properly thank her on her behalf too.”

“Everyone, you can leave then.”

With that, he nodded towards Meng Wan, holding her hand as he stepped forth, disappearing from the spot amidst endless purple qi that surged all round.

The Upper Exalt Chen Qianhua stared at Yan Zhaoge for a long time, a conflicted look appearing on his face as he seemed to be considering whether to stay behind and interact with Yan Zhaoge or to continue following the Brocade Emperor.

In the end, he glanced regretfully at Yan Zhaoge before turning and taking his leave as well.

The screen of light from the Dim Radiant Wheel did not impede the Brocade Emperor and Chen Qianhua from leaving.

Instead, it was maintained there. As the two vanished, it remained with the intention of making sure everyone else stayed there.

He Xixing looked strangely at Yan Zhaoge.

Yan Zhaoge rubbed his temples, “Please do not be in a hurry to leave, Fellow Daoist He. There are some things that you must first be told of.”

# HSSB 1070: The Brocade Emperor descends to the Eight Extremities World

---

The faces of He Xixing and Li Junxin after learning the truth were exceptionally colourful portraits indeed.

Li Junxin's first reaction was to look towards He Xixing.

After a stunned silence, an awkward He Xixing could only smile bitterly.

Yan Zhaoge exchanged looks with the two of them as they all just felt deeply helpless.

The name of the Immeasurable Heavenly Lord was a forbidden entity for the entire World beyond Worlds.

All those who knew of it would keep their mouths tightly shut, not leaking this of their own accord.

Even the Heaven Emperor and Zhuang Shen had never even thought of resorting to this when they had been on irreconcilable terms with Broad Creed Mountain and Golden Court Mountain before.

On one hand, they were unwilling for orthodox Daoism to be harmed at the expense of the Immortal Court and the Immeasurable Heavenly Lord.

On the other, this sort of method could be used by both sides. If they used it against others, others could similarly use it back against them.

Therefore, besides the Upper Exalt Chen Qianhua whose thoughts were difficult to predict, all the other peak experts of the World beyond Worlds shared this collective understanding and bottom line.

Perhaps because he was unconcerned about it or due to some other reason, the Upper Exalt Chen Qianhua had also never leaked

information regarding the Immeasurable Heavenly Lord and the Immortal Court before.

Who would have thought that it would be the Brocade Emperor Fu Yunchi who was the first to infringe on this bottom line today.

Li Junxin had a heavy expression on his face as he said not a word.

Yan Zhaoge could basically empathise with him. This was a classic case of the casual bystander ending up a tragic casualty.

“Today’s events should be conveyed to the Earth Exalt as soon as possible,” Yan Zhaoge sighed.

Li Junxin nodded silently, saying after a while, “I will return to Qilin Cliff now and tell Master about this. I will inform the Concealed Sovereign too. I will leave it to the two of you to watch over things here for the time being.”

He calmed his emotions before turning and heading north.

Yan Zhaoge smiled wryly as he looked at He Xixing, “Can I request that Fellow Daoist He helps me watch over things here?”

“The Brocade Emperor will be heading to none other than the lower world that my Broad Creed Mountain originates from, the Eight Extremities World, after this.”

“That place is currently subordinate to my Broad Creed Mountain. Still, to ensure that the Brocade Emperor is shown due respect, it would still be better for this Yan makes a trip personally.”

He said, “I will invite the Southeastern Exalt to oversee and handle things over here.”

He Xixing cupped his hands towards Yan Zhaoge, “Of course, Fellow Daoist Yan. This He will make sure that things all go well here.”

He had already calmed down completely at this moment. Though

he himself was also a victim, his future prospects potentially hindered, he had already regained his usual mature, responsible, self.

As a direct descendant of the Grand Clear lineage, He Xixing possessed outstanding strength. Also being a late Immortal Bridge Martial Saint, as he currently took charge over the area around Star Reflecting Lake, the people there were immediately put under his watch and kept from leaving.

With his presence, while those who were detained expressed slight dissatisfaction, they did still tolerate it.

As this matter concerned an Emperor, that they had been spying on this location to watch what happened was itself rather a taboo too.

Now that they had been detained by a disciple of the Brocade Emperor, awaiting further verdict, they could not really complain about it.

After taking his leave of He Xixing, Yan Zhaoze quickly headed east in rushing to the southeastern Yang Heaven Territory.

The wound of the sky that connected the World beyond Worlds and the Eight Extremities World was located in the Spirit Inheritance Region of the southeastern Yang Heaven Territory's Royal Reed Sea. It was currently beneath the back mountain of Broad Creed Mountain.

For those who wanted to go from the World beyond Worlds to the Eight Extremities World, if they had no precise spatial markers to guide them, they would only be able to use the wound of the sky at Broad Creed Mountain.

These basic rules might not be applicable to a True Immortal any longer, though.

Still, who knew how the Brocade Emperor would travel to the Eight Extremities World.

Therefore, Yan Zhaoge could only rush back to Broad Creed Mountain in the Royal Reed Sea.

Moreover, the Upper Exalt Chen Qianhua seemed to want to join in the fun too.

As he had never actually interacted with him face to face before, Yan Zhaoge's understanding of Chen Qianhua was limited to a few rumours.

After seeing him a little for the first time today, Yan Zhaoge could sense that he definitely was not someone to be trifled with.

"This time's matter was already difficult to predict in the first place, and yet another unpredictable variable has been added in now," Yan Zhaoge curled his lips, lightly rubbing his temple.

After much journeying, Yan Zhaoge passed by Circumference Mountain and returned to the Royal Reed Sea.

After returning to Broad Creed Mountain and seeing that things were all normal there, Yan Zhaoge was able to relax greatly.

He landed at the top of the Heaven Rising Peak and happened to meet Yuan Zhengfeng and Fang Zhun as they emerged from the great hall.

Seeing Fang Zhun, Yan Zhaoge felt inwardly relieved.

Thanks to his reminder, Fang Zhun had left Star Reflecting Lake prematurely, returning to Broad Creed Mountain.

It would naturally have been unrealistic to try to impede the Brocade Emperor's footsteps. Besides returning to inform his fellow martial practitioners of Broad Creed Mountain in the Royal Reed Sea, more important was that Fang Zhun had informed those who were in the Eight Extremities World about this, lest they accidentally provoke or offend the Brocade Emperor due to their ignorance.

After all, Meng Wan was travelling together with the Brocade

Emperor, and many of Broad Creed Mountain's martial practitioners would be able to recognise her as the Maiden of Extreme Yin of their fallen foe of the past, the Sacred Sun Clan.

In the end, Fang Zhun had managed to avoid this tribulation as a result, with tragedy not having befallen him like it had He Xixing, Li Junxin and the others.

“Zhaoge, that you have personally rushed back means that the Brocade Emperor will really be coming?” Yuan Zhengfeng asked.

Yan Zhaoge gnashed his teeth, “The Brocade Emperor came ahead of me.”

He looked at Yuan Zhengfeng and Fang Zhun, “From the looks of it, he did not come here. Even if he did, he did not alert us of his presence.”

“As the Brocade Emperor possesses a mighty cultivation base, if he wanted to hide himself, we would naturally be unable to discover him,” Fang Zhun shook his head, “Still, with his status and identity, he would not lower himself to the point of hiding himself and acting covertly before our sect.”

Yan Zhaoge nodded, “Exactly.”

He paused for a moment before asking, “Then, what about the Upper Exalt?”

While they had not interacted much, based on Chen Qianhua's earlier actions, Yan Zhaoge believed that he was likely to casually pass through Broad Creed Mountain in heading to the Eight Extremities World.

“The Upper Exalt has gotten involved too?” Yuan Zhengfeng and Fang Zhun both shook their heads, “We haven't seen him, at least.”

Yan Zhaoge pondered on this as he strode towards Water Ridge Peak.

The wound of the sky that led to the Eight Extremities World was precisely beneath this Water Ridge Peak.

“I recall that Meng Wan’s Master in the Sacred Sun Clan, Chen Mingying, joined Turbid Wind Pavilion that year?” Yan Zhaoge confirmed things with Yuan Zhengfeng and Fang Zhun as they walked, “Is she still there now?”

Fang Zhun nodded, “She is.”

After the Sacred Sun Clan had been felled by Yan Zhaoge that year, its martial practitioners had either died or dispersed.

Some chose to live solitarily or in hiding while others chose to join other powers of the Eight Extremities World.

Elder Chen Mingying could be considered a reputable expert of the Sacred Sun Clan’s senior generation as she was also Meng Wan’s Master. Therefore, Broad Creed Mountain still paid attention to what she was currently doing.

In the battle in the underwater palace of the Clear Scenic Region that year, Feng Yunsheng had battled Meng Wan to decide on the ultimate wielder of the Extreme Yin Crown.

Back then, Feng Yunsheng had told Meng Wan that her Master, Chen Mingying, was still of this world.

If there was anyone whom Meng Wan was truly able to connect with in this world, there were two of them. One was Feng Yunsheng, the other being Chen Mingying.

Meng Wan was only truly her most authentic self in front of them.

Now that she had a chance to return to the Eight Extremities World, Meng Wan would naturally go visit her Master whom she missed.

Yan Zhaoge came to the foot of Water Ridge Peak and opened the sealed wound of the sky, striding within.

# HSSB 1071: Thoughts regarding the Sacred Sun Clan?

---

Yan Zhaoge passed through the wound of the sky, the spatial boundaries illusory before him as the very heavens and earth changed.

In returning to the Eight Extremities World, he was suddenly obstructed.

Yan Zhaoge had left the high-grade Sacred Artifacts other than the Extreme Yang Seal in the World beyond Worlds.

However, the Dim Radiant Wheel could not be tolerated by this lower world too.

Were it a fully completed Immortal Artifact, it would be able to adjust its own power so that it could descend into the lower world, which it had been able to when there had only been one slot emitting light and it had still been weak previously.

Now, however, as nine slots flickered with light, the Dim Radiant Wheel was rejected by the heavens and earth of the Eight Extremities World.

Seeing this, Yan Zhaoge could only roll his eyes, leaving the Dim Radiant Wheel in the World beyond Worlds.

Over in the Eight Extremities World, this wound of the sky was located in the sky above where the Sacred Sun Clan's World Illuminating Peak had formerly stood.

Descending into the Eight Extremities World, Yan Zhaoge felt that the spiritual qi flow there was extremely familiar and as it had always been before.

With his current cultivation base, even though he was being suppressed by the power of dimensions, he could still vaguely sense the spiritual qi flow and fluctuations of the entire world.



As compared to in the past, the spiritual qi was even more abundant in the current Eight Extremities World and better suited for martial practitioners to cultivate with.

This was all thanks to Broad Creed Mountain.

After having gained stable footing in the World beyond Worlds, Broad Creed Mountain had begun collecting some treasures which they had sent to the Eight Extremities World. With the Heaven Domain as the centre, they had unceasingly influenced the earth veins and gradually evoked relatively sizeable though subtle changes within.

While it might not be all that evident now, the effects would only improve as time passed.

While there would ultimately be a limit to such an improvement as it would be incomparable to the World beyond Worlds no matter what, this was inevitably some great fortune for those of the Eight Extremities World.

From what Yan Zhaoge knew, those original few Martial Saints of the Eight Extremities World had all improved without exception over the past few years as many outstanding new experts had appeared too.

Although Yan Zhaoge was probably younger than many of these people, when placed before him, they could really only be considered newcomers to the cultivation world.

There were already people waiting for Yan Zhaoge at the location where the Sacred Sun Clan had formerly stood.

One was a late Merging Avatar Martial Saint, the other being a Transcending Mortality Martial Grandmaster.

The former was the current First Seat Elder of Broad Creed Mountain's Disciplinary Hall in the World beyond Worlds, Xu Fei.

He was already at the peak of the Merging Avatar stage and only a step away from breaking through space and seeing true Divinity.

In terms of age, he was comparable to the late Phoenix Prince Zhuang Chaohui.

One had to consider Xu Fei's starting point as well as the fact that only having come to the superior environment of the World beyond Worlds to cultivate in recent years, there was much potential in him that had still yet to be excavated.

While he was not like Yan Zhaoge who had all eyes on him in the World beyond Worlds, Xue Fei had already risen to prominence there too.

Having received a notification from Fang Zhun earlier, Xu Fei had descended to the Eight Extremities World specifically to help make the relevant arrangements.

The other person there was the current Chief of Broad Creed Mountain in the Eight Extremities World, Feng Chi.

Feng Chi and Yan Di had been inseparable friends back in their youth as they had entered Broad Creed Mountain to learn martial arts together.

While the current gap in their cultivation bases was immense, Feng Chu had always been a milder, composed person as he did not feel any out of sorts because of this.

Feng Chi had also been amongst those Yuan Zhengfeng and the others had decided should head to the World beyond Worlds initially.

Still, they had considered afterwards that they required a capable person to manage things back in the Eight Extremities World.

Because of the authority of Broad Creed Mountain in the World beyond Worlds, no one in the Eight Extremities World dared to encroach on the Heaven Domain.

Therefore, they would not require pure strength for intimidation. They simply needed someone who was capable of competently overseeing things there.

In the end, Feng Chi had stayed behind, even having taken over the mantle at the head of the Eight Extremities World's Broad Creed Mountain.

His son, Feng Moyang, had already headed to the World beyond Worlds as he formed part of the important cornerstones for Broad Creed Mountain there like Xu Fei, Sikong Qing and Ying Longtu.

“Senior apprentice-uncle Feng, senior apprentice-brother Xu,” Yan Zhaoge greeted the two.

Feng Chi and Xu Fei both nodded to him, “Has the Brocade Emperor already descended?”

Yan Zhaoge said, “He should have arrived before me. I am heading to Turbid Wave Pavilion now.”

The size of the Eight Extremities World was already too small for the current Yan Zhaoge.

What had once been a long distance could be traversed in the blink of an eye now as the endless horizon zoomed by.

Yan Zhaoge had once visited the headquarters of Turbid Wave Pavilion before. As he visited it again now, while the scenery was still the same, everything had long since changed from how it had been before.

The previous Pavilion Lord An Qinglin had successfully advanced to the second level of the Martial Saint realm in recent years. She had passed her seat down to her disciple and focused simply on cultivating in peace.

As the Radiant Light Sect had been completely destroyed and Broad Creed Mountain had come to gain stable footing in the World beyond Worlds, the Eight Extremities World was already one where Broad Creed Mountain fully reigned supreme now.

Although the other major powers still had their autonomy, their relationship with Broad Creed Mountain had been continually changing.

As Broad Creed Mountain's status had become increasingly transcendent, the attitudes of the other major powers had gradually begun to change as they became subordinate to Broad Creed Mountain.

The conflicts existing between them were more to see who would be superior beneath Broad Creed Mountain's ultimate reign.

Turbid Wave Pavilion could be said to be in rather an advantageous position here.

Having already been notified by Feng Chi previously, An Qinglin and the current Lord of Turbid Wave Pavilion came out to greet them along with many of their Elders.

Seeing Yan Zhaoge, they all respectfully paid their respects to him.

Any feelings they once had had already long since dwindled into nothingness by now as only respect remained as they saw Yan Zhaoge at this moment.

"No need to stand on ceremony," Yan Zhaoge had not the time to care about formalities as he cut to the chase, "Senior apprentice-uncle Feng has probably already contacted you regarding this matter. I wonder where Fellow Daoist Chen, Chen Mingying currently is?"

An Qinglin answered, "Junior apprentice-niece Chen is currently in the Pavilion. No one has come to look for her, though."

Yan Zhaoge shook his head, "That person's cultivation base is too high as somebody who has already pushed open the door to Immortality. Here in the Eight Extremities World, he is not suppressed by the power of dimensions. There is probably no one at all who can detect his coming and goings."

Now that his cultivation base was suppressed to that of a third level Martial Saint, even Yan Zhaoge was currently hard pressed to rely on his senses to confirm if the Brocade Emperor had indeed

arrived.

Nevertheless, he believed that the Brocade Emperor Fu Yunchi had already arrived for sure.

Therefore, he said, “This Yan must still bother you to lead the way to Fellow Daoist Chen’s lodgings.”

An Qinglin spoke no further as she immediately led the way.

They arrived outside a small courtyard. Before even entering, they could already hear the voices of people as they conversed within.

Those of Turbid Wave Pavilion could not help but exchange looks.

Yan Zhaoge’s expression was as per usual as he raised his hand to call for the others to stop before walking over himself.

The door of the small courtyard was partially closed as gazing within, one could vaguely see that a few people were currently seated in front of a residence and beneath a massive maidenhair tree.

One of them currently seemed mild and composed, but was always the one who would first be noticed.

Snow white clothes and a red outer robe, handsome looks, transcendental grace and bearing.

This could be none other than the Brocade Emperor, Fu Yunchi.

Across from him sat a middle-aged woman.

Yan Zhaoge recognised her as Meng Wan’s former Master in the Sacred Sun Clan, Chen Mingying.

Meng Wan was seated quietly in a lower seat than the two.

Now, the Brocade Emperor’s deep, pleasant voice resounded, “Do you have any thoughts regarding the Sacred Sun Clan that you hailed from?”

# HSSB 1072: Feng Yunsheng's whereabouts

---

Hearing the Brocade Emperor's words, Yan Zhaoge curled his lips.

His previous worries had indeed not been unfounded.

If the Brocade Emperor were really to stand up for the Sacred Sun Clan and take revenge against Broad Creed Mountain, they would immediately be facing a great tribulation no inferior to when previously facing off against the Heaven Emperor in their opening ceremony in the World beyond Worlds.

More accurately, it would be a massive tribulation that was even more perilous than that.

The Heaven Emperor had no Immortal Artifact, but the Brocade Emperor did.

Even if the Brocade Emperor considered his status and did not use weapons, things would still be worse than back then.

Yan Zhaoge and Broad Creed Mountain had prepared for many years beforehand to be able to deal with the Heaven Emperor during their opening ceremony.

Even if the Female Emperor, Nie Jingshen and Bai Tao had not arrived, Yan Zhaoge would still have had the Later Earth Text to rely on.

Yet, if the Brocade Emperor were to find trouble for them now, it would not be of any use against him.

Still, Meng Wan did not reply immediately on hearing the Brocade Emperor's question.

She turned to look at Chen Mingying.

As compared to her father who had suddenly appeared before her and her mother who had already long since died and whom she had no memories of, Meng Wan was only truly close to her

cherished Master, Chen Mingying, who had nurtured her and taught her ever since young.

Meanwhile, Chen Mingying also treated Meng Wan like her own daughter.

There was probably no one in this world who understood Meng Wan better than she did.

Therefore, from Meng Wan's gaze, Chen Mingying knew that she had already come to a conclusion regarding this matter, just that she valued her opinion and wished to hear it.

Over the years, Chen Mingying had gradually come to gain a strong sense of belonging after having joined Turbid Wave Pavilion.

She was not a diehard factionist in the first place. She would not have chosen to join Turbid Wave Pavilion after the fall of the Sacred Sun Clan otherwise.

So many years having passed, the shadow of the Sacred Sun Clan had become increasingly faint within her heart as it was more of nostalgia rather than hatred that she felt in her impressions.

Looking at Meng Wan, Chen Mingying asked gently, "Wan'er, you aren't willing to make things difficult for Muge, right?"

"Please, Master, while this disciple lost the Extreme Yin Crown in a battle with senior apprentice-sister Feng that year, I am true to my conscience when I say that I used my full strength back then," Meng Wan said calmly, "That battle drew it all to a close."

"It was also thanks to senior apprentice-sister Feng that this disciple learned that you, Master, are still of this world, also learning that you are at Turbid Wave Pavilion as only then was I able to meet you again today."

"This disciple does not wish to compete with Broad Creed Mountain anymore."

Chen Mingying nodded slowly, “Your father was asking for your opinion, Wan’er. Your Master will respect your decision, whatever it may be.”

Meng Wan said, “This disciple thanks Master for your understanding.”

She turned to look at the Brocade Emperor, “The Sacred Sun Clan is already a thing of the past to your daughter. Yet, it was ultimately where I originated from. I do find it sad that it has vanished.”

“I hope that father will be able to lend a helping hand and arrange for the Sacred Sun Clan to be reopened in the World beyond Worlds, continuing its lineage.”

She was only mentioning the World beyond Worlds and not the Eight Extremities World because she wished for a permanent end to be put to the former enmity between the Sacred Sun Clan and Broad Creed Mountain.

“In the World beyond Worlds, there is a senior apprentice-brother Tang, Tang Yonghao, who was also formerly of the Sacred Sun Clan. I heard you mention that he has entered the Southeastern Exalt’s lineage, Master,” Meng Wan said, “While conversing with him that year, he expressed a desire to extend the lineage of the Sacred Sun Clan and revive it. With father’s support, there naturally would be no obstacle to this.”

The newly established Sacred Sun Clan in the World beyond Worlds would also be close with Golden Court Mountain as it would not be likely at all for a conflict to arise between them and Broad Creed Mountain.

The Brocade Emperor nodded warmly, “That is naturally not a problem.”

Meng Wan looked at Chen Mingying, “Would Master be willing to head to the World beyond Worlds?”



“I will not be going,” Chen Mingying smiled, shaking her head, “Your Master is a member of Turbid Wave Pavilion now.”

Meng Wan gently held her Master’s hands.

The Brocade Emperor smiled, “I remember you mentioning before, Wan’er, that besides your Master, there was also a senior apprentice-sister you were closest to in your younger years?”

“Why is it that from your earlier conversation, she seems to be a Broad Creed Mountain disciple?”

Meng Wan realised, “Oh, I did not explain this to father clearly before. Senior apprentice-sister Feng was indeed my senior apprentice-sister from the Sacred Sun Clan. Still, because of oppression within the clan, she fled and eventually joined Broad Creed Mountain.”

The Brocade Emperor thought about it, “Is it that female disciple of Broad Creed Mountain who wields the Extreme Yin Crown, the one who is called Feng Yunsheng?”

Meng Wan nodded, “That’s right. Senior apprentice-sister Feng was originally called Feng Muge. After leaving the Sacred Sun Clan, she changed her name to Feng Yunsheng.”

She turned and glanced at Chen Mingying, “Besides Master, I really miss senior apprentice-sister Feng too, just that I wonder where she is now.”

“For that, we would have to ask somebody from Broad Creed Mountain,” The Brocade Emperor smiled, gazing at the courtyard outside.

Meng Wan and Chen Mingying were both taken aback by this as they turned and followed the Brocade Emperor’s gaze, only now seeing Yan Zhaoge.

They were probably even more familiar with Yan Zhaoge’s appearance somewhat than the Brocade Emperor was.

On seeing Yan Zhaoge, they were both slightly startled but quickly regained their calm.

“Before the Fallen Deity, Turbid Wave Pavilion’s Chen Mingying expresses greetings,” Chen Mingying stood up and calmly bowed towards Yan Zhaoge.

As news was spread by the Eight Extremities World’s Broad Creed Mountain martial practitioners, Yan Zhaoge’s numerous grand feats in the World beyond Worlds had already long since spread throughout the Eight Extremities World.

The name of Fallen Deity resounded fully throughout the entire world.

Meng Wan too rose and greeted Yan Zhaoge, “Senior Brother Yan.”

Yan Zhaoge met the Brocade Emperor’s gaze, his expression as per usual, “The Eight Extremities World is incomparably honoured at the Brocade Emperor’s venerated descent.”

He nodded at Meng Wan and Chen Mingying, “Greetings, you two.”

Meng Wan said, “Senior apprentice-brother Tang has an extremely good impression of Senior Brother Yan, having always looked up to you greatly. If the Sacred Sun Clan can be reestablished within the World beyond Worlds, he hopes that Senior Brother Yan can disregard what happened before.”

Yan Zhaoge said mildly, “I have always been able to distinguish friend from enemy very clearly.”

“Senior Brother Yan, I wonder how senior apprentice-sister Feng is doing now?” Meng Wan hesitated for a while before asking frankly, “I wonder if I could meet her?”

Yan Zhaoge shook his head, “Of course you can meet her, as long as she is willing. I would not interfere in that, and Yunsheng would certainly never avoid you. She has constantly missed you following

your being spirited away by Zhuang Chaohui.”

“After Southern Zhuang died at my Broad Creed Mountain, my father and fellow disciples of Broad Creed Mountain have been going westward in launching a conquest of the southern Blazing Heaven Territory. I also asked my father before to ask for you back from those of Phoenix Ritual Mountain’s Wutong Slope, bringing you back home such that you can reunite with Yunsheng upon her return.”

“It is just that some things which happened afterwards were definitely somewhat unexpected.”

Hearing Yan Zhaoge’s words and noting what he was essentially saying, Meng Wan asked, “Senior apprentice-sister Feng is presently not at Broad Creed Mountain?”

“It is not just you who cannot see her from the time being. Even I am unable to,” Yan Zhaoge forced a smile, “It has already been several years since we temporarily lost contact with her when she was out adventuring in the outside world.”

“The final piece of news left behind by her is that she had left for extradimensional space as that ‘door’ which was open would only reopen at least another decade later.”

Yan Zhaoge said candidly, “It is still some time before that happens. Let alone she coming back herself, it would be difficult even for me to go look for her.”

A disappointed look appeared within Meng Wan’s eyes, but she still nodded calmly, “In that case, there is really nothing that can be done about that.”

A smile appeared on her face, “That indeed sounds like the senior apprentice-sister Feng that I know of.”

“Exactly, right,” Yan Zhaoge spread his palms apart.

The Brocade Emperor suddenly asked, “Little Friend Yan, where is this ‘door’ that you speak of?”

# HSSB 1073: True problem

---

Hearing the Brocade Emperor's question, Yan Zhaoge was rather taken aback as he had not expected that the Emperor would continue asking about this.

Had he set his eyes on the Extreme Yin Crown or could he have something else in mind?

Numerous thoughts flashed through Yan Zhaoge's mind.

He really had no choice but to consider more possibilities here when faced with this unpredictable True Immortal who might do something unexpected at any moment.

He did not let any of this show on his face, however, "In the Extreme Northern Lands of the northern Profound Heaven Territory."

"The Extreme Northern Lands..." The Brocade Emperor nodded, considering this for a moment, "The spatial boundaries there are more unstable than elsewhere. From time to time, several dimensional passageways will open which lead to extradimensional space."

"Still, some of them could be connected to the Nine Underworlds."

While the Brocade Emperor had spoken calmly, his words were no different from shocking thunder.

Meng Wan and Chen Mingying were aware of what these words entailed as well.

Yan Zhaoge's pupils dilated abruptly, "Even the Northern Exalt does not know of this?"

"He knows, but he is unable to confirm which of these dimensional passageways may be connected to the Nine Underworlds," The Brocade Emperor answered mildly, "Of course,

he would also not be able to know if the dimensional passageway that your fellow disciple entered is problematic or not.”

“While connections may be established between them, the World beyond Worlds is protected as the Nine Underworlds cannot encroach on it. Northern Guan who watches over the northern Profound Heaven Territory does indeed have the responsibility of guarding it. Still, it is only in the worst-case scenario where all hell breaks loose.”

Hearing his words, Yan Zhaoge and Meng Wan instantly felt worried.

Still, the Brocade Emperor then looked at Meng Wan, saying warmly, “No need to worry. Father will take you to the north and try to look for her.”

A joyful look appeared on Meng Wan’s face, “Father can locate senior apprentice-sister Feng?”

“If we know where the ‘door’ which she left through at the time is located, father can cause it to open prematurely. Next, we can enter the dimensional passageway together in a bid to find her,” The Brocade Emperor said, “Still, extradimensional space is boundless at the end of the day. We would need some luck to find her who entered it several years ago.”

Meng Wan sighed in relief, “It is already great that there is a chance of locating her.”

Yan Zhaoge lowered his eyelids beside them as he remained silent.

As he looked at that warm, benevolent and loving Brocade Emperor, he could actually vaguely sense a hint of coldness from him!

Simply from the Brocade Emperor’s actions at the Star Reflecting Lake of the World beyond Worlds’ southern Blazing Heaven Territory alone, one would already know that this Emperor was

definitely not like this ‘good father’ image that he was portraying now.

He had moved the remains of his deceased lover and doted on his long-lost daughter to the point that he would satisfy all her demands.

Yan Zhaoge was incomparably certain that had Meng Wan said that she wished to rebuild the Sacred Sun Clan and seek vengeance from Broad Creed Mountain earlier, the Brocade Emperor would have engaged in a battle with Broad Creed Mountain without any hesitation whatsoever.

Still, this formed a contradiction with his actions back at Star Reflecting Lake.

“It is probably the case that a victor is gradually being decided between his feeling and unfeeling sides.”

Yan Zhaoge’s expression was as per usual as he glanced at the Brocade Emperor again, thinking, “From the way things are going, it looks like it is the unfeeling side that has gradually gained the upper hand!”

Even as his two consciousnesses were resisting each other, the Brocade Emperor himself was clear on his own problem.

There were not many solutions to this.

One of them was walking the path of feeling and forgetting his feelings again. Still, because of Fu Ting and Meng Wan, this path seemed to be wholly impeded as hope was bleak, the road ahead uncertain.

The other path was letting his unfeeling side fully reign supreme!

This path looked like a much simpler one.

Exterminating both Fu Ting and Meng Wan was the way out of his predicament!

Not only would it solve his current problem, the Brocade

Emperor's cultivation base might even advance as a result.

While he would likely be unable to break through to the next cultivation stage, it would be sufficient to push him to the peak of the True Immortal stage!

The Brocade Emperor's unfeeling side only calculated cost and benefit, whether something was rational or not.

As compared to the first, risky path for which no clues existed whatsoever, the second path appeared much more ideal.

There was no need to hesitate in making a choice whatsoever.

Still, his feeling side would naturally reject the second path.

It was just that Yan Zhaoge currently guessed that it was probably the unfeeling side which was gradually coming to seize the dominant position in the Brocade Emperor's split, fragmented mind.

The warm, friendly manner that he was currently displaying was more like the futile struggles of his feeling side.

Beneath the warmth and benevolence was concealed an icy cold killing intent!

This killing intent was not just directed towards Meng Wan before him as it was also directed towards Fu Ting who was still far away at Ingenious Flying Peak's Red Lotus Cliff.

The Brocade Emperor was trying to recompense his two daughters whom he loved the best he could. Still, the more benevolent he appeared now, the closer he was approaching the dreaded, unforgiving cliff behind him!

"This really is..." Yan Zhaoge narrowed his eyes into slits as his gaze flickered slightly.

As he saw it, it was best if the Brocade Emperor's condition quickly stabilised, whether it was his feeling or unfeeling side that came out on top.

The state that he was currently in was actually the worst.

He was at his least stable and most unpredictable as no one at all could know what he might do.

The name of the Immeasurable Heavenly Lord that had suddenly been leaked atop Star Reflecting Lake was merely the beginning.

To some extent, it could be said that even the Brocade Emperor himself would probably not be able to ascertain what he might do the very next moment.

Really, one had to be afraid of even themselves when they had gone crazy.

Therefore, be it his feeling or unfeeling side, once it was decided upon, while his actions would still not be easy to predict, they would become structured at the very least as it would become possible to interact normally with and guard against him.

It would be unlike how it was now as he seemed perfectly normal yet might suddenly do something crazy at any moment.

As for whether Yan Zhaoge preferred a Brocade Emperor who was feeling or unfeeling, from an objective, bystander's point of view, Yan Zhaoge preferred that it would be an unfeeling one.

While absolute rationality might sound cold and terrifying, Yan Zhaoge felt that it was easier to predict the thoughts and actions of such people.

Of course, such people would virtually display no subjective errors of judgments towards their enemies it would be very difficult to influence their thoughts.

Still, such people would only calculate gains and losses as opposed to being overly emotional. Actually, it was very difficult to form enmity with them.

This would only still happen if one impeded their path forward.

After all, someone being unfeeling did not mean that they had no



desires.

Now, Yan Zhaoge's heart suddenly jolted slightly as he vaguely seemed to think of something.

His comprehension of the supreme martial arts of the Grand Clear lineage had been deepening increasingly over the years.

One at the head and one at the end, Grand Simplicity, Taiyi, and Grand Ultimate, Taiji, were both miraculous and extraordinary.

He could vaguely see some traces of the Brocade Emperor's future path.

If the Brocade Emperor did not walk the unfeeling path and instead walked the feeling path, his path forward might be blocked for good.

Yan Zhaoge currently had no suitable solution for this.

Getting rid of Fu Ting and Meng Wan and causing the Brocade Emperor to be walking wholly on that unfeeling path might even cause his current cultivation base to advance further.

Still, it would only remedy his earlier flaw as the problem would ultimately still affect him.

It would likely cause him to be impeded at the peak of the True Immortal stage and hard pressed to continue advancing further.

If he wanted to advance, he would have to look for some unique stroke of fortune.

This stroke of fortune rested upon the foundation of the entire set of the earlier heaven Grand Cosmos Five Manifestations.

The problem was that it would be fine if he only needed the Taiyi Fist of Grand Simplicity. Still, if he needed the Grand Simplicity Splendour Cloud, it would spell a very serious problem then.

The Grand Simplicity Splendour Cloud was presently one with Yan Di as they lived and fell together.

It would be fine if he lent it temporarily to others or shared it with them for their reference.

Yet, if the other party wanted to completely refine the Grand Simplicity Splendour Cloud, that would entail severing the connection between it and Yan Di.

Yan Di would have to die for that to happen.

As compared to the potential conflict brought about by Meng Wan and the Sacred Sun Clan, this was the true problem that might exist.

# HSSB 1074: Fulfilling another's wishes

---

Yan Zhaoge secretly frowned, sighing inwardly.

Whether the Brocade Emperor would be at conflict with him after walking the unfeeling path or not, he would feel rather despondent if he had to helplessly watch as Fu Ting and Meng Wan were killed just like that.

Meng Wan was Feng Yunsheng's best friend.

Fu Ting was also a rather good friend of Yan Zhaoge's in the World beyond Worlds as they had once braved and survived perils together.

If the Brocade Emperor were to walk the unfeeling path, they would have to die for sure.

Another thing that Yan Zhaoge had to be concerned about was how the others of the World beyond Worlds' Three Sovereigns and Five Emperors might see the current Brocade Emperor.

They would naturally not resort to extreme measures unless there was really no other choice.

It was more possible that they would assist the Brocade Emperor in recovering, even advancing his cultivation base.

If the Brocade Emperor could achieve a breakthrough to the next cultivation stage, there would be no need for him to fear the Sword Sovereign's retaliation.

This could cause a divisive split in the World beyond Worlds as the Earthly Sovereign and Concealed Sovereign would not agree to it unless the situation was already irreparable.

Still, Yan Zhaoge who never feared imagining the worst possible scenario brought about by the worst in people could not but think about a problem.

Because of him and his mother Xue Chuqing, a split was destined

to arise between the Sword Sovereign and the Earthly Sovereign.

Under such circumstances, might the Earthly Sovereign be happy to see a new Sovereign rising up to replace the Sword Sovereign?

Alongside the resurgence of Daoism, its peak experts were all extremely valuable indeed.

Still, if they really could not exist together like water and fire, the differences between them would probably ultimately still have to be settled in the end.

The crucial thing here was how great the split between the Earthly Sovereign and the Sword Sovereign was and what the Concealed Sovereign who had always tacitly supported the Earthly Sovereign from behind the scenes might think of the matter this time.

The Earthly Sovereign and the Sword Sovereign were both amidst extradimensional space and yet to return as the Concealed Sovereign was left in charge of the World beyond Worlds, with the authority to decide on things there.

Many thoughts flashed through Yan Zhaoge's mind as he unceasingly considered what might occur.

Despite his considerations, Yan Zhaoge showed no sign of it on the surface, "Right, the Upper Exalt seemed to have left alongside you. I wonder if he has descended into the Eight Extremities World?"

Chen Qianhua was the number one Martial Saint and the strongest Exalt.

His strength was very likely sufficient for him to battle against Emperors.

Still, as long as he remained in the Human Exalt stage, having yet to push open the door to Immortality and permanently remove the 'human' from Human Immortal, there were still many rules he would have to abide by.

In a lower world, even a Human Exalt would be suppressed to the third level of the Martial Saint realm.

Back in the World beyond Worlds, he had been a tenth level Martial Saint while Yan Zhaoge had been a seventh level Martial Saint. Thus, Yan Zhaoge had been hard pressed to detect his presence even with his strength.

Now that both of them were at the third level of the Martial Saint realm, however, Yan Zhaoge was sufficiently confident of locating him with a single glance if he was in the vicinity of Turbid Wave Pavilion.

As there was no trace of him near Turbid Wave Pavilion at this moment, the distance between them being too great, Yan Zhaoge could not confirm whether he had come to the Eight Extremities World.

His current spiritual sense was sufficient to encompass the entire world as he located other Martial Saints.

However, if he was looking for Chen Qianhua and the distance between them was too great, there would then be some difficulty in doing so.

“Chen Qianhua did follow us down. Still, he did not continue following us afterwards,” Finding a third level Martial Saint in the Eight Extremities World was naturally as easy as breathing for the Brocade Emperor, “He is currently in that direction.”

Gazing where the Brocade Emperor was looking, Yan Zhaoge raised his brows lightly, “The Earth Domain?”

He pondered for a moment before looking at the Brocade Emperor, “To be honest, Yunsheng is none other than this Yan’s wife. I miss her greatly as she has not returned for many years after venturing outside for adventuring, hoping that we can soon be reunited. Now that the Brocade Emperor is willing to assist in looking for her, I wonder if I can travel alongside you?”

Chen Mingying was rather taken aback whereas Meng Wan lowered her head and smiled, "Senior apprentice-sister Feng has found a good husband."

The Brocade Emperor had no problem with that as he smiled, "I am familiar with the feeling of being separated from my lover. Since Little Friend Yan wishes for such, I am naturally fine with you coming along with us. If we can find that Little Friend Feng and you reunite, that would really be a cause for celebration indeed."

"Thank you for your blessings, Brocade Emperor," Yan Zhaoge said, "With the Upper Exalt having come to the Eight Extremities World, it would surely be rude if we as hosts do not receive him. I would like for the Brocade Emperor to wait a moment as I go meet the Upper Exalt. I will return shortly."

"I also hope that the Brocade Emperor can visit my Broad Creed Mountain as a guest if it is okay."

The Brocade Emperor shook his head, "No problem. Just go meet with Chen Qianhua. I will wait with Wan'er here for some time longer. As she has not seen her Master in many years, they should really talk for a bit longer."

Yan Zhaoge cupped his hands, "I will take my leave then."

He looked at Meng Wan who smiled, her gaze intelligent as always as no abnormalities could be seen within it at all.

Yan Zhaoge smiled back at her, not saying anything as he left the residence.

On seeing An Qingling and the others who were waiting outside, Yan Zhaoge said, "This Yan will be back in a jiffy. Please do not disturb them and allow them to carry on with their conversation."

Those of Turbid Wave Pavilion nodded, still feeling rather overwhelmed by what had happened.

If not for Yan Zhaoge's reminder, they would not have known at

all that the Brocade Emperor had already long since entered along with Meng Wan.

“Senior Sister Xie, senior apprentice-brother Xu has descended to the Eight Extremities World too. While today’s matter is a major one, after it is over, you can go to meet with him,” Yan Zhaoge said to a female Elder of Turbid Wave Pavilion who had ordinary features yet possessed a surging valiant air about her.

This female Elder was none other than Xie Youchan who had also already long since attained the Martial Grandmaster realm by now.

While the distance between she and Xu Fei was rather great, she could be considered extremely young relative to her cultivation base as there was still potential that could be excavated.

She had refused Broad Creed Mountain’s proposal to assist her in heading to the World beyond Worlds, being adamant on ascending to the World beyond Worlds with her own strength one day.

Still, Xie Youchan had always been on good terms with those of Broad Creed Mountain as she was an old acquaintance of Yan Zhaoge’s.

Hearing Yan Zhaoge’s words, she smiled, replying, “First official and then private matters. This is as it should be.”

Yan Zhaoge nodded and departed alone from Turbid Wave Pavilion, heading northwest towards the Earth Domain.

Outside of Turbid Wave Pavilion, a tall man towered like a mountain peak amidst the sky. This was none other than Xu Fei.

While his lover, Xie Youchan, was currently at Turbid Wave Pavilion, he was waiting quietly here without the intention of heading into Turbid Wave Pavilion.

On seeing him, Yan Zhaoge immediately said, “Senior apprentice-brother Xu, send a message to my father in the World beyond Worlds right away.”

After hearing Yan Zhaoge's guess regarding the cultivation path of the Brocade Emperor and the Grand Simplicity Splendour Cloud, Xu Fei instantly knit his brows, "I will get on it immediately."

"Send a message to Ingenious Flying Peak's Red Lotus Cliff as well," Yan Zhaoge said after pondering slightly for a moment, "There is no need to make it too obvious, though. Just hint at it a little."

At the end of the day, the crisis that Fu Ting and Meng Wan were facing was just Yan Zhaoge's own guess at the end of the day.

They were ultimately still father and daughters.

Still, Ingenious Flying Peak was of the Grand Clear direct lineage at the end of the day as they would definitely have some knowledge regarding the cultivation of the Brocade Emperor.

Consolidating the clues at hand, they would have some guesses too.

Xu Fei nodded, not wasting time on words as he turned and rushed towards the wound of the sky at where the Sacred Sun Clan had formerly stood in the Fire Domain.

Yan Zhaoge exhaled slowly, heading towards the Earth Domain.

While his understanding of Chen Qianhua's personality was limited, Yan Zhaoge was instinctively rather wary of him.

While he had clearly come to the Eight Extremities World to join in the 'fun' regarding the Brocade Emperor, he had left the Brocade Emperor partway through and gone to the Earth Domain. This was something Yan Zhaoge definitely could not ignore.

The Earth Domain possessed special significance with regard to the Eight Extremities World.

After entering the Earth Domain, Yan Zhaoge descended into the deep valley down below.



Partway through his descent, he saw a purple-clothed youth who was in the midst of slowly rising upwards.

# HSSB1075: Fallen Deity VS Heavenly Young Master

---

While he could be considered to have handsome features, his lethargic, bored appearance stripped him completely of all and any grace.

Garbed in those purple clothes, the youth's skin appeared even paler.

Still, as long as he appeared there, it was sufficient to cause most people everywhere to raise their guard.

This was none other than the Upper Exalt Chen Qianhua.

He raised his head and saw Yan Zhaoge too.

Chen Qianhua's uninterested eyes instantly lit up as he gazed at Yan Zhaoge through the corner of his eye, appraising him as a superior would an inferior.

The first thing he said was, "This inconspicuous-looking lower world is actually rather intriguing. No wonder it could produce such an interesting person as you."

"Oh?" Yan Zhaoge's gaze flickered as he noted Chen Qianhua's perplexing use of words, "The Upper Exalt's words really leave this Yan at a loss."

Chen Qianhua smiled, "Stop feigning ignorance."

Yan Zhaoge said mildly, "The encroachment of the Nine Underworlds can happen to any world."

"If the Eight Extremities World really has unique aspects, it would probably be that there are traces of both the Exalted Solar Luminary and the Exalted Lunar Luminary here?"

Chen Qianhua extended a finger, lightly wagging it, "It is not just them who left behind traces here."

Yan Zhaoge shrugged, “Right, there’s also you and the Brocade Emperor now.”

“The way I see it, it is not the Exalted Solar Luminary, the Exalted Lunar Luminary or anyone who is most worthy of me paying attention to. Instead, it is...” Chen Qianhua paused for dramatic effect.

He stopped wagging his finger and pointed it at Yan Zhaoge, “That person is you.”

Yan Zhaoge smiled nonchalantly, “I will take that as a compliment. Thank you then.”

Facing Yan Zhaoge’s shamelessness, Chen Qianhua instead smiled too, “Very interesting indeed.”

“Is your main benchmark for evaluating people ‘interesting’ and ‘boring’?” Yan Zhaoge retorted.

Chen Qianhua asked lazily, “Or else? ‘Clever’ and ‘stupid’? ‘Immature’ and ‘mature’? ‘Benevolent’ and ‘cruel’?”

“There can be countless examples of these. Still, so what? Clever people can do stupid things as benevolent people are sometimes the cruellest too.”

“As I see it, the distinction between people is that a small minority can bring me some pleasant surprises while most would be unable to do so throughout their entire lives.”

“The former are the interesting ones, while all those who remain are the uninteresting ones.”

Chen Qianhua yawned, “There are no exceptions to this rule.”

Yan Zhaoge wondered, “Has no one ever told you that the way you operate is very boring too?”

“Haha...” Chen Qianhua smiled on hearing his words as he asked rather than answered, “What do you think should be done with the Brocade Emperor now?”

“There is no need to feign ignorance on this, right? Everyone can tell that cultivation deviation has befallen him.”

Chen Qianhua said lazily, “Or rather, he has gone crazy.”

“Perhaps the Brocade Emperor has indeed suffered the fate of cultivation deviation. Still, from my interactions with him, I know he has not lost his sanity,” Yan Zhaoge spoke in a neutral tone devoid of feeling, “The Heaven Emperor knows his situation best. What will be done can only be decided by he himself, mainly.”

“Otherwise, amongst the Three Sovereigns and Five Emperors, the Concealed Sovereign, the Female Emperor and the Heaven Emperor are all still in the World beyond Worlds.”

Chen Qianhua laughed, “Yes, he has not gone crazy. It should be something like a split personality?”

He smiled as he extended his two hands, parting them towards the sides.

He first lifted his left hand, “One should be feeling or rather emotionally-driven.”

He then raised his right hand, “The other should be unfeeling or rather forgetful of emotion.”

Chen Qianhua brought his hands together before his chest, “The two should be fighting right now.”

While Yan Zhaoge’s expression did not change, he felt slightly wary within.

As he possessed a deep understanding of supreme martial arts of the Grand Clear direct lineage, he was able to basically deduce the Brocade Emperor’s current state.

Chen Qianhua had already guessed many things just from the incident at Star Reflecting Lake alone.

Or could it be that it was not merely a guess as he possessed a unique information channel too?

“If the Brocade Emperor makes the decision himself, he will most likely go by what can allow him to return to normal, allowing his cultivation base to continue advancing.”

Looking at Yan Zhaoge, Chen Qianhua smiled, “As for the Three Sovereigns and Five Emperors, they probably think the same way as well. As for whether the Brocade Emperor walks the feeling or unfeeling path in the end, it is not so important. Most important is that the mental illness is diminished and cured for good.”

“This is because they are hard pressed to predict the actions of the Brocade Emperor who is acting unpredictably now that he is afflicted with it.”

“This lot of people like having everything under their control. They hate things going beyond their predictions, hence becoming uncontrollable.”

Chen Qianhua glanced down at Yan Zhaoge through the corner of his eye, “In this aspect, you are the same kind of person as them.”

Yan Zhaoge gazed deeply at him, “So, what you mean to say is that you would rather the Brocade Emperor remain like this forever?”

“That’s right!” Chen Qianhua clapped, bursting out into laughter, “Always with the pleasant, unexpected surprises. Now that’s called interesting.”

Yan Zhaoge simply asked, “Since that is so, what are you doing coming here rather than just following the Brocade Emperor throughout?”

Chen Qianhua pointed at Yan Zhaoge, “Now that Brocade Fu has become much less boring, I certainly would not want him to disappear so quickly. So, I’m finding something for you lot to handle first so that you won’t be in such a rush to come making trouble.”

Yan Zhaoge asked calmly, “Aren’t you making plans too?”

According to what you said earlier, if your plans come to fruition and your goal is attained, wouldn't it instead be uninteresting, without any surprises whatsoever?"

"Oh, that. I am not making plans. I have planned for nothing, nor am I planning anything," Chen Qianhua waved a hand dismissively, "I am just adding an extra little thing to all your plans and seeing what will become of it."

"If things happen within my predictions, it seems like your plans would have become my plans as I would have overridden then. This is indeed a pretty uninteresting thing, but it can help me to pass time by at the very least."

"If things happen out of my predictions, it would naturally be a pleasant surprise, whatever the eventual outcome."

Chen Qianhua smiled, "Now that I am giving you a bit of a surprise, can you repay me with anything?"

As they spoke, the deep valley of the Earth Domain down below now quaked intensely.

The earthquake spread throughout the entirety of the Earth Domain.

Streaks of bloodred light transformed into terrifying spirit patterns that seemed about to rip the great earth apart as they expanded into the surroundings.

Where the roiling black fog passed, it actually began to devour the world outside of the Earth Domain.

Such a scene was undoubtedly the descent of an old nightmare for the martial practitioners of Broad Creed Mountain and the Eight Extremities World.

The terrifying Nine Underworlds was about to descend into the Eight Extremities World once more!

In having entered the depths of the deep abyss of the Earth

Domain earlier, Chen Qianhua had done so to destroy the seal down below.

Besides that, the disturbance caused by him had ripped apart the Great Nine Underworlds Door below the Earth Domain to become even more immense.

The Nine Underworlds' descent this time far, far surpassed that of the previous times in its momentum.

The terrifying devilish qi suffused not only the Earth Domain as it sought to devour the surrounding world as well.

The Eight Extremities World seemed about to be assimilated completely by the Nine Underworlds at this moment.

Yan Zhaoge, however, did not glance towards the deep abyss down below.

He suddenly strode forward, instantly arriving before Chen Qianhua!

“Is this a pleasant surprise?”

Amidst his words, his palm mightily slammed downwards!

# HSSB1076: Do whatever you want. If I change my technique, I lose

---

Yan Zhaoge obscured the heavens with a palm, his palm filling the sky.

He raised his palm before bringing it heavily downwards, his Cyclic Heavenly Seal truly possessing the momentum of collapsing the heavens.

Although his cultivation base was suppressed to the third level of the Martial Saint realm, this far surpassed the time when he had really been a third level Martial Saint in the past.

A lower world like the Eight Extremities World was already unable to bear the force of this palm of Yan Zhaoge's.

As he executed the Cyclic Heavenly Seal, apart from the lands that had been encroached on by the Nine Underworlds and the Lake Domain that the Brocade Emperor was currently in, the entire Eight Extremities World virtually seemed about to be overturned.

Yet, as the Earth Domain and Lake Domain were fixed in place and could not move, a distorted scene was distinctly formed everywhere else that was terrifying indeed.

“Woah! This is really quite the pleasant surprise!” Chen Qianhua's eyes lit up, “I still thought that you would hold back for fear of destroying this world.”

He no longer appeared listless and lackadaisical as he instead laughed loudly, “Yes, you are an interesting person indeed.”

Amidst his laughter, Chen Qianhua abruptly flipped his palm upwards, launching it in an upward motion.

“Still, if it is only the Cyclic Heavenly Seal, I would not consider it so much of a pleasant surprise.”



In the air above the Earth Domain, Yan Zhaoge's and Chen Qianhua's actions were virtually the same, just that one was striking downwards, the other striking upwards!

Cyclic Heavenly Seal versus Cyclic Heavenly Seal!

As the palms of the two met, the terrifying distortion of the World beyond Worlds' heavens and earth instead vanished.

Still, the force from the collision of their palms caused the surrounding space to collapse instantly.

"This place is not the World beyond Worlds," Yan Zhaoge said mildly, "I am not an early Immortal Bridge Martial Saint, and you are also not a Human Exalt."

Amidst their words, his palm continued pressuring downwards!

Chen Qianhua instantly felt as though the scenes in the surrounding world had changed.

Everything first became extremely huge before the distance between them and him increased unceasingly, with those things coming to appear tiny as a result.

However, the surrounding space was completely empty as only he himself remained.

It was not that the objects in the external world had turned big before moving far away from him.

Instead, he himself had seemingly shrunk at this moment!

He had been suppressed to the size of a mere speck of dust!

The spiritual qi of the surrounding heavens and earth all erupted at this moment, resembling the collapse of a mountain and the surging of a tsunami as they all crushed towards him together.

The terrifying momentum that enveloped the heavens and covered the earth caused him to feel like a grain of sand against the tides of the great sea as no matter how he tried to evade, he would still be devoured and shattered nevertheless.

Even though they both cultivated the Cyclic Heavenly Scripture, Yan Zhaoge was more proficient in this scripture than he was!

In the clash of Cyclic Heavenly Seal against Cyclic Heavenly Seal, Chen Qianhua suffered a complete defeat!

“After cultivating in the Cyclic Heavenly Scripture for a few years, you already have such attainments in it?” Chen Qianhua’s eyes shone, “Amazing!”

He moved his other hand forward as well, forming a seal with his fist.

As soon as this was formed, an incomparably heavy force manifested.

It was like the great earth that bore the weight of all things in this world as it was silent, sturdy, dense, vigorous, indestructible!

Yan Zhaoge raised his brows, “Earth Overturning Seal?”

The Earth Overturning Seal was a supreme martial art of the lineage of the Earth Queen of the Four Imperials of orthodox Daoism!

It had been lost for many years following the Great Calamity.

When contending under the same circumstances, the Earth Overturning Seal was naturally inferior to the Cyclic Heavenly Seal.

Still, this supreme martial art was precisely a peerless supreme martial art that the Earth Queen had previously created from combining her martial concepts with her insights from analysing the Cyclic Heavenly Scripture and Cyclic Heavenly Seal.

Chen Qianhua had combined the two seals into one at this moment, with his glorious fist-intent magnificent as the heavens and heavy as later earth as he forcibly blocked Yan Zhaoge’s Cyclic Heavenly Seal.

All things before him regained their original state, no longer

suppressed by Yan Zhaoge's fist-intent.

"I was originally going to tie you down with the Great Nine Underworlds Door below us so that I can better continue playing with the Brocade Emperor," Chen Qianhua smiled noncommittally, "Now that you are the one tying me down instead, it is also fine. I just wonder if you can still pay any attention to the Great Nine Underworlds Door down below?"

While they dared not be sure of it, both he and Yan Zhaoge had a premonition regarding this.

If it was the Brocade Emperor who had been in his right mind, he would definitely not sit back and do nothing as the Nine Underworlds encroached on the human realm.

With how unpredictable his thoughts currently were, it was very hard to ascertain what he might do.

It was not impossible that he might just leave directly with Meng Wan and perhaps Chen Mingying too.

"Just worry about yourself first," Yan Zhaoge said.

His palm that was looming over Chen Qianhua's hands mightily descended once more!

It was still a Cyclic Heavenly Seal, yet had already reached a whole new level.

As Yan Zhaoge exerted greater force with his palm, all existences amidst space in the surroundings began distorting as they were overturned.

Chen Qianhua felt as though his figure had become miniscule once more as a terrifying force which was infinite and endless simultaneously pressured down upon him from all directions amidst space.

Beneath this palm of Yan Zhaoge's, all things within the world actually vanished.

Time seemed to have flowed in reverse as the vast oceans and the wide fields circulated backwards.

Everything returned to its original state, all creation no longer existing as the boundaries between the heavens and earth had turned blurry.

Clear qi sunk, turbid qi rising!

The heavens and earth that had been split apart were about to recombine for good!

All things in the world seemed to have reversed to before the heavens and earth had been split apart.

The world of later heaven was forcibly reversed to the primordial world of earlier heaven!

Amidst the darkness of space, nothing could be seen at all as only the primordial twin qis of yin and yang intermingled.

Amidst the variations of the twin qis of yin and yang, they gradually vanished as only chaos was indistinctly visible.

Everything seemed to have returned to earlier heaven times as all was shapeless and without quality, without light and without darkness, silent and formless.

Even the magnificent earth of later heaven no longer existed!

“Returning to earlier heaven? Even a True Immortal might not be able to cause such a variation when executing the Cyclic Heavenly Seal,” A strange light was emitted from Chen Qianhua’s eyes,” You integrated the concepts of the Taiyi Fist and the Taiji Yin Yang Palm within the Cyclic Heavenly Seal?”

His figure suddenly shook, seemingly becoming transparent as it was formless and without quality.

In Yan Zhaoge’s senses, for just that one instant, Chen Qianhua seemed to have completely vanished, no longer existing within this world.

Of the earlier heaven Grand Cosmos Five Manifestations of the Grand Clear direct lineage, the Grand Beginning Bright Emptiness Form!

It had long since been rumoured in the World beyond Worlds that the Upper Exalt Chen Qianhua was proficient in countless supreme martial arts from both past and present times.

Otherwise, there would also not have been that incident of him enlightening eight sects in his youth.

Many in the World beyond Worlds knew that he cultivated in the Cyclic Heavenly Scripture of the Jade Clear direct lineage.

However, besides the Cyclic Heavenly Scripture, he also cultivated in the Earth Overturning Seal of the direct lineage of the Earth Queen.

More unexpected with that he was, shockingly, also proficient in a supreme martial art of the Grand Clear direct lineage!

Still, while the Grand Beginning Bright Emptiness Form had both offensive and defensive capabilities and possessed remarkable profundities, faced with Yan Zhaoge's Cyclic Heavenly Seal which had the fist-intent of Grand Simplicity from the Taiyi Fist integrated within, Chen Qianhua was still unable to bear it as it caused a return to earlier heaven times.

The majestic strength did not even require a forceful attack as it had already caused Chen Qianhua's concept of Grand Beginning to dissipate into formlessness!

Beneath that palm, whether it was Grand Beginning or Grand Commencement, all would return to Grand Simplicity, becoming nothingness once more!

Still, Chen Qianhua had not naively thought that he would be able to receive this technique of Yan Zhaoge's with just the Grand Beginning Bright Emptiness Form alone.

As his figure existed amidst illusory space, he punched towards

Yan Zhaoge's Cyclic Heavenly Seal.

Although he was unarmed, as Chen Qianhua punched outwards, a silhouette condensed, actually manifesting in the form of a sceptre.

On seeing the sceptre, the first thought that appeared within Yan Zhaoge's mind was that this was the very sceptre which the founder of the Grand Clear lineage, the Lord of the Dao and Virtue, had once used in reigning over the various heavens!

Of the martial arts of the Grand Clear direct lineage, both the earlier heaven and later heaven ones possessed boundless profundities.

Besides the earlier heaven Grand Cosmos Five Manifestations, there were also the Later Heaven Five Ultimates.

This sceptre art was precisely one of the Later Heaven Five Ultimates!

Chen Qianhua combined martial arts of earlier heaven and later heaven at this moment as he finally managed to block Yan Zhaoge's Cyclic Heavenly Seal which caused the very heavens and earth to be reversed.

"Haha..." Yan Zhaoge smiled, "Do whatever you want. If I change my technique, I lose."

He exerted force with his palm, continuing to strike downwards with a Cyclic Heavenly Seal!

# HSSB1077: Like swatting a fly

---

Yan Zhaoge flipped his palm, similarly executing the Cyclic Heavenly Seal as his concept manifested in yet another different manner.

The long river of time seemingly manifested amidst space.

The beginning was the start of earlier heaven with formless Grand Simplicity as all was chaotic and dark.

At the end was the ultimate end of later heaven along with the finality of all creation, with all things entering destruction and returning to nothingness.

While he did not cultivate in the Immortal Exterminating Sword that represented the descent of the laws of the end along with the collapse of the grand dao, Yan Zhaoge's combined cultivation of the Immortal Slaughtering, Immortal Trapping and Immortal Ending Swords of the Numinous Treasure Four Swords had already collectively created a concept of the end of all creation.

At this moment, Yan Zhaoge used the Cyclic Heavenly Seal of the Jade Clear lineage as the belt in connecting the Taiyi Fist of Grand Simplicity that signified primordial beginning and the swords of the Prime Clear lineage that signified the ultimate end.

This was a Cyclic Heavenly Seal from the simultaneous cultivation of the Three Purities combined into one, surpassing the imaginations of countless people in this world!

Causality and effect were reversed, with creation and destruction being overturned!

The most powerful and most basic principle within the world was the opposition of the two extremities which manifested in Yan Zhaoge's palm at this moment!

This was the one of the utmost, ultimate variations of the Cyclic Heavenly Scripture.

Ever since ancient times, even many experts who had ascended to the Immortal realm with the Cyclic Heavenly Scripture had not been able to execute this variation of the Cyclic Heavenly Seal!

It was a reversal of creation that surpassed even reverting to earlier heaven times!

As this palm of Yan Zhaoge's descended, the world before Chen Qianhua's eyes completely changed.

All things within the world disappeared as even the boundary between earlier and later heaven had been wiped out.

The majestic concept that seemed to forcibly reverse the process of all creation entailed a terrifying, incomparably immense force.

It was an immense force that crushed the myriad principles and surpassed all entities, destroying all existences within one's knowledge as it possessed infinite, immeasurable might!

As this palm of Yan Zhaoge's descended, it directly shattered the sceptre formed of Chen Qianhua's true essence into smithereens!

While the Grand Beginning Bright Emptiness Form was proficient in both offence and defence as it possessed high defensive power, Chen Qianhua was unable to resist this Cyclic Heavenly Seal of Yan Zhaoge's with his current attainments in it.

He was pressured out from the midst of the forms of illusory and real by a boundlessly great force, losing that illusory, indistinct state.

With a palm that enveloped all, Yan Zhaoge swatted Chen Qianhua towards the deep abyss down below like he would a fly as the latter was smashed straight into the depths of the Earth Domain!

Even as he sent Chen Qianhua flying, Yan Zhaoge activated something with his thoughts.

A streak of golden light flew out from him, transforming into a



magnificent sun in mid-air which suppressed the entire Eight Extremities World while bathing it entirely in sunlight.

This was precisely the Extreme Yang Seal.

As the Extreme Yang Seal descended, the devilish qi that surged within the Earth Domain instantly fell still.

The abnormalities with the crevice to the Nine Underworlds within the Earth Domain far surpassed any of those previous times.

Still, Yan Zhaoge could presently also freely wield the power of the Extreme Yang Seal as he liked.

Without a peak Devil of the Nine Underworlds making a move, how could some mere rampant devilish qi stand against the Extreme Yang Seal?

“Now, is this a pleasant surprise? Are you feeling happy?” Yan Zhaoge gazed towards the depths.

A figure floated amidst roiling, dark devilish qi.

While he was not affected by the devilish qi, he appeared to be in a rather dishevelled, harried state.

His arms that had forcibly withstood Yan Zhaoge’s Cyclic Heavenly Seal earlier were a shredded mess of flesh and blood as they were strange and distorted.

His pale skin looked totally devoid of blood.

Chen Qianhua had just opened his mouth to speak when fresh blood leaked from the corners of his mouth, causing him to cough.

“Cough...cough...cough...you...you couldn’t be simultaneously cultivating in the Three Purities, right? Cough, cough...otherwise, it would be impossible for you to already have comprehended the reversal of creation and a reversion to earlier heaven times at the Martial Saint realm.”

Despite coughing blood non-stop, Chen Qianhua had a joyful

expression on his face, “Really, really, cough, cough...I’ve discovered that you are much more interesting than the Brocade Emperor!”

Amidst his words, his arms that were a mangled bunch of flesh and blood twitched unceasingly as they swiftly healed at a speed that was visible to the naked eye.

The colour of blood gradually began appearing on his face that had previously been pale as paper.

A powerful vitality surged.

Time that resembled water circulated.

Interwoven space turned illusory.

Wide, boundless phenomena were manifested.

Yin and yang flowed at equilibrium.

Changeable, fickle mind rippled.

The six concepts of yin-yang, time, space, life, matter and mind simultaneously manifested, collectively forming the foundation of the world.

Beneath this profound force, the injuries inflicted by Yan Zhaoge quickly healed.

Glancing at Chen Qianhua, Yan Zhaoge raised his brows lightly, “Oh, you have gathered the full Later Heaven Six Scriptures of the Primordial Heavenly Scriptures of the Jade Clear lineage?”

“The thoughts of the Exalted Solar Luminary are truly difficult to predict. He too is an interesting person,” While Chen Qianhua’s aura was still weak, he finally ceased coughing blood.

A streak of green light flew from him, growing amidst the air as it instantly transformed into a banner.

A surging vitality manifested as the concepts birthed from the five elements were infinite and endless.

This green banner fell towards the deep abyss of the Earth Domain, intercepting the Extreme Yang Seal in mid-air.

The tyrannical Extreme Yang Seal that resembled the descent of a great sun was actually swept up by that banner and rendered temporarily unable to descend.

No longer being suppressed by the Extreme Yang Seal, the Nine Underworlds devilish qi within the Earth Domain became active as it rampaged once more.

Looking at that green banner, Yan Zhaoge's gaze hardened as he was finally somewhat taken aback, "Oh, isn't this the Grand Longevity Banner? It was actually in your possession?"

The Grand Longevity Banner was a weapon that had been forged by the Exalted Wood Luminary of the Kunlun Nine Luminaries, being acclaimed alongside the Extreme Yang Seal and the Extreme Yin Crown.

The reason Yan Zhaoge was concerned about it was that his mother, Xue Chuqing, was none other than the true orthodox descendant of the Exalted Wood Luminary!

If the information supplied by Liu Zhenggu, Cao Jie, Wang Pu and the others was right, the Bright Connection Emperor Hu Yuexin had been the sole disciple of the Exalted Wood Luminary.

"You think that it should be in your mother's possession?" Chen Qianhua shook his head, "That should originally have been the case. Still, it was first passed down to the disciple of the Bright Connection Emperor, that is your mother's Master. Still, she died, with the Grand Longevity Banner thus not being passed down to your mother."

"I obtained it from somebody else. I do not really need to use it anywhere, but I have simply kept it nonetheless."

Chen Qianhua smiled, "It looks like my patience has been rewarded. It has come to be of use today, and in an interaction

with you too. It really could not be any more perfect.”

Yan Zhaoge looked at him, his lips slowly curling into a smile too, “Yes, wonderful indeed.”

He ignored the devilish qi down below that was rampaging once again, ignored the Extreme Yang Seal that was entangled with the Grand Longevity Banner.

Yan Zhaoge simply struck out with another palm, aiming straight for Chen Qianhua!

At the same time, a streak of light flickered in the distance, a massive silhouette suddenly appearing in the air above the Earth Domain.

The Kunpeng soared through an endless distance, instantly arriving before them.

As the silhouette of the Kunpeng faded, it was the figure of Yan Zhaoge’s Northern Ocean Clone that appeared.

The Northern Ocean Clone raised a dark green bamboo cane that was seven feet long and had seven segments, bringing it down full circle and smashing it towards the Grand Longevity Banner!

Struck by the dark green bamboo cane, the green light on the surface of the Grand Longevity Banner instantly shook.

Under usual circumstances, the bamboo cane would have to be eight feet long with eight segments for it to be able to deal with miraculous weapons like the Grand Longevity Banner and the Extreme Yang Seal.

Still, Chen Qianhua had to fully concentrate on battling against Yan Zhaoge as his control of the Grand Longevity Banner weakened.

As the Grand Longevity Banner was also clashing with the Extreme Yang Seal that was no inferior to it in the least, it was immediately unable to bear it as it suffered a blow from the dark

green bamboo cane now.

The Grand Longevity Banner weakened as the Extreme Yang Seal gained the upper hand, not only suppressing the Grand Longevity Banner as it even continued suppressing the rampant Nine Underworlds devilish qi down below.

“I must offer you a word of praise. You have indeed brought me quite a pleasant surprise,” Yan Zhaoge chuckled, his palm encompassing the heavens and earth as it arrived above Chen Qianhua’s head.

# HSSB1078: Superior in all aspects

---

Yan Zhaoge unleashed yet another Cyclic Heavenly Seal as he sent Chen Qianhua tumbling mightily towards the deep abyss down below once more.

This palm of his caused Chen Qianhua's arms to break once again, becoming distorted and cracked.

He was unable to withstand this palm of Yan Zhaoge's as his parry was directly broken through, the palm continuing forth with its great momentum as it struck down upon his head.

The world foundation of Chen Qianhua's was virtually shattered as although it saved him from being killed with a single palm, blood still splattered out in all directions from his head!

Meanwhile, the Grand Longevity Banner which was being suppressed by the Extreme Yang Seal had not yet submitted.

Green light flickered as the banner swayed in the wind, resembling a stubborn, resolute sprout that had broken through all obstacles and sprung up through the soil to see the light of day.

The sprout seemingly forcibly broke through chaos, seeking to grow alongside a brand new heaven and earth.

As the vast seas and the wide plains changed along with the passing of time, this divine tree turned from youthful to old as it grew to obscure the heavens and conceal the sun.

The Grand Longevity Banner manifested its miraculous aspects in seeking to push aside the Extreme Yang Seal that was suppressing it from up above.

Yet, Yan Zhaoge's Northern Ocean Clone wielded the dark green bamboo cane, immediately striking down once more.

The Grand Longevity Banner flickered with green light as it was instantly suppressed by the Extreme Yang Seal yet once more.

Now, however, a fourth figure suddenly appeared in the air above the Earth Domain.

The newcomer's pupils flickered with specks of radiance that formed profound runes. He appeared to carry himself in a way that was no different from Chen Qianhua at all.

This was a clone that Chen Qianhua had refined!

This clone of his was not looking at his true self as he was instead gazing intently at the dark green bamboo cane in the hands of the Northern Ocean Clone.

“Treasure Dropping Coin? Seven Treasure Miraculous Tree? Divinity Striking Whip?” The gaze of Chen Qianhua's clone flickered slightly, “It looks like none of those. Still, it seems to have borne reference to all of them. I really wonder where you managed to obtain so many hidden secrets.”

“Wait, if it was before the Great Calamity, there seems to have been such a place where this is possible. Still, that place should have been destroyed too...”

That clone shook his head, a joyous expression appearing on his face, “When I first heard the rumours, I did not pay attention to them. To think that even the Grand Longevity Banner would be unable to withstand it.”

“If it were any other high-grade Sacred Artifact, they would only be compromised even more.”

He waved a hand, a streak of light flying into mid-air.

It was a copper coin.

This coin stood out in how it actually had a pair of wings about its circular form!

On seeing the appearance of that coin, the Northern Ocean Clone's pupils dilated slightly, “Treasure Dropping Coin?”

Gazing closely once more, he realised that that was not truly a

Treasure Dropping Coin as it was just a replica.

There were characters on the coin that transformed into a streak of light as it was gone in a flash. It looked like this could only be used once as its efficacy could naturally not be compared to the actual Treasure Dropping Coin.

Even so, however, it was like that supreme treasure of legend which specifically sent other treasures out of their owner's control!

While the dark green bamboo cane was gripped by the Northern Ocean Clone, as the treasured light from the winged coin shone on it, the Northern Ocean Clone instantly felt his hands sinking.

Chen Qianhua smiled, "Indeed, this is actually a unique treasure rather than a weapon. As a treasure that specifically counters all weapons beneath the heavens, being a treasure itself, it would naturally be countered by the Treasure Dropping Coin."

His clone shot forward, golden light simultaneously flickering in his hands as he actually executed a miraculous supreme martial art of Buddhism.

Yan Zhaoge's first thought was that Chen Qianhua had to be related to the Future Buddha's blessed lands of Buddhism.

However, upon gazing over carefully, he realised that this clone actually seemed not to contain that Buddha-light of the power of faith.

His cultivation base of the Martial Saint realm had been wholly attained through his own painstaking cultivation.

In pre-Great Calamity times, because of the Future Buddha, the disciples of Buddhism had devoutly been devoted to Buddhism, giving offerings and worshipping the Buddha with their power of faith.

The various martial arts of Buddhism had all been influenced along this line as a result.



The Buddhist martial arts from the times of the Gautama Buddha had already become rare existences indeed.

Even the Martial Repository of the Heavenly Court's Divine Palace from pre-Great Calamity times had only contained a small amount of them.

Still, this Buddhist clone of Chen Qianhua's clearly solidly followed the path of pursuing the heart's clear purity in proving one's own spirituality.

As he punched out, the stance of vanquishing all evil demons was manifested as it was tough and mighty beyond compare.

Yan Zhaoge's Northern Ocean Clone did not evade it as his fist-intent took the form of a Kunpeng, a huge fish leaving the sea along with an immense, immeasurable force as it forcibly collided head-on with Chen Qianhua's Buddhist clone.

Violent thunder exploded amidst space as the surging devilish qi in the surroundings was completely cleansed.

The Northern Ocean Clone's body shook slightly while Chen Qianhua's Buddhist Clone stumbled two steps back.

Still, a dark red mark was vaguely visible on the fist of Yan Zhaoge's Northern Ocean Clone.

Yan Zhaoge's Northern Ocean Clone was superior in terms of strength whereas Chen Qianhua's Buddhist clone was slightly superior in terms of the sturdiness of his body.

Like the Northern Ocean Clone, this clone of Chen Qianhua's surpassed countless experts of the same cultivation level, being powerful enough to be greatly renowned in rampaging throughout everywhere.

"Heh!" Yan Zhaoge's Northern Ocean Clone laughed coldly, his martial true intent condensing and manifesting as multiple silhouettes above his head.

Besides the original Kunpeng, the form of a true dragon was also manifested now.

Also, this was just the beginning!

After the Kunpeng and the true dragon, there was a Bifang bird, a Golden Crow, a Cyclone Turtle, a Taotie...

As these multiple silhouettes surfaced together, the acupoints of the Northern Ocean Clone's entire body pulsed, his strength becoming increasingly momentous and majestic.

As he strode forth, the heavens and earth seemed to have returned to the prehistoric wilderness as countless great demonic beasts rampaged together, shocking the heavens and shaking the earth.

This blow of the Northern Ocean Clone's seemed possessed by a living tiger and dragon, his strength seemingly endless as he forcibly beat Chen Qianhua's Buddhist clone into perpetual retreat.

Yan Zhaoge had also gained the upper hand in this battle of clone against clone.

After repelling Chen Qianhua's clone, the Northern Ocean Clone flicked his finger as that flying coin in the sky was immediately blown far away.

The dark green bamboo cane was freed of the restrictions on it as the Northern Ocean Clone flicked it up, the cane bringing along a trace of purple light while striking at the Grand Longevity Banner yet again.

The Grand Longevity Banner trembled, the Extreme Yang Seal descending again as it suppressed the crevice to the Nine Underworlds down below.

Still, a soul-piercing shriek now resounded from the deep abyss down below, shaking one's heart.

A Nine Underworlds True Devil was shockingly in the midst of pulling its way out from the crevice.

Still, before it could even take in the sight of this new world it had come into, a figure was already smashing down on it from up above.

This was Chen Qianhua who had been sent tumbling down by Yan Zhaoge's palm once more.

Before that devil could even react, the world before its eyes suddenly dimmed.

Yan Zhaoge pursued Chen Qianhua all the way down as he casually struck the devil with a Cyclic Heavenly Seal upon seeing it.

His iron palm that flipped the heavens and overturned the earth swept rampantly through all and any enemies that stood in his path.

A Nine Underworlds True Devil which had once been a major enemy for the Eight Extremities World upon its descent was directly smashed into smithereens by Yan Zhaoge!

"Truly powerful..." While the qi and blood of the heavily injured Chen Qianhua was extremely weak, never had he looked as excited as he was now.

He looked downwards.

Half of his body had already been devoured by the crevice of the Nine Underworlds as a massive suction force was still continuing to corrode him.

"What a pity. What a real pity indeed," Chen Qianhua shook his head repeatedly.

Yan Zhaoge said mildly, "You can break through the suppression of the dimensional boundaries at any time, making use of this to break free of the Nine Underworlds in returning to the World

beyond Worlds.”

Chen Qianhua laughed loudly, “Now where would be the fun in that?”

His figure sank abruptly as he actually plunged into the crevice to the Nine Underworlds of his own accord.

“You can do that. Indeed, I have no intention of pursuing you into the Nine Underworlds. This Yan is untalented, but am also not interested in lowering myself to the level of a madman such as you,” Yan Zhaoge was momentarily taken aback before he chortled out loud, “Still, I can make this escapade even more interesting for you. I believe that you will be very happy to accept this parting gift of mine.”

With that, Yan Zhaoge formed numerous seals with his hands as they collectively transformed into a black ball of light which mightily plummeted into the crevice to the Nine Underworlds.

As the black ball of light landed on Chen Qianhua, it instantly formed a formless wound on his body from which streams of black light leaked out.

Affected by the formless devilish wound, pandemonium instantly overtook the Nine Underworlds, with countless great devils beginning to converge on his location like sharks having smelled blood!

# HSSB1079: Grand Longevity Banner

---

Having entered the Nine Underworlds, Chen Qianhua's cultivation base was no longer affected by the natural laws of the dimensional boundaries of the Eight Extremities World.

His aura instantly skyrocketed as he was like an ant that had become an elephant.

Affected by this, his injuries began to rapidly heal too.

Back when King Xuanmu had descended to the Eight Extremities World and been heavily injured by Yan Di, his condition had still been serious upon his return to the World beyond Worlds.

Still, having successfully accomplished the foundation of the world and also cultivated to the Human Exalt stage, Chen Qianhua's wounds instantly recovered by over fifty percent now.

Yet, the formless devilish wound inflicted by the black ball of light thrown by Yan Zhaoge still remained.

Black light leaked out from the wound as it was similar to the bleeding of an injury.

Chen Qianhua sensed virtually immediately that attracted by this, powerful auras were quaking from all directions and various distances as they came to pay attention to his current location.

Amongst them, there were even some true peak Great Devils of the Nine Underworlds!

“...Devil Bewitching Ritual?” Chen Qianhua was taken aback, “This is the legendary Devil Bewitching Ritual that was used by experts of Daoism to bait and kill devils of the Nine Underworlds during pre-Great Calamity times?”

Affected by this formless devilish wound, the great devils of the Nine Underworlds would flock over like sharks in the sea that had smelled blood.

Even with Chen Qianhua's cultivation base, it would still be greatly perilous for him as he was encircled and attacked by numerous experts of the Nine Underworlds while deep within their territory.

It would be even worse if he attracted some even more powerful devils.

Under normal circumstances, even when he was injured, Chen Qianhua would still be able to let his wounds regenerate very quickly, leaving the Nine Underworlds and returning to the World beyond Worlds via extradimensional space within a short period of time.

Now, however, before he had gotten rid of the Devil Bewitching Ritual, he would have to suffer the joint attacks of numerous devils.

Wanting to both treat his wounds and leave the Nine Underworlds, the difficulty was even greater.

It was like the brightness of the flame of a candle amidst the darkness of the night, a marker that indicated his location to the numerous devils of the Nine Underworlds.

Chen Qianhua regained his wits to see that the crevice was already gradually closing up as it was suppressed by Yan Zhaoge.

"You actually even know the Devil Bewitching Ritual?" Chen Qianhua's eyes shone brilliantly, "Indeed, indeed, the most interesting person from this Eight Extremities World really is you!"

Yan Zhaoge smiled nonchalantly, waving to him, "You are welcome. Have fun!"

The crevice to the Nine Underworlds was sealed once more.

Chen Qianhua gradually disappeared from Yan Zhaoge's field of vision as well.

The final thing he saw was that many great devils who had originally not been much interested in a mere lower world like the Eight Extremities World had suddenly congregated and surrounded Chen Qianhua.

After the crevice to the Nine Underworlds had been completely sealed, the devilish qi that surged in the deep abyss of the Earth Domain was cleansed as well.

The Eight Extremities World had finally regained its calm.

Still, as Yan Zhaoge had had to reveal his actual abilities in battling against Chen Qianhua, the entire world was more or less affected by the aftershocks somewhat.

This was especially so for the areas surrounding the Earth Domain as heaven-flipping, earth-overturning changes had befallen their local geography.

The spiritual qi cycles of the entire Eight Extremities World were all different from how they had been earlier as they had been virtually shattered before slowly regaining their flow.

After sealing the Earth Domain, Yan Zhaoge turned and glanced elsewhere.

There, Chen Qianhua's Buddhist clone was already in a tough spot in his battle against the Northern Ocean Clone as his body was riddled with wounds.

It was just that he had no intention of breaking free of the suppression of the power of dimensions and re-ascending to the World beyond Worlds.

Like Yan Zhaoge's Northern Ocean Clone, the cultivation base of this clone far surpassed the third level of the Martial Saint realm.

His cultivation base had also been suppressed upon his descent into the Eight Extremities World.

Sensing the Northern Ocean Clone's doubts, Chen Qianhua's

clone smiled, “What a pity, what a pity. You have already sealed the crevice to the Nine Underworlds. Otherwise, this clone of mine could have gone down too.”

“While the Nine Underworlds Evil Devils are chaotic and unpredictable, most of them are very brainless indeed as I am not so interested in them. Still, some casual playing with them can be enjoyable too.”

The Northern Ocean Clone said mildly, “You can try returning to the World beyond Worlds. Still, there is also the possibility of you being slain by me here before you are able to do so successfully.”

The other party laughed loudly, “Whether or not I return is already no longer of any importance. I am more interested in you than I am the Brocade Emperor now. You are much more interesting than he is.”

Amidst his words, his body abruptly turned gold as he resembled a Buddha statue of gilded gold.

The next moment, a bluish-green lustre surged as his entire body, both his exterior and interior, transformed into Vajra.

Just like the present martial practitioners of the blessed lands of Buddhism who bore the power of faith, he was about to extinguish himself right there and then.

Still, the martial practitioners of the blessed lands extinguished themselves through Buddha-light.

Meanwhile, Chen Qianhua’s clone purely cultivated in the Buddhist teachings, pure and untainted with this thus being difficult to prevent.

Only Buddhist cultivators whose cultivation bases had attained a certain level would be able to do this.

“Oh,” The Northern Ocean Clone smiled nonchalantly, “Just die then.”



He punched forth, striking straight at the centre of the other party's head!

The Buddha idol of Vajra was shattered at once.

After glancing at it once, Yan Zhaoge himself no longer paid any attention to it.

He could be considered to have a pretty good understanding of the Upper Exalt now.

This was a true madman indeed.

He did not care so much about his own fate and wellbeing as opposed to the crazed thoughts that would spring up within his head from time to time.

Previously, Yan Zhaoge had still been wondering whether Chen Qianhua might take revenge on Broad Creed Mountain and himself after returning to the World beyond Worlds if he suffered a setback in the Eight Extremities World.

From the looks of it now, however, while he would definitely make a comeback, he would likely simply target him, Yan Zhaoge.

In the eyes of Chen Qianhua, others were simply uninteresting.

Of course, this was not an absolute thing.

The reason madmen were hard to deal with was that their psychologies could not be evaluated by common sense.

This particular madman even possessed extremely high destructive power, being even more hateful.

While Chen Qianhua who cultivated in many supreme martial arts was incomparable to Yan Zhaoge in terms of the amount and density of his true essence at the same cultivation level, it was still shocking within this world.

He who cultivated the full set of the Later Heaven Six Scriptures of the ten Primordial Heavenly Scriptures of the Jade Clear direct lineage and was able to manifest the foundation of the world

possessed regenerative powers that were far superior to that of Zhuang Shen who had cultivated the Phoenix True Form Scripture and Daoist Oneheaven who cultivated in the Longevity Scripture.

In terms of pure regenerative capabilities alone, even Yan Zhaoge was his inferior.

Still, in terms of technique speed and instant explosive power, Yan Zhaoge was the obvious victor.

The Cyclic Heavenly Seal that reached the extent of reversing all creation was the manifestation of the essence of the cultivation base of Yan Zhaoge who simultaneously cultivated all Three Purities.

Therefore, Chen Qianhua had been totally owned by Yan Zhaoge at the same cultivation level.

“Still, that bastard did indeed give me quite the pleasant surprise, though,” Yan Zhaoge looked at that banner which flickered with green light.

The Grand Longevity Banner was still entangled in a clash with the Extreme Yang Seal, just that it was currently at a disadvantage due to having suffered a blow from his dark green bamboo cane earlier.

Yan Zhaoge went forward and attempted to tame the Grand Longevity Banner. Still, the difficulty of this was not low.

After all, this was a Sacred Artifact which was comparable to the mighty Extreme Yang Seal.

The Upper Exalt had left behind a mark on it with his fist-intent that was at the level of a Human Exalt.

It had been left behind by a Human Exalt who was actually able to battle against True Immortals too.

With Yan Zhaoge’s current cultivation base, it would not be all that straightforward for him to deal with this.

Yan Zhaoge was still in a great mood, though.

As a high-grade Sacred Artifact, the Grand Longevity Banner held a unique significance for him.

By means of both the Extreme Yang Seal and the dark green bamboo cane, Yan Zhaoge first forcibly suppressed the Grand Longevity Banner, storing it into his inventory.

As for how he would truly gain control of this miraculous artifact, that would have to be left for later.

# HSSB1080: The fun in swatting flies

---

After resealing the crevice to the Nine Underworlds in the deep abyss of the Earth Domain and obtaining the Grand Longevity Banner, there was no need for Yan Zhaoge to continue lingering.

He first headed west towards Broad Creed Mountain in the Heaven Domain.

Due to his great battle with Chen Qianhua earlier, the spiritual qi cycles of the Eight Extremities World had already been completely messed up.

If nothing was done about this, this world would deteriorate as a result.

There was a mechanism atop Broad Creed Mountain which had previously been established to gradually refine the spiritual qi cycles of the Eight Extremities World.

Now, this would be use of in helping the spiritual qi veins of this world to recuperate from that incident.

Those of Broad Creed Mountain had all felt the heaven-roiling, earth-overturning changes too.

They were still relatively calm, though, having earlier been notified that a change might occur concerning the crevice to the Nine Underworlds.

Still, their most legendary expert, the Fallen Deity Yan Zhaoge, had already descended into the Eight Extremities World to deal with this matter.

After learning of this, everyone had easily calmed down.

It was as if just the mere mention of this name signified that there was nothing at all to worry about.

The eventual conclusion also powerfully proved this once again.

The heaven-shocking, earth-shaking activity of the Nine

Underworlds that had stirred up great waves had still been quelled in the end as peace had returned to the Eight Extremities World.

Upon Yan Zhaoge's return to the Mountain, everyone was in high spirits indeed.

The disciples of Broad Creed Mountain who had been personally acquainted with Yan Zhaoge in the past all shared and revelled in his glory.

Yan Zhaoge also felt delighted at seeing some old acquaintances again.

The timeflow of the Eight Extremities World was only half of that within the World beyond Worlds and a fifth of that within the Vast Ocean World.

In all those years that Yan Zhaoge had fought and attained glory in the World beyond Worlds, less than a decade had actually passed in the Eight Extremities World.

Still, many things had happened over the course of this duration.

With a greater amount of resources from Broad Creed Mountain in the World beyond Worlds, due to the changing of the spiritual qi of the Eight Extremities World to become better suited for martial cultivation, Feng Chi had next successfully attained the Transcending Mortality Martial Grandmaster stage.

Some outstanding figures had also arisen amongst disciples of the younger generation.

Despite that, disciples of theirs had perished too.

Currently, Broad Creed Mountain reigned supreme in the Eight Extremities World with virtually no enemies whatsoever.

However, there was still the possibility of them entering cultivation deviation in the midst of their cultivation as well as encountering dangers in places like the Great Western Desert, the Southern Underground Palace and the Marsh of Illusory Sea.

An example of this was Fang Zhun's personal disciple Lu Wen who had been acclaimed alongside Yan Zhaoge, Xu Fei and Sikong Qing and some others that year. While he had been prevented from falling to the dark side in the great tribulation of Broad Creed Mountain thanks to Xu Fei, he had still been overly anxious to improve, thus having died to cultivation deviation in a death cultivation session afterwards.

Perhaps he was already no longer of the mind to compare himself with Yan Zhaoge. Yet, the meteoric rise to prominence of Sikong Qing, Feng Yunsheng, Ying Longtu and the others to eventually surpass him had still caused the pressure on him to increasingly mount.

He was not the first person to really lose their lives in a death cultivation session, nor would he be the last.

Martial cultivation had never ever been a smooth, unhindered path.

After restoring the equilibrium of the Eight Extremities World's spiritual qi, Yan Zhaoge exchanged some parting words with Feng Chi and the others before returning to Turbid Wave Pavilion.

The winds were eternally calm here and the waves tranquil, giving off the vibe of an otherworldly haven.

Despite Yan Zhaoge's heaven-roiling, earth-overturning battle with Chen Qianhua earlier, the area had remained peaceful throughout as it was like another, separate world of its own.

After greeting An Qinglin, Xie Youchan and the other Turbid Wave Pavilion martial practitioners, Yan Zhaoge again headed to Chen Mingying's residence.

The Brocade Emperor and Chen Mingying were in the midst of conversing in the courtyard.

As he had a warm, straightforward attitude and a silver tongue, Chen Mingying who had learnt of his identity was gradually

becoming less reserved and restrained in talking to him.

Meng Wan sat by the side, the smile on her face never lessening.

She had already not felt this happy for many years.

On seeing Yan Zhaoge, the Brocade Emperor turned to look at him, smiling, "From the looks of it, it appears that you have won, and Chen Qianhua has returned to the World beyond Worlds?"

"He has headed to the Nine Underworlds on his own accord," Yan Zhaoge shook his head.

While his body had been pulled by the devouring force of the Nine Underworlds back then, if Chen Qianhua had broken free of the suppression on him by the world's spatial boundaries, he would have been able to escape the Nine Underworlds' pull and ascend to the World beyond Worlds.

Meanwhile, Yan Zhaoge had also been ready for this eventuality at the time.

Due to the existence of the Nine Underworlds, Chen Qianhua would be obstructed somewhat when ascending.

Yan Zhaoge had forcibly smashed Chen Qianhua down into the deep abyss earlier in order for him to be tied down by the crevice of the Nine Underworlds.

With that, Yan Zhaoge was ready to intercept and obstruct him if he tried to escape the suppression of dimensional boundaries and ascend to the World beyond Worlds.

Of course, he was not sufficiently confident of leaving Chen Qianhua behind for good even if he did do so.

Still, this was the ideal, best plan for him to deal with Chen Qianhua whose actual cultivation base was supremely powerful indeed.

Sadly, insane people could really perform too unpredictable actions.

On hearing the tale, the Brocade Emperor nodded slowly, “This does seem like what he would do.”

“Still, I sent him a Devil Bewitching Ritual before he left,” Yan Zhaoge shrugged, “Hunted by numerous devils, even if he does not die, he needn’t think of leaving the Nine Underworlds in the short term.”

Having temporarily suppressed this uncertain variable in the Nine Underworlds, Yan Zhaoge would be able to rest assured in searching for Feng Yunsheng alongside the Brocade Emperor and Meng Wan over this upcoming period of time.

This was despite the fact that Feng Yunsheng’s current trip to a foreign dimension might also be related to the Nine Underworlds.

“It is rare to find someone willing to spar with Chen Qianhua,” A hint of a smile could be seen on the Brocade Emperor’s handsome face, “Of course, the main reason is still that most are unable to beat him. Still, even for those who can obtain victory over him, they would have no pleasure in clashing with him.”

“The reason is that this person has no concept of glory and honour. Even if he is defeated, he will feel no humiliation, vexation, shame, desolation.”

The Brocade Emperor smiled, “He is also not concerned about how many spoils of war the victor manages to wrest away from him. Even life and death is something he is unconcerned about.”

Chen Qianhua was not enthusiastic about battles themselves as he was more focused on whether he was able to obtain anything interesting from his opponent in the process of their match.

Besides these, he was wholly unconcerned with enmity and debts, victory and defeat, life and death, gains and losses.

One should say that the things he pursued simply did not overlap with what most people sought at all.

Madman truly lived in different worlds from everyone else.



“Without the sorrow of the loser, the joy of the victor is naturally diminished greatly,” The Brocade Emperor said casually, “For those who understand Chen Qianhua’s personality, even winning against him is nothing much to be happy about.”

Yan Zhaoge chuckled, “That may not entirely be the case. In Chen Qianhua’s own words, to me, swatting him like a fly is actually rather fun too. As for what he thinks, I do not care about that.”

The Brocade Emperor smiled, “And how many of a similar cultivation level can swat him like a fly?”

He stood up, looking in the direction of Meng Wan and Chen Mingying, “Since we are done over here, let us return to the World beyond Worlds. Sorry for any interruptions today, Fellow Daoist Chen.”

“Even though I have already said it before, I must still say it again. Having been separated from Wan’er for many years, I have not fulfilled my responsibility as a father. Raising and educating Wan’er has been fully on your shoulders. I am truly grateful for that.”

Chen Mingying hastily exclaimed repeatedly that the Brocade Emperor was overstating things. Now that she was about to be separated from Meng Wan again, she felt rather unwilling to part with her.

Meng Wan consoled her, “If I have a chance to, this disciple will definitely come to visit Master again in the future.”

The Brocade Emperor smiled, nodding in agreement.

Yan Zhaoge’s gaze flickered slightly.

# HSSB1081: Dense Encompassing Emperor

---

After parting ways with Chen Mingying, Yan Zhaoge left the Eight Extremities World together with the Brocade Emperor and Meng Wan, returning to the World beyond Worlds.

This time, they directly passed through the wound of the sky located at the former headquarters of the Sacred Sun Clan, arriving beneath Water Ridge Peak, a back mountain of Broad Creed Mountain in the World beyond Worlds.

“Shall we head to Golden Court Mountain first?” Yan Zhaoge directed an enquiring gaze at the Brocade Emperor, “Senior Brother Tang will necessarily require the support of the Southeastern Exalt to rebuild the Sacred Sun Clan.”

The Brocade Emperor smiled, “That is naturally fine. It has been a long time since I last saw Fellow Daoist Cao too.”

They immediately set off for Golden Court Mountain.

On the way there, Yan Zhaoge was contacted via some of his information channels as he gained an understanding of the latest situation in the World beyond Worlds.

There were both good and bad news.

The worst news of all was that the Concealed Sovereign was in death seclusion and totally isolated from the outside world.

Whether it was Wang Zhengcheng and Li Junxin of the Southern High Peak’s Qilin Cliff or Wang Pu’s lot of the Northern High Peak’s Jade Capital Crag, they were all helpless and unable to do anything about this.

The Female Emperor Jie Mingkong never ever got involved in such matters that were unrelated to her.

The Heaven Emperor and the Brocade Emperor had not been on good terms in the first place. The former’s interference in this

issue would make the Brocade Emperor's reaction difficult to predict.

A great battle between True Immortals might really break out.

Of course, there was good news as well. The Dense Encompassing Emperor who was acclaimed alongside the Brocade Emperor and the Heaven Emperor had recently returned to the World beyond Worlds from extradimensional space.

The Dense Encompassing Emperor Li Jun was also called the Encompassing Emperor.

One of the Five Emperors and possessing remarkable strength, he was the Chief of the World beyond Worlds' central Jun Heaven Territory's Kunlun Mountain's Circle Intelligence Ridge's Myriad Phenomena Cave.

He had been one of those to bear witness in the conflict between the Brocade Emperor Fu Yunchi and Mars Halberd as a mediator previously.

Only then had the Brocade Emperor and Mars Halberd settled on battling it out amidst space.

Still, the Encompassing Emperor had left for extradimensional space on the day of the agreed battle as he not stayed behind to view it. The Earth Exalt Wang Zhengcheng had been left solely in charge of bearing witness to it.

In the years afterwards, the Encompassing Emperor had constantly been amidst extradimensional space alongside other experts like the Earthly Sovereign and Sword Sovereign, not having returned to the World beyond Worlds.

He had only just returned a short time ago.

Right upon his return, even before he arrived at his dao arena at Circle Intelligence Ridge's Myriad Phenomena Cave, he was already first notified that cultivation deviation had befallen the Brocade Emperor.

The name of the Immeasurable Heavenly Lord had been revealed at the southern Blazing Heaven Territory's Star Reflecting Lake for no reason at all as sizeable trouble had nearly arisen as a result.

While this matter had been suppressed because of Yan Zhaoge, the Brocade Emperor's own disciple He Xixing and the Earthly Exalt's disciple Li Junxin had both been compromised.

Many believed that this was also the case for Yan Zhaoge who had similarly been present.

After learning that Yan Zhaoge and the Brocade Emperor had both gone to Golden Court Mountain, the Encompassing Emperor went there as well.

Yan Zhaoge had naturally long since heard about the Encompassing Emperor Li Jun. Still, this was his first time seeing him in person.

He was dressed in black and had youthful features but snowy white hair which was immaculately combed.

As he stood there, he seemed one with the world and hard to distinguish from it, with all his movements appearing wholly natural and virtually like the dao.

"Yan Zhaoge greets the Encompassing Emperor," Yan Zhaoge smiled and gave his greetings.

Looking at Yan Zhaoge, the Encompassing Emperor nodded slightly, "A youth hero indeed. It is truly fortunate for we of Daoism that the bloodline of the Exalted Gold Luminary has produced someone like you."

"You overpraise me, Encompassing Emperor," Yan Zhaoge smiled slightly as he clearly saw a bit of a regretful look in the other party's eyes.

Indeed, after greeting Yan Zhaoge and Cao Jie, the Encompassing Emperor's gaze fell on the Brocade Emperor.

The Brocade Emperor said with a friendly expression on his face that was just like a refreshing spring breeze, “I feel ashamed to be troubling Fellow Daoist again.”

The Encompassing Emperor sighed, “If you had only listened when advised not to walk this path that year, would things still have come to this?”

“What must come must surely come. After a millennium of tranquillity before, didn’t that tribulation still come in the end?” The Brocade Emperor smiled, “At least the tribulation from Mars Halberd was tided through successfully.”

The Encompassing Emperor said, “After the old tribulation, a new tribulation was born. The trial you currently face is not an easy one too.”

The smile on the Brocade Emperor’s face vanished as he said after pondering for a moment, “True.”

He raised his head and looked at the Encompassing Emperor, “Having come here now, how does Fellow Daoist intend to handle this matter?”

“That will depend on what you intend to do,” The Encompassing Emperor frowned slightly, “What happened at Star Reflecting Lake definitely cannot be allowed to occur again.”

The Brocade Emperor tilted his head slightly, muttering after a while, “What I intend to do? Even I myself cannot say this for sure now...”

On hearing his words, Yan Zhaoge, Cao Jie and the Encompassing Emperor all had solemn expressions on their faces.

They knew that the Brocade Emperor’s words were actually literally the case now.

“My daughter has a bosom friend who headed to the Extreme Northern Lands and has yet to return for a long time after entering extradimensional space. It has already been many years since they

last met as they both miss each other,” The Brocade Emperor finally recovered, saying, “I intend to bring my daughter to the north and try to search for her.”

“The two of us have been separated for so many years as I have never ever fulfilled my duties as her father. I feel rather guilty every time I think of this.”

His gaze was tender as he looked at Meng Wan, “Wan’er is obedient and has been consoling me on this. Now that there is something that she would like done, I as a father would naturally do my best to try to fulfil this rare request of hers.”

The Encompassing Emperor’s gaze was calm and rippleless as he just glanced calmly at Meng Wan.

After looking between the Brocade Emperor and Meng Wan, the Encompassing Emperor said slowly, “Some of the dimensional passageways in the Extreme Northern Lands that lead to extradimensional space are vaguely related to the Nine Underworlds.”

“Yes, my daughter has been worrying about precisely this,” The Brocade Emperor nodded, “Still, those are in the minority at the end of the day.”

The Encompassing Emperor asked, “Does Fellow Daoist Fu mind if I come along with you and your daughter?”

As the matter concerned the Nine Underworlds, the Encompassing Emperor would surely not take it lightly.

Despite the fact that he was old acquaintances with the Brocade Emperor as they currently seemed to be conversing happily, with the Brocade Emperor appearing perfectly normal, no one at all could know what he might get up to with how he was right now.

The incident at Star Reflecting Lake alone was sufficient for all those in the know to feel like they were facing a great enemy as they upped to their utmost caution against this Lord of Ingenious

Flying Peak's Red Lotus Cliff.

"I naturally would not mind this. It is just that I feel uneasy at troubling you like this," The Brocade Emperor smiled as he looked at Yan Zhaoge, "Right, Wan'er's friend is none other than the wife of this Little Friend Yan."

The Encompassing Emperor raised his brows, "Oh? Little Friend Yan will be going too?"

Yan Zhaoge smiled, replying, "It has also been many years since I last saw my wife as I too miss her greatly. It is a rare chance indeed now that two Emperors are helping to search for her. I should go along too no matter what. I hope that you will allow it, Encompassing Emperor."

The Encompassing Emperor shot him a deep look before nodding, "Of course that's fine."

The Brocade Emperor looked at Cao Jie, smiling, "We should be off then. Please help out more with the re-opening of the Sacred Sun Clan in the World beyond Worlds, Fellow Daoist Cao."

A worried look flashed through Cao Jie's eyes, but he still answered calmly, "You can rest assured on that."

The party immediately set off, leaving Golden Court Mountain.

They headed north to the northern Profound Heaven Territory via the central Jun Heaven Territory.

The Brocade Emperor did not stop at Kunlun Mountain or return to Ingenious Flying Peak's Red Lotus Cliff, seemingly having forgotten completely about his lineage and the fact that he had another daughter there, Fu Ting.

Yan Zhaoge and the Encompassing Emperor tacitly did not bring this matter up as well.

# HSSB1082: Land of tranquil stream

---

If it was possible, Yan Zhaoge actually hoped that Fu Ting would leave Ingenious Flying Peak and hide in the Restful Immortal Valley or elsewhere.

He believed that it would be Fu Ting's turn when the Brocade Emperor had finished settling Meng Wan's affairs.

Still, it was all just a guess as no one could guess what exactly this Emperor was thinking before anything was really done by him.

Those atop Ingenious Flying Peak had studied the legacies of the Grand Clear lineage for many years as they understood the current situation too.

He trusted that Fu Ting and the others would eventually arrive at the correct conclusion and choice.

Yan Zhaoge was currently still focused on Feng Yunsheng's and Meng Wan's side.

With two Emperors gracing the northern Profound Heaven Territory, things had naturally diverged from the norm there.

The Northern Exalt appeared early on to welcome the Brocade Emperor and Encompassing Emperor.

If one were to say that it would only have been out of formality before, he was fully vigilant now.

The incident at the southern Blazing Heaven Territory's Star Reflecting Lake had only spread amongst the upper echelons as it had not been spread around to become widely known.

Still, the Northern Exalt was naturally in the know, thus definitely being wary of the Brocade Emperor.

This was also Yan Zhaoge's first time seeing this Lord of the North, Guan Yuluo's grandfather.

Seven Exalts had attended Broad Creed Mountain's opening



ceremony in the Royal Reed Sea.

Besides the Upper Exalt Chen Qianhua and the Earth Exalt Wang Zhengcheng, there was only the Northern Exalt who had been absent.

The revelation of the identities of Yan Zhaoge and Yan Di afterwards had shocked the entire World beyond Worlds.

However, the Northern Exalt had still done nothing. While he was not hostile to them like the Western Exalt Lang Qing and the others, he had never tried getting closer with them either.

This was congruent with the Northern Exalt's usual style.

He could basically be considered the most low key of the Ten Exalts.

He was rather like the Female Emperor in that he seldom interacted with outsiders.

His way of doing things was not completely unfounded.

Yan Zhaoge actually had a very good impression of him.

The Northern Exalt held a neutral stance towards the matter with his mother, Xue Chuqing, also having kept those of Cloud Pavilion Mountain's Profound Remnant Locale from getting involved.

While he had not helped to look after her, this was already a form of goodwill from the Northern Exalt.

The northern Profound Heaven Territory's Cloud Pavilion Mountain's Profound Remnant Locale had always been renowned for its powers of divination as the Northern Exalt was an elite in this area.

If he and his disciples had participated in the chase, it would have been incomparably difficult for Xue Chuqing to evade capture especially when her cultivation base had still been low back then.

While Xue Chuqing bore half the River Diagram for protection,

there were just too many areas where she needed to utilise it.

Even if the Northern Exalt did not personally enter battle, if many disciples of Profound Remnant Locale participated in the chase, Xue Chuqing would still easily be compromised as the risks would rise greatly for her.

It was precisely because they were proficient in this dao that the Northern Exalt's lineage generally kept a low profile, seldom participating in the world's various conflicts.

"Yan Zhaoge greets the Northern Exalt," Seeing the Northern Exalt, Yan Zhaoge bowed, "It has been some time since I last saw Miss Guan. Is she doing well?"

From merely his appearance alone, the Northern Exalt was probably the most inconspicuous person amongst the Ten Exalts.

He was old and slightly hunchbacked with a turbid gaze, seemingly devoid of energy as it was like he could pass away at any moment.

Amongst the Ten Exalts, the one who was the oldest and had the greatest seniority was indisputably the Earth Exalt Wang Zhengcheng.

After him was the Northeastern Exalt Liu Zhenggu. Of course, he was still much younger than Wang Zhengcheng.

Next was the Northern Exalt.

From just his appearance alone, Liu Zhenggu looked younger than the Northern Exalt despite being older than him as he appeared tough and authoritative and full of spirit.

After exchanging greetings with Yan Zhaoge, the Brocade Emperor and the Encompassing Emperor, the Northern Exalt smiled, "The little girl is crazy and wilful. I hope Little Friend Yan does not find it laughable."

Yan Zhaoge said, "No, no. I still have Miss Guan to thank for

letting me know the general direction that my wife has gone in.”

The Northern Exalt naturally knew why they had come to the northern Profound Heaven Territory, with news of this having already been transmitted to Cloud Pavilion Mountain’s Profound Remnant Locale earlier.

He pondered slightly before saying, “Little Friend Yan, Little Friend Fu, you should be prepared first. That dimensional passageway which Little Friend Feng entered extradimensional space through this time has probably really been corroded by the Nine Underworlds as it has become a land of tranquil stream.”

The so-called land of tranquil stream was not a dimension of the Nine Underworlds as it was instead created by the Nine Underworlds’ corrosion of space.

The power of the Nine Underworlds was strange and tyrannical as whether a world was formless or not, it would still be corroded by it.

Still, extradimensional space was complex as the power of the Nine Underworlds was hard pressed to corrode it. An extremely long period of time would be needed for an area to truly be assimilated.

Before that, space which had been tainted by the devilish qi of the Nine Underworlds could not be considered actual domains of the Nine Underworlds.

The reason it was termed as tranquil stream was that it could basically be considered a grey area between the Nine Underworlds and the great thousand worlds, being different from that usual encroachment from crevices of the Nine Underworlds on ordinary worlds within the universe.

After having been notified of their arrival and learnt why they had come, the Northern Exalt had made a divination for the first time in many years.

With the gap in the cultivation bases of him and Feng Yunsheng, his divination of her whereabouts should be a hundred percent accurate under normal circumstances.

Even if Feng Yunsheng was currently in extradimensional space and it was hard to precisely ascertain her position, he should still be able to determine the general direction she was in.

Still, the divination results had been chaotic and unclear.

What this entailed was really obvious.

“I understand. Many thanks for the reminder, Northern Exalt,” Yan Zhaohe inhaled deeply, cupping his hands towards the Northern Exalt.

Meng Wan looked rather nervously at her father who said, “Let us go take a look.”

The Northern Exalt said, “This old man will accompany the two Emperors in heading to the Extreme Northern Lands and wait there in case of anything.”

The Encompassing Emperor looked calmly at the Northern Exalt, nodding towards him.

They immediately set off, soon arriving at the world of ice and snow that was the Extreme Northern Lands.

They followed the clues that Feng Yunsheng had previously left behind, gradually coming to narrow down the radius of their search.

The Brocade Emperor raised a hand as the world before them instantly changed.

The all-encompassing wind and snow and the pure icy plains turned illusory, as if the actual space of the heavens and earth had become a flat, scenic portrait.

This was a variation of the Grand Beginning Bright Emptiness Form of the Grand Clear direct lineage.

The Grand Beginning Bright Emptiness Form possessed outstanding defensive power, but was not a simple defensive martial art.

It had both offensive and defensive capabilities as it possessed boundless miraculous uses.

There was only the Brocade Emperor who currently had such attainments in it within the World beyond Worlds.

Everyone gazed over and saw that amidst the heavens and earth before them that resembled a scenic portrait, some black lines could vaguely be seen.

It was like the portrait showed signs of having been restored after previously being ripped apart.

Before the Brocade Emperor had executed this technique, one would not be able to view all this.

These were dimensional crevices that would appear here from time to time before soon vanishing.

The Northern Exalt carefully examined it for a moment before his gaze fell on one of the black lines, "This should be the place."

Following the Northern Exalt's gaze, Yan Zhaoge and the others all nodded slowly.

"Let's go," The Brocade Emperor retracted his hand, the scenes before them returning from illusory to real.

As the heavens and earth regained their original look, the entrance to a dimensional passageway appeared atop the icy plains.

Gazing over from outside, it was completely black as it resembled a black hole, with streaks of electricity flickering within that were visible at times whilst indistinct at others.

# HSSB1083: Grand Illusory Spatial Thunder

---

Yan Zhaoge and the others had thoughtful looks on their faces as they saw the streaks of electricity within the black hole.

The Northern Exalt sighed, “That is Grand Illusory Spatial Thunder, right?”

The Encompassing Emperor said, “Its essence has already dispersed as it cannot be considered true Grand Illusory Spatial Thunder. Still, actual Grand Illusory Spatial Thunder might appear as we head deeper into this illusory space.”

Grand Illusory Spatial Thunder was one of those famed Nine Heavenly Immortal Thunders of pre-Great Calamity times.

It was ranked second amongst the Nine Heavenly Immortal Thunders, subordinate only to the legendary Primordial Ancestral Thunder as it was above the likes of the Five Elements Creation Thunder and Heart’s Will Thunder.

“If there really is Grand Illusory Spatial Thunder disturbing things, we will probably face greater obstacles on this journey,” Yan Zhaoge gazed at that black hole.

The Northern Exalt said, “This old man will wait here. You can set off anytime you want.”

The Brocade Emperor nodded slightly, “We will go now then.”

He waved his sleeve, bringing along Meng Wan as they were first to enter that dimensional passageway.

“Please await, Northern Exalt,” Yan Zhaoge cupped his hands towards the Northern Exalt, next entering the dimensional passageway alongside the Encompassing Emperor.

The Northern Exalt watched them leave before entering the meditative position at the entrance of the dimensional passageway whereupon he remained unmoving.

After a while, that dimensional passageway too vanished once again.

Atop the icy plains, only his old, tranquil figure remained amidst the snow.

As Yan Zhaoge entered this dimensional passageway, it was not like when he had travelled to other foreign dimensions wherein wondrous scenes would appear before his eyes.

This place was constantly pitch black with nothing visible within at all besides bolts of electricity that flickered from time to time.

As one traversed this dimensional passageway, they would clearly be able to sense that the pressure from the dimensional boundaries was filled with malicious intent towards them.

Those with somewhat lower cultivation bases would probably be crushed into misshapen lumps of flesh and blood mere moments after they entered.

Without the protection of the Brocade Emperor, Meng Wan would not be able to traverse the area.

Yan Zhaoge glanced at her. From how the Brocade Emperor was currently acting, Meng Wan's safety should still be guaranteed for the time being.

Yet, one could never be a hundred percent certain of this as the Brocade Emperor's current thoughts were much too unpredictable.

If a slight fluctuation occurred with his mindset, without him even having to do anything himself, just him ignoring Meng Wan and letting her face this dimensional passageway on her own would already be fatal for her.

It was necessary for Yan Zhaoge to constantly pay attention to the state the Brocade Emperor was in.

This was, of course, also for he himself just as much as it was for

Meng Wan.

Yan Zhaoge who never feared imagining the worst in others had sufficient grounds to suspect that the Brocade Emperor might suddenly erupt at any time, making a move and wounding someone.

It was just that it was not Meng Wan that he would target but he, Yan Zhaoge!

If his guess regarding the Brocade Emperor's cultivation path was correct and aside from eliminating Meng Wan and Fu Ting, he also needed the Grand Simplicity Splendour Cloud for advancement, both he and Yan Di were obstacles that stood in his path.

The greatest obstacle would definitely be Yan Di. Still, Yan Zhaoge would surely not stay out of it and do nothing.

Yan Zhaoge had borrowed the power of the Later Earth Text to withstand the Heaven Emperor in the Royal Reed Sea.

Compared to experts who had already opened the door to Immortality, he was still just a junior.

Normally, besides like with the Heaven Emperor for whom strong enmity did exist between them, considering their lofty statuses, True Immortals would not lower themselves to the point of making things difficult for Immortal Bridge Martial Saints.

The problem, though, was that the Brocade Emperor was not normal right now...

If he really walked the unfeeling path, only considering cost and benefits, gains and detriments while not caring about things like face, he would thus naturally move unblinkingly to remove a potential obstacle that could be a threat to him in the future.

Yan Zhaoge had no choice but to consider more eventualities as he travelled with such a figure.

The Encompassing Emperor had come along with the intention



of watching the Brocade Emperor and preventing him from causing any other major disturbances.

Still, it was difficult indeed to predict what the Encompassing Emperor's view on Meng Wan and Fu Ting might be.

Aside from the Upper Exalt Chen Qianhua who could not be appraised by normal standards, all the higher echelon experts of the World beyond Worlds would naturally wish for the Brocade Emperor to quickly recover.

Still, they would probably have differing thoughts on the method that he should recover by.

As Yan Zhaoge pondered on, he spied Meng Wan suddenly looking over in his direction.

Yan Zhaoge could vaguely detect some worry within those clear, intelligent doelike eyes of hers.

“A smart girl indeed,” Yan Zhaoge thought.

While she might not possess sufficient understanding of the Brocade Emperor's situation and the predicament that she was in, Meng Wan still felt unease as she sensed that something was strange.

She had previously been confined at Wutong Slope before suddenly being released, whereupon she had met her birth father for the first time.

While the Brocade Emperor had shown no abnormalities on the surface, he had brought her along in just wandering randomly through extradimensional space for a good number of days.

Upon their return to the World beyond Worlds, events had transpired one after another.

Moving her birth mother's grave, meeting her Master whom she missed, looking for her good friend Feng Yunsheng who had gone missing for a while-Meng Wan could feel a father's warmth from

all of these things.

It was just that when considering all that had previously occurred, the intelligent Meng Wan just felt that there was something strange somewhere.

In front of the Brocade Emperor, Yan Zhaoge could clarify nothing as he could not even send over a warning via sound transmission in secret.

Facing Meng Wan's inquiring gaze, Yan Zhaoge showed no reaction whatsoever, pretending not to have seen it.

Seeing this, Meng Wan retracted her gaze, feeling that she had gotten her answer.

That silence actually already spoke volumes.

Yan Zhaoge should have felt puzzled and uncomprehending otherwise.

Since Yan Zhaoge had openly shown no reaction, it meant that he clearly understood what she was asking, thus confirming her guess indirectly!

It was just that while she had gotten her answer, it did not call for much optimism.

Fortunately, Meng Wan had already long since mentally prepared herself for this as she could only hope that all went well now.

As the group traversed the endless darkness, dim radiance suddenly lit up before them

It was not the first time that Yan Zhaoge was travelling amidst extradimensional space. Still, gazing over, he saw that the scenes before him were different from how they usually were.

The twinkling of starlight could not be seen amidst the gloomy darkness of space as there was only that lustrous dim radiance.

Formless space seemed to have gained a form at this moment as

its surface was polluted with filth.

“Truly a land of tranquil stream,” Yan Zhaoge nodded to himself, with this being his very first time experiencing this in person while he had read descriptions of this kind of place in records before too.

This place was somewhat but not really like the Nine Underworlds and somewhat but not really like the human realm, being mystically wondrous in its own right.

There were many similar lands of tranquil streams of varying sizes, but the one that Yan Zhaoge and the others were currently in was rather more vast.

They travelled within as they attempted to find Feng Yunsheng’s tracks.

Lands of tranquil streams had perilous environments as many strange beasts were born within, their personalities fierce and brutal as they resembled devils of the Nine Underworlds. There were quite a few experts amongst them too.

This corresponded with what Feng Yunsheng had had in mind for a training ground.

It had already been many years since she entered. Yan Zhaoge and the others did not think that they might be able to locate her so quickly as they were just trying to locate some clues or traces that she could have left behind.

The Brocade Emperor and the Encompassing Emperor led the way, their sensory abilities surpassing the norm by far even within the land of tranquil stream as the rampant beasts were also completely incapable of opposing them. With that, they were advancing at an extremely high speed.

They continually moved and stopped, tirelessly searching.

Due to the time that had passed, the earliest traces left behind by Feng Yunsheng were already no more.

Only after half a month of searching were they able to coincidentally grasp some of her movements.

As time passed and they went deeper in, more and more traces of Feng Yunsheng could be found.

Yet, a solemn expression gradually appeared on their faces.

As they ventured deeper in, they could vaguely sense that they were getting closer and closer to the terrifying Nine Underworlds.

At this point in time, Feng Yunsheng was still nowhere to be seen.

# HSSB1084: Searching the Nine Underworlds

---

The deeper they ventured within, the easier it was to sense that terrifying aura of the Nine Underworlds that bewitched one's heart.

Yan Zhaoge, the Brocade Emperor and the Encompassing Emperor were naturally unaffected.

With Meng Wan's cultivation base, she was already unable to go on normally as corroded by the power of the Nine Underworlds, she would gradually come to lose her rationality.

However firm a will she had, not being someone without feelings or desires, she would inevitably be affected by this.

Only with the jade pendant that the Brocade Emperor now handed her to cleanse her mind and help her in focusing was she able to continue forging forward.

Yan Zhaoge and the others had no intention of interacting with the local beasts that also posed no threat to them as they simply swept them all up.

Things were much more efficient as they just followed the traces left behind by Feng Yunsheng.

After walking like this for a few days, Yan Zhaoge and the others suddenly slowed down.

Everyone's expressions turned solemn as they focused on the space before them.

They were already at the boundary of the land of tranquil stream as any further and they would be nearing the source of the corrosion here, the place where it intersected with the Nine Underworlds.

Feng Yunsheng still seemed to have proceeded forward.

Yan Zhaoge searched around the surrounding area and

discovered no other clues.

It seemed that their only option was to continue advancing.

The Encompassing Emperor asked slowly, “Did this Little Friend Feng bring along the Extreme Yin Crown when leaving Broad Creed Mountain for adventuring?”

He too was already aware that Feng Yunsheng was the person from Broad Creed Mountain who wielded the Extreme Yin Crown.

“My wife has always been in charge of the Extreme Yin Crown,” Yan Zhaoge answered.

Meng Wan’s expression was normal as she had completely come to peace with losing the Extreme Yin Crown in that defeat to Feng Yunsheng in what had been like a destined battle that year.

The Encompassing Emperor muttered aloud, “I wonder if Little Friend Feng has already reached the Seeing Divinity stage.”

While there had been some traces left behind by Feng Yunsheng along the way, they had already diminished over time, without any details so to speak of as it was hence difficult to judge Feng Yunsheng’s current cultivation base and mentality from it.

“If senior apprentice-sister Feng has successfully broken through space to see true Divinity, she will be able to exert the full power of the Extreme Yin Crown over a short duration,” Also a Maiden of Extreme Yin, having once had the Crown for many years, Meng Wan was extremely clear on this.

It was unknown how the Exalted Lunar Luminary had forged this Sacred Artifact in the past such that it was different from other Sacred Artifacts.

Yan Zhaoge said mildly, “While my wife had the intention of training, she would definitely realise the perils the Nine Underworlds entail and stay out of such dangerous situations.”

Yan Zhaoge understood what the Encompassing Emperor was

worried about.

If Feng Yunsheng was able to sufficiently exert the power of the Extreme Yin Crown, not only would it be beneficial for her protection, it would also assist her in more effectively resisting the beguiling effects of the Nine Underworlds and stabilising her mind.

The Extreme Yin Crown was a Sacred Artifact on the same level as the Extreme Yang Seal as it had great strength within the mortal realm.

If she did not encounter great devils equivalent to the Immortal realm of Daoism, Feng Yunsheng would still be relatively safe even if she entered the Nine Underworlds.

Yet, if she had yet to attain the Seeing Divinity stage and could not sufficiently exert the power of the Extreme Yin Crown, even if Feng Yunsheng could use a portion of its strength, whether she might be able to emerge from it safely if she entered its depths was very hard to say indeed.

It would be a whole different matter altogether if as a Merging Avatar Martial Saint, she had been bewitched by the Nine Underworlds, only then having ventured so deeply within.

They would have to carefully reconsider their search for Feng Yunsheng this time.

Still, since they had already come, Yan Zhaoze would certainly not let things go just like that.

“We should still go in and look around for a while,” The Brocade Emperor now said, “Perhaps Little Friend Feng is in need of our help right now?”

The Encompassing Emperor nodded, “Let us go then.”

As they ventured onwards, a shocking sound resounded by their ears which grew louder and louder till it eventually became deafening.

The light amidst the dim darkness before them gradually dispersed, black fog suffusing the area as a vicious, sinister bloodred lustre vaguely flickered.

This was no longer a crevice to the Nine Underworlds like in the Eight Extremities World as it was an existence like a boundless, bitter sea that faced the Nine Underworlds directly.

“This place is rather strange. While the devilish qi of the Nine Underworlds has also corroded space, it has not been a smooth process,” Glancing around, the Brocade Emperor said leisurely, “It is as if there is some entity which has interrupted the corrosive effect of the Nine Underworlds on space.”

The Encompassing Emperor looked around for a moment before nodding, “While related to Grand Illusory Spatial Thunder, it does not seem to be just that.”

They continued walking, finally completely entering that dense black fog.

As they strode forth, the world before them instantly changed completely.

The feeling was not like when one travelled from the Eight Extremities World to the Vast Ocean World or Floating Life World, or even to the World beyond Worlds.

Instead, it was as if one had themselves become a different lifeform, switching to a different state of being.

It was like the fleshly body had died and the soul had left the body, going from a person to a spirit.

The entire universe was barren and also restless.

Once they entered, let alone Meng Wan, even Yan Zhaoge felt slightly uncomfortable.

They had previously been in other worlds at the end of the day as they faced the assault of the devilish qi of the Nine Underworlds.



Now that they were in the actual Nine Underworlds, that power which bewitched one's mind-how would it only be a mere tenfold, hundredfold increase?

Yan Zhaoge even felt that the Faceless Devil Scripture that he had only referred to and never actually cultivated in for real before seemed to have gained a life of its own.

Borrowing the power of the Nine Underworlds, the text of the Faceless Devil Scripture in Yan Zhaoge's memories vaguely sought to form a seed in his body to sprout within his soul.

After it had developed and grown, that would be when it tried to take over him.

Besides the Faceless Devil Scripture, there were also many other devilish arts that seemed like they were going to draw over devilish qi, becoming devils in their own right.

It was just that none of these were as intense as the Faceless Devil Scripture.

"The Nine Underworlds is remarkable indeed. I wonder how Yunsheng is doing now," Yan Zhaoge calmed himself and circulated his profound arts, suppressing and wiping out all these inner devils.

He paid attention to the state of the Brocade Emperor beside him.

With how the Brocade Emperor was right now, one might say that it would be extremely easy for the Nine Underworlds to make use of this chance and assault him.

While he might not be physically compromised right now, the contrary should be true for his mind.

The Encompassing Emperor thought the same as Yan Zhaoge on this. Thus, he had come along this time in case such a thing happened.

The Brocade Emperor, though, appeared as per usual and wholly

unaware as he seemed not to take any notice of how the two were paying attention to him.

He simply continued searching for traces left behind by Feng Yunsheng while making sure that Meng Wan was still doing okay.

With different thoughts in mind, they continued advancing forward in this world in which humans should not dwell.

The auras of living people instantly drew the attention of numerous devils.

Still, the devils that appeared in the vicinity were merely at the level of human Martial Saints at most as they naturally had no way of impeding the footsteps of Yan Zhaoge and the others.

Still, not long after they had entered, Yan Zhaoge and the others suddenly felt that the devilish qi about the area seemed to have gradually gotten lighter.

They exchanged glances, “There is indeed a unique existence interfering with this region of the Nine Underworlds and lessening its encroachment on surrounding dimensions.”

Yan Zhaoge and the others immediately identified that direction and proceeded where the devilish qi was weaker.

As they approached, the devilish qi steadily diminished.

There was a biting cold feel which was growing stronger and stronger.

Yan Zhaoge, the Encompassing Emperor and the Brocade Emperor exchanged looks, blurting out simultaneously, “Sword-intent?”

# HSSB1085: Sword God, Sword Devil

---

It was indeed sword-intent.

What was even more worthy of attention was that it was not just a single source of sword-intent.

Instead, two sword-intents were colliding with ringing, metallic sounds as they clashed in mid-air.

The ringing of the swords seemed to traverse distant time, arriving all the way in the present age.

Even from a great distance away, that sharp, biting sword-intent caused a chill to run throughout one's entire body.

As Yan Zhaoge and the others approached and felt that sword-intent, their hearts jolted in unison.

The gazes of the Brocade Emperor and the Encompassing Emperor simultaneously fell on Yan Zhaoge.

Yan Zhaoge muttered aloud, "Jade Illusory Heaven Opening Sword..."

From his interactions with Wang Pu and the others at Kunlun Mountain, he was not unfamiliar with the Jade Illusory Heaven Opening Sword.

Moreover, he had personally witnessed that shocking sword by the Sword Sovereign Yue Zhenbei in the Royal Reed Sea that year which had split the heavens and opened the world.

Yan Zhaoge discovered that one of these two sword-intents was precisely of the Jade Illusory Heaven Opening Sword which had been created by his own grandfather, Yan Xingtang.

Yue Zhenbei's sword-intent had been inherited from him, pure and refined.

The Brocade Emperor and the Encompassing Emperor clearly recognised this sword-intent too as the latter wondered aloud, "I

just wonder if this was left behind by the Sword Sovereign in the past, or if it was...the Exalted Gold Luminary?”

“The other sword-intent is not of the Prime Clear lineage, though,” The Brocade Emperor appeared rather interested.

While the combatants from back then had possessed deep cultivation bases, having been able to persist till now with such intact integrity without being corroded by the Nine Underworlds was in large part due to the fact that these two clashing sword-intents had attained a subtle equilibrium, thereby resisting the weathering of time together.

The other sword-intent was clearly suppressed by the Jade Illusory Heaven Opening Sword. Still it was remarkable nevertheless as it could still be considered a rare existence beneath the heavens.

Yan Zhaoge and the two Emperors could all tell that it was not from any of the Numinous Treasure Four Swords of the Prime Clear lineage.

The Prime Clear lineage’s Numinous Treasure Four Swords had collectively always been the highest ever accomplishment in the dao of the sword for Daoism.

In the eyes of many Daoist martial practitioners, especially those of the Prime Clear direct lineage, the Numinous Treasure Four Swords were also the greatest ever sword arts existing in this world.

Over the years, some challengers would only occasionally appear who possessed the qualifications to challenge the sword arts of the Prime Clear lineage.

Yet, it was merely being qualified.

For instance, there was Cultivated Deity Jade Cauldron from the legendary era of the Investiture of the Gods, a personal disciple of the founder of the Jade Clear lineage, the Primordial Heavenly

Lord.

For instance, there was the Purple Tenuity Emperor who had later been one of the Four Imperials of Daoism. He had created a new lineage of his own from one of the Grand Clear direct lineage's Later Heaven Five Ultimates.

The two of them had been acclaimed alongside the Lord of Plentiful Treasure of the Prime Clear direct lineage as Daoism's three peak sword cultivators.

In truth, though, there were many more powerful sword experts of the Prime Clear lineage as the Lord of Plentiful Treasure was simply the best amongst them.

Outside of Daoism, a famed swordsman had once been produced from Buddhism just after the Gautama Buddha had Transcended. It had been a real sight indeed as he had then sparred with descendants of the Prime Clear lineage.

Still, after the life cycle of that Buddhist swordsman had ended, Buddhism's sword dao had again fallen silent.

Still, one had to note that while these experts had been outstanding as they had been able to compete with sword cultivators of the Prime Clear lineage, the sword daos of their legacies ultimately were still less mighty and renowned than the Numinous Treasure Four Swords.

Perhaps it should be said that they had challenged not the Prime Clear lineage's sword dao, but rather merely the Prime Clear lineage's sword cultivators.

The first actual challenge to the Prime Clear lineage's sword dao had actually come after the Great Calamity.

It was Yan Zhaoge's grandfather, the Exalted Gold Luminary Yan Xingtang, who had made a name for himself on the world's stage, creating the Jade Illusory Heaven Opening Sword atop the sword dao of Cultivated Deity Jade Cauldron, thus creating a real

opponent for the Numinous Treasure Four Swords for the first time.

Of course, it could not be said that the current Jade Illusory Heaven Opening Sword was definitely comparable to the Numinous Treasure Four Swords.

Still, those with vision could all discern the potential within.

The Jade Illusory Heaven Opening Sword was only restricted in its accomplishments because Yan Xingtang himself had not reached the peak with his cultivation base.

If he had not died young, with his talents and genius, his sword arts would surely have advanced unceasingly along with his cultivation base.

He would eventually have created an ultimate sword art that was truly on the level of the Numinous Treasure Four Swords.

Before this, it was the Purple Tenuity Emperor who had had the greatest chance of doing so. Still, all such efforts had ceased following the Great Calamity.

That the same fate had befallen Yan Xingtang caused countless people to sigh wistfully.

Still, in the Nine Underworlds, there was currently a sword art that was not of the Prime Clear direct lineage which was able to compete with the Jade Illusory Heaven Opening Sword.

It was not a sword art of Buddhism or the sword arts of the Purple Tenuity Emperor.

Instead, it was a...devilish sword!

“I don’t think I’ve ever heard of such a sword art of the devilish dao from pre-Great Calamity times...” Yan Zhaoge mused as he looked at the Brocade Emperor and the Encompassing Emperor.

The Encompassing Emperor pondered, “Thinking about it more deeply, this sword-intent of the Jade Illusory Heaven Opening

Sword was more probably left behind by the Exalted Gold Luminary.”

“In the devilish domain of the Nine Underworlds, battling the Jade Illusory Heaven Opening Sword in a battle of the sword-an old legend vaguely comes to mind.”

“Sword Devil, Yin Shiyang!” The Brocade Emperor agreed.

Yan Zhaoge’s gaze flickered, “Sword...Devil?”

The Brocade Emperor said, “Let us not make baseless speculations. We should get closer and take a look.”

“Good idea,” Yan Zhaoge nodded as they now proceeded up ahead.

The black fog before them gradually faded, the devilish qi of the Nine Underworlds now no more as lustrous white light instead flickered that was exceptionally conspicuous within this devilish domain.

A metallic lustre was vaguely visible on the surface of the white light as a thunderous roar vaguely seemed to resound too.

Yan Zhaoge and the others realised, “Right, so there are traces left behind by Grand Illusory Spatial Thunder here. Coupled with the two clashing sword-intents, it is no wonder that it has been able to remain in so strong a state after so long a time.”

While the Immortal Thunder itself was no longer in existence, along with the two sword-intents, it had once created a small, independent space within this corner of the Nine Underworlds in the past.

While everyone felt a biting cold chill from the two sword-intents as they entered their domain, they were not attacked by them.

Within this dimension, coming into contact with that intermingling sword-intent, a scene instantly appeared before their eyes.

Two shocking sword-lights, one black and one white, flew over from the distant sky, cleaving apart endless devilish qi and dark soil of the Nine Underworlds as marks were left behind in the heavens and earth of the devilish domain.

The sword-lights collectively descended, shattering a clump of Grand Illusory Spatial Thunder as a new dimensional space was ultimately formed.

Yan Zhaoge knew that this depicted how the place had been formed back then. He gazed towards the source of the sword-lights with all his might.

Two silhouettes were visible there, one purple and one black.

They suddenly halted, two men distinctly coming into view.

The black-clothed man roared towards the heavens, “Alas, I still cannot defeat you!”

There was endless hatred, stubbornness, fury, indignation, unwillingness and a sense of loss therein that seemed to have condensed to become tangible, surpassing the boundaries of space and time to encompass the entire space.

Across from him, a purple-clothed youth stood composedly with his solitary sword.

The scenes ended at that point.

Still, before they vanished, Yan Zhaoge caught a glimpse of that purple-clothed youth’s features.

It was none other than his grandfather, the Exalted Gold Luminary and Sword God, Yan Xingtang!

“Your grandfather, the Exalted Gold Luminary, experienced countless battles in the past. Besides accomplishing the name of Sword God as he dominated the Roving Jade Heavens, he wrote many other legends too.”

The Encompassing Emperor said slowly, “One of these was his



great battle with the Sword Devil, Yin Shiyang.”

“No one knows exactly what happened. Ultimately, though, after defeating the Sword Emperor, the Sword God slew the Sword Devil as well!”

# HSSB1086: Twelve Devilish Gods

---

“Yin Shiyang...” Yan Zhaoge repeated that name.

The Encompassing Emperor glanced at Yan Zhaoge, no longer having any reservations as he recalled what had happened at Star Reflecting Lake, “It is rumoured that the Sword Devil Yin Shiyang used to be a martial practitioner beneath the reign of the Immortal Court.”

“He possessed outstanding talent rare in this world for the dao of the sword.”

“Sadly, he cultivated at the Immortal Court ever since young, worshipping the Immeasurable Heavenly Lord. While he pushed open the door to Immortality afterwards, the dao that he had comprehended was lacking as his foundation was hence unstable.”

The Encompassing Emperor shook his head slightly, “It should be said that he was held back. If he had been able to enter the tutelage of one of orthodox Daoism, his future would probably have been immeasurable.”

He restricted his voice in saying so, not letting his words enter Meng Wan’s ears.

If Meng Wan learnt too much about the Immortal Court and the Immeasurable Heavenly Lord, she would naturally come to understand that the Brocade Emperor had not considered her welfare in the least back at Star Reflecting Lake.

The Brocade Emperor did not mind others knowing that cultivation deviation had befallen him.

Still, it was different for Meng Wan.

It was too hard to predict what sort of reaction the Brocade Emperor might have if she learnt the truth.

Therefore, while he would not hold back in speaking to Yan

Zhaoge about this, the Encompassing Emperor still chose the method of sound transmission so as to keep Meng Wan from listening too.

The Brocade Emperor said mildly, “While Yin Shiyang of the legends was of the Immortal Court, his strength at the same cultivation level was not much inferior to those from our orthodox Daoism as it even surpassed many others.”

Yan Zhaoge stroked his lower chin, “That is indeed quite a remarkable feat.”

“Back then, his first battle of the sword with your grandfather, Senior Yan, ended tragically. As he cherished talent and felt it a pity, your grandfather spared his life,” The Encompassing Emperor continued, “He was unresigned and challenged him again, meeting yet another tragic defeat.”

“In the end, in order to remedy his deficiencies for a decisive battle with your grandfather, Yin Shiyang forsook the external dao of the Immortal Court and joined the Nine Underworlds, becoming a devil right there and then.”

Hearing this, Yan Zhaoge looked thoughtfully at the Encompassing Emperor.

The Encompassing Emperor nodded, “The treasured light of the power of faith within the bodies of martial practitioners of the Immortal Court is hard to get rid of as all potential repercussions come with but a single thought on the Immeasurable Heavenly Lord’s part.”

“Even if one realises the truth and wishes to start all over again, that would be but a mere delusion.”

“Still, this is not absolute as methods do exist. This old man is aware of two of these. One is being illuminated by Buddhism, which is actually switching a target for worship.”

Hearing this, Yan Zhaoge said ponderingly, “The other is to fall

to the dark side, becoming a devil of the Nine Underworlds.”

The Encompassing Emperor said, “While it is similarly a path of no return, it still stays an option.”

“And so, Yin Shiyang fell to the Nine Underworlds as a Sword Devil thus appeared in this world.”

The Brocade Emperor said, “After Yin Shiyang became a devil and comprehended the supreme principles of the heavens and earth through the devilish dao, his strength indeed skyrocketed, his talents no longer being wasted. Yet, the Sword Devil still could not rival the Sword God in the end as he was slain by your grandfather’s sword.”

“While your grandfather showed no mercy in exterminating a devil, he still felt pity at Yin Shiyang’s talent.”

“It is rumoured that he once said that not being able to battle with Yin Shiyang from the orthodox tradition of the Three Purities is something he will always feel to be a real pity indeed. Victory and defeat would have been difficult to predict.”

The Brocade Emperor had a distant look on his face, “In that era, amongst the sword cultivators of post-Great Calamity times, besides his wife, the Sword Emperor, there was only Yin Shiyang whom your grandfather evaluated in such a way.”

Yan Zhaoge nodded, saying nothing as they continued proceeding forward amidst the dimensional space.

As he neared those two coiling sword-lights, his mind instantly shook upon contact with that black sword-light.

Biting, cold, sharp, tough, brutal, rampant.

That tyrannical sword-intent never bowed its head for a single moment as it struggled unceasingly against the Jade Illusory Heaven Opening Sword that it was being suppressed by.

Dwindled down by time, this sword-intent seemed somewhat

unreal as it was more like a remnant of old times, with one being unable to analyse the concept within.

Still, sensing its flavour, Yan Zhaoge was still able to experience its former flair.

Several scenes seemingly appeared in Yan Zhaoge's mind.

Yin Shiyang who had been devout towards the dao in worshipping the Immeasurable Heavenly Lord and possessed a transcendent cultivation base in the Immortal Court had faced a tragic defeat when at his most confident and high-spirited at his prime.

That purple-clothed youth and the sword in his hand had become the lifelong nightmare and target of Yin Shiyang's passions that he would never be able to shake off as his very fate had been changed.

“YAN! XING! TANG!!!”

The furious, unresigned howl pierced through millennia, reverberating unceasingly in Yan Zhaoge's ears.

Facing defeat at every single battle, battling once more with every single defeat.

The martial practitioner of the Immortal Court with a firm conviction in the Immeasurable Heavenly Lord had ultimately fallen resolutely to the dark side, becoming a devil.

Whatever the means, whatever the cause, however many times he failed, however difficult the road ahead might be, he would never give up. He would definitely defeat that person!

This powerful desire appeared tangible as it manifested to form this vicious sword-intent of the Devil Heavenly Sword up ahead, transforming into the peak devilish sword art between the heavens and earth in seeking to compete with that sword which opened the heavens and decide a final victor between them once and for all.

The scenes finally came to rest on the image of Yang Xingtang.

“The current you still lack depth as you have only just accomplished your sword dao. You are still not my opponent. Were you a human, I would be willing to let you go and wait for you to attain major accomplishment in your sword dao, after which we would then truly decide a victor between us.”

“Yet, now that you have become a devil, even having become the manifestation of one of the Twelve Devilish Gods, I can show you no mercy with my sword.”

Yan Xingtang truly felt it to be regretful as he said, “A pity you were born in the Immortal Court.”

Yan Zhaoge’s mood was rather complex as he watched this scene play out.

His grandfather, the Exalted Gold Luminary and Sword God Yan Xingtang, was hailed as the number one expert in the dao of the sword for Daoism in post-Great Calamity times.

The ‘for Daoism’ part was only added on because of Yan Xingtang’s humility.

It might originate from the fact that he had always regretted being unable to battle the Sword Devil Yin Shiyang at his peak, truly deciding a victor between them.

As for Di Qinglian, as they were family, he was not interested in competing with her.

“It looks like the sword-light here was only inadvertently left behind when my grandfather battled the Sword Devil,” Despite his rather complex mood, Yan Zhaoge’s focus quickly shifted elsewhere, “This was not the battlefield or where the Sword Devil perished and came to rest.”

The Encompassing Emperor agreed, “Indeed.”

“The Sword Devil...” Yan Zhaoge muttered, “In rising greatly in strength when becoming a devil, Yin Shiyang must not have been an ordinary devil. Instead, he must have fused with one of the

perished great devils from the past.”

“If it is the Twelve Devilish Gods, Sword Devil, Sword Devil...he should have been the manifestation of one of the Six Supreme Devils who bears the position of Aged Metal of the Five Elements?”

The Brocade Emperor glanced at Yan Zhaoge, “I heard from Little Red Lotus that you bear the Faceless Devilish Scripture. It looks like you have a high understanding of the Nine Underworlds. It must not have been from Wang Pu, Cao Jie and the others that you heard about the Twelve Devilish Gods, right?”

Yan Zhaoge answered candidly, “I do really know quite a bit about it, though my knowledge is still limited. However, I do know a little about the Twelve Devilish Gods.”

He turned to look at the Jade Illusory Heaven Opening Sword and Devil Heavenly Sword, “The Twelve Devilish Gods are the peak devils in this world, the head of the devilish dao and the monarchs of the myriad devils.”

“The Twelve Devilish Gods are further categorised into the Six Ancestral Devils and the Six Supreme Devils. At the Six Ancestral Devils’ head, as the ancestor of the myriad devils, is the Primordial Heaven Devil from whom the devilish dao originates. He once competed for the position of ‘primordial’ with our Daoism’s Jade Clear lineage’s founder, the Primordial Heavenly Lord.”

# HSSB1087: The peak of the Devils

---

When talking about the devils of the Nine Underworlds, Yan Zhaoge, the Encompassing Emperor and the Brocade Emperor no longer kept it from Meng Wan.

As Meng Wan who was listening quietly heard the name of the Primordial Heavenly Lord now, she could not help but exclaim, “While I knew the Nine Underworlds to be terrifying when in the Eight Extremities World back then, I never once thought that it is actually so powerful.”

Yan Zhaoge said, “While over the ages, the dao flourishes with the devils diminished most of the time, no one would deny the strength of the Nine Underworlds.”

“The Primordial Heaven Devil probably lost against the founder of the Jade Clear lineage?” Meng Wan asked.

Yan Zhaoge said, “This is only natural. That is why the Primordial Heavenly Lord is still the Primordial Heavenly Lord whereas the Primordial Heavenly Devil had to be reduced to the Primordial Heaven Devil.”

The Encompassing Emperor said, “The Primordial Heaven Devil indeed lost. Afterwards, he was suppressed by the Primordial Heavenly Lord and prevented from appearing again. If he ever reappears, though, that would probably be a scene from the end of the world.”

“Speaking of the descent of the end of the world, we would have to look at the Finality Law Heavenly Devil,” The Brocade Emperor now said, “After all, that is an existence like the Lord of Numinous Treasure who signifies all things going from being to nothing.”

Meng Wan recited, “The Finality Law Heavenly Devil...”

Beside her, Yan Zhaoge explained, “Even though they are called the Twelve Devilish Gods, one of them has never appeared in this



world as he has always been missing from his seat. He is the final one of the Six Ancestral Devils.”

“The Ancestral Devils are all gods of earlier heaven times that existed before the heavens and earth were split apart and creation began. He is the sole exception.”

“Despite being an Ancestral Devil, an ancestor of the myriad devils, his birth will only be at the end of the world, at the finality of later heaven.”

“As for what his real title is, that is actually still an unknown. ‘Finality Law Heavenly Devil’ is just a placeholder which others addressed him by. Over time, it eventually became his title.”

Meng Wan realised, “Like the Lord of Numinous Treasure, the founder of the Prime Clear lineage, he signifies all things going from being to nothing, with everything entering destruction and the laws of finality descending as creation ceases to exist?”

The Encompassing Emperor nodded, “That’s right. The Finality Law Heavenly Devil signifies the end of the world. The moment he descends into this world will also signify that a true great tribulation has come.”

“The Primordial Heaven Devil and the Finality Law Heavenly Devil who are the first and last are already so powerful. The other four of the Six Ancestral Devils would surely not be simple too,” Meng Wan sighed as she said.

Yan Zhaoge smiled, “That’s right, isn’t it?”

He pointed at the Nine Underworlds beside them, “This Nine Underworlds is formed of the corpse of the second Ancestral Devil after the Primordial Heaven Devil, the Existence Creation Heavenly Devil.”

Meng Wan’s gaze flickered, “I remember it being stated in the ancient records that the size of the Nine Underworlds is such that it and the entire human realm in pre-Great Calamity times were

like two equivalent extremities. A world such as this is actually formed from the corpse of a great devil?”

The Brocade Emperor laughed, “Wan’er, while the Existence Creation Heavenly Devil died, we must still look at who killed him to decide on whether he was powerful or not.”

“The one who slew the Existence Creation Heavenly Devil was none other than one of the founders of our Daoism’s Three Clear lineages, the Lord of Numinous Treasure.”

Meng Wan blinked, “Well, it is no wonder then.”

His hands behind his back, the Brocade Emperor looked leisurely beyond this dimensional space at the darkness of the Nine Underworlds, “While this and the human realm were like two extremities, the Nine Underworlds is a desolate wilderness at the end of the day. Therefore, it naturally tries to encroach on the great thousand worlds of our human realm.”

“This might be a sort of yearning.”

“The Nine Underworlds borders the area where the Primordial Heaven Devil is sealed, preserving the last bit of vitality for the Devils. In order to avoid the Primordial Heaven Devil breaking out from his seal, it is hard to go all out in trying to exterminate every last one of the Nine Underworlds’ devils.”

The Brocade Emperor turned and glanced at Yan Zhaoge, “After the Primordial Heaven Devil and the Existence Creation Heavenly Devil, the third Ancestral Devil is called the Grand Supreme Heavenly Devil while the fourth is called the Faceless Heavenly Devil.”

Meng Wan was slightly taken aback, “Grand Supreme...Heavenly Devil?”

Yan Zhaoge said mildly, “The Grand Supreme Heavenly Devil is the devilish clone of the founder of one of Daoism’s Three Clear lineages, the Lord of the Dao and Virtue. The Faceless Heavenly

Devil was the devilish clone of the Gautama Buddha of Buddhism.”

“The two peak bigwigs used their supreme intelligence and might to wrest and occupy the seat of the Ancestral Devils, cleaving the vitality of the Devils during earlier heaven times to some extent. Hence, over millennia past, it is always the dao that is flourishing with the Devils diminished most of the time.”

“Even when the Devils do gain an advantage, those times are merely fleeing and temporary.”

“Therefore, excluding the Sixth Ancestral Devil who has never truly descended into this world, the only of them who was often active back then was the Fifth Ancestral Devil, the Vast Freedom Heavenly Devil,” Yan Zhaoge now shrugged, “Still, that was already a very long time ago.”

“In this day and age, Ancestral Devils have rarely appeared since long, long before the Great Calamity. Those who rampage in this world are the later six of the Twelve Devilish Gods, the Six Supreme Devils.”

Yan Zhaoge’s gaze fell on the two entangled sword-intents, “This Yin Shiyang, the Sword Devil, has merged with the devil of the Six Supreme Devils who possesses the seat of aged metal.”

A lengthy process was needed from when one became a devil to when they truly became the manifestation of a Devilish God, a monarch of Devils.

It was just that this lengthy process had been extremely short for Yin Shiyang who had already become the manifestation of a Supreme Devil.

This had already been prematurely terminated by Yin Shiyang before it could truly bear fruition.

The Sword Devil Yin Shiyang had thus become history.

The Encompassing Emperor said, “While Yin Shiyang is dead, the Supreme Devil is unextinguished, only awaiting its next rebirth.

Previously occupying the seat of aged metal of the Five Elements were numerous devils such as the Spear Devil and the Sabre Devil. With a Sword Devil Yin Shiyang having been produced in post-Great Calamity times, another will surely appear in the future as that devil rises from the ashes.”

The so-called Six Supreme Devils referred to the Heart Devil and the Devils of the Five Elements.

The names of the Devils of the Five Elements were not fixed.

For example, the devil who had occupied the seat of Metal after the initial Spear Devil had perished was the Sabre Devil, after which many had come and gone till the Sword Devil Yin Shiyang.

Of the devils who had occupied the seat of Earth, there had been the Earth Devil, the Soil Devil and the Stone Devil etcetera.

Of the devils who had occupied the seat of Water, there had been the Ice Devil, the Water Devil, the Fog Devil and the Blood Devil etcetera.

Some of these repeated themselves, though it was always a different person who got manifested as that same Devil.

Over the course of history, while numerous great devils had perished completely, not being reborn after they were extinguished, none of the Twelve Devilish Gods had even fallen for good aside from the Existence Creation Heavenly Devil.

However, they still needed luck and opportunity in order to return after having died.

Lifeforms that could become their manifestations could appear the next instant, in a thousand years or even only after ten thousand years. These great devils could only stay silent between life and death, quietly awaiting.

“In the ancient records left behind from before the Great Calamity, there are only the Heart Devil and the Shadow Devil who initially occupied the seat of Wood who have continuously

existed. The other four have been extinguished and reborn many times,” Yan Zhaoge looked at the Encompassing Emperor and the Brocade Emperor.

The Brocade Emperor smiled, saying, “After the Great Calamity, there has also been no news of the deaths of these two Devils.”

Yan Zhaoge looked at those two streaks of sword-light, “More than two thousand years have passed since this Sword Devil died. I wonder who will suffer the devilish tribulation of the new Devil of aged metal, reborn after being extinguished.”

# HSSB1088: The dead Emperor of the devilish dao

---

“Be it the Devil of aged metal or the other Supreme Devils, all of them yearn for rebirth,” The Brocade Emperor said mildly, “Their rebirths require other lifeforms as their manifestations as it depends fully on luck. Compatible bodies could be close before their eyes, but if these do not exist, that they might have to wait for thousands, tens of thousands of years longer is also not impossible.”

Meng Wan hesitated for a moment before asking, “How does compatibility come about?”

The Brocade Emperor said, “This cannot be said for sure. It is the comparability of the fleshly body and soul, being unrelated to one’s cultivation and strength as well as talent in the martial dao. It is difficult to predict in that sense.”

He suddenly laughed, “It would also be hard to be certain that all of us four present are unsuitable for this.”

Meng Wan did not show any unusual reaction at her father’s words, only looking a bit worriedly at Yan Zhaoge.

Yan Zhaoge understood what she was thinking. She was worried about Feng Yunsheng.

This worry was not a baseless one.

The threat was not just from the Six Supreme Devils. There were also many experts below the Twelve Devilish Gods who might be scheming to look for manifestations, thus undergoing rebirth.

Many of them would possess great strength.

To most people, the Twelve Devilish Gods were too distant a concept.

The other great devils were the more direct threat, easier to run

into.

Yan Zhaoge exhaled slowly, many thoughts flashing through his mind.

“Let us not interfere with this place. Since it is was left behind by predecessors, it should also prove a bit useful in obstructing the corrosion of the Nine Underworlds,” The Encompassing Emperor said as he looked at Yan Zhaoge and the Brocade Emperor.

The two of them nodded, “Your words make sense.”

They glanced a final time at those two sword-lights before leaving this dimensional space that was formed of sword-intent and thunderbolts.

As they ventured further into the depths of the Nine Underworlds, even the Brocade Emperor and the Encompassing Emperor had to start being more cautious.

The numerous devils of the Nine Underworlds before them were getting more and more powerful.

While it was not that much of a challenge for them, the possibility of them eventually drawing over great devils that were on the level of True Immortals was definitely not zero.

Of the three of them, the Brocade Emperor executed the Grand Beginning Bright Emptiness Form as he seemed both illusory and real.

The Encompassing Emperor cultivated in the Myriad Phenomena Heavenly Scripture that possessed infinite variations and was adept in self-concealment.

While Yan Zhaoge did not use his foundation of the Peerless Heavenly Scripture, as he circulated the first and twelfth arts of the Dim Radiant Twelve Arts, Shadow Stealth and Peerless Infinity, in unison, he was similarly difficult to locate.

As a result, they were incomparably low key as they did not

attract the attention of the peak devils that were a great distance away.

It was just that seeking Feng Yunsheng's whereabouts in the Nine Underworlds was very difficult indeed.

Yan Zhaoge and the others could only risk trying to capture the devils of the Nine Underworlds, hoping that one of them might have seen her.

The devils of the Nine Underworlds were either violent and bloodthirsty as well as strange and sinister or sly and cunning, being full of lies.

Obtaining some useful information from them was really never an easy thing.

Many torture methods used against humans were less effective against them, and it was also difficult to go about it in a loud, overt manner since there were within the Nine Underworlds.

Finally, they captured a devil that had really battled Feng Yunsheng before. Despite its violent temperament, this devil still had its rationality as they were finally able to obtain some useful information.

This devil clearly had a deep impression of Feng Yunsheng, a human who had ventured deep within the Nine Underworlds on her lonesome.

There were many wounds on its body that had not healed even now, constantly reminding it of that opponent.

Based on the information obtained here, Yan Zhaoge's party journeyed on.

Boundless charred earth suddenly appeared atop the pitch black soil of the Nine Underworlds up ahead, extended flames blazing between the dim heavens and earth that seemed boundless and without end.



Yet, despite the fact that there was clearly a sea of flames up ahead, the world still seemed dim.

The fiery glow could not dispel the gloomy darkness and evoke a sense of security in them as it instead caused an ominous feeling to well up within their hearts.

“This place appears to be the cave manor of a devilish Emperor of the Nine Underworlds,” The Encompassing Emperor said after gazing over and observing it for a bit.

Despite what he had just said, he showed no intention of halting in the least as he ascended the charred earth without hesitation.

The Brocade Emperor smiled, similarly not stopping as he walked shoulder-to-shoulder with the Encompassing Emperor.

Looking at the inferno and charred earth, Meng Wan murmured aloud, “It somewhat resembles those Flame Devils from back then.”

Yan Zhaoge said as he continued walking, “The Flame Devils rampant in our Eight Extremities World that year were not devils of the Nine Underworlds but sentient lifeforms born from nature. It was just that they were similarly stained with devilish will when they were just born, hence the name ‘Flame Devils’.”

“Tracing it to the source, their strength originated from an expert of pre-Great Calamity times, the Flame Devil Emperor,” Yan Zhaoge explained, “The Flame Devil Emperor’s original title should have been the Heavenly Fire Emperor. Still, it is rumoured that he dabbled in the devilish dao afterwards. While he did not fall to the dark side and become a devil per se, he walked very far on that path, the contention on this matter hence being great.”

Meng Wan nodded in understanding.

“Still, he was unrelated to the Devil of the Six Supreme Devils holding the seat of Fire,” Yan Zhaoge said, “In the annals of history, the devils it produced before were the Fire Devil, Yang

Devil and Blazing Devil.”

“The form of address for the Flame Devils in our Eight Extremities World that year was simply a description of their temperaments and characteristics.”

Hearing this, Meng Wan nodded, “No one in the Eight Extremities World has heard about the Six Supreme Devils before, most likely. They would naturally not be able to know about that Devil of Fire.”

Seeing Yan Zhaoge smiling upon hearing this, Meng Wan smiled too, “You, Senior Brother Yan, are the exception.”

While the two were smiling, their brows were furrowed as they gazed at the charred wilderness that stretched out endlessly before them.

They quickly arrived at the core region of this land.

No other devils were visible atop the charred earth as it was like none of them dared infringe upon this domain.

A massive devilish palace soon appeared before the eyes of Yan Zhaoge and the others.

The palace was completely formed of flames. Soaring a thousand feet high, its walls and pavilions were all blazing intensely, evoking fear in those who saw them.

“Senior apprentice-sister Feng has entered this place?” Having entered with the Brocade Emperor, the Encompassing Emperor and Yan Zhaoge, Meng Wan did not fear the scenes before her as she simply appraised this devilish palace of flame that was the size of giants.

The Brocade Emperor and the Encompassing Emperor exchanged looks, “Why does it look weaker than it seemed at first glance? The devilish Emperor is absent? Is he away, or has he already died?”

Outside of the devilish domain of charred earth, devils could be

intimidated and kept from drawing near due to the restrictions of devilish qi.

However, the interior was lax in contrast to the intimidating exterior as something immediately seemed wrong.

“It was indeed not for no reason that Yunsheng came here...” Yan Zhaoge narrowed his eyes.

They did not hesitate as they ventured within at once.

The towering, majestic devilish palace of flame was simply completely empty.

Only when they arrived in the centre of the back hall did they suddenly feel a shocking devilish qi surging.

Still, it seemed like it was suppressed, being at the end of its tether as it was exceptionally weak.

Yan Zhaoge stroked his lower chin, “The aura is the same as that of this devilish palace of charred earth. It belongs to the original owner of this land, that devilish Emperor.”

“From the looks of it, it was reborn here in the Nine Underworlds after being slain by someone due to being undying and inextinguishable. Still, it was suppressed amidst its rebirth attempt such that it was unable to succeed.”

The Encompassing Emperor carefully perceived its variations of devilish qi, “It has already been dead for a long time, probably over a millennium. Who did it?”

# HSSB1089: A light burning after death, abstruse mysteries left through millennia

---

The Encompassing Emperor glanced at Yan Zhaoge as he said this.

Understanding what he meant by this, Yan Zhaoge shook his head, “I cannot say for sure if it was the Exalted Lunar Luminary. Our sect knows little about her, only knowing that she once descended to the Eight Extremities World and left the Extreme Yin Crown there.”

The Encompassing Emperor nodded as they now entered the depths of the back hall together.

The flames parted as a clump of light appeared amidst space. It was bright at times whilst dim at others, appearing real whilst also illusory as it hovered unstably in the air.

Gazing over, Yan Zhaoge saw a tiny black ember at the centre of the light that looked extremely weak, shaking non-stop as it was as if it might be extinguished at any moment.

Still, there was a devilish qi that surged to the heavens struggling within, just that it was eternally unable to grow strong.

It was the original owner of this place, a former devilish Emperor who had once reigned arrogantly between the heavens and earth.

While it was not that they could never be extinguished for good, devils were indeed undying and inextinguishable most of the time.

Even after they had died, they would be reborn within the Nine Underworlds.

Yet, this devilish Emperor of the Nine Underworlds had been suppressed amidst its rebirth as it had been hard pressed to revive for millennia, being in a state equivalent to being eternally extinguished.

“Devils who possess strength equivalent to Immortal Bridge Martial Saints are already very difficult to kill completely as even Devil Shattering Arrows are already useless against them, much less the devilish experts equivalent to True Immortals of Daosim.”

Yan Zhaoge narrowed his eyes, “Suppressing this devilish Emperor and preventing his rebirth is extremely difficult a task in nature.”

Gazing over carefully, he saw that the area around that tiny ember seemed to be enveloped by a layer of boundless darkness.

This darkness dwindled and devoured the heat and light of the ember, eternally preventing it from growing stronger.

Sensing the darkness that could devour the heavens and swallow the sun, Yan Zhaoge coughed.

“The power of corrosion of the Rahu Star!”

The concept within was not foreign to Yan Zhaoge as he recognised it as the power of the Rahu Star of the eclipse that was the opposing star of the Sun Star!

Having been able to slay a major devil here and suppress it from being reborn, the identity of the one who had done this was just obvious.

The Encompassing Emperor and the Brocade Emperor exchanged looks as they now exclaimed in unison, “The Exalted Rahu Luminary?”

The Exalted Rahu Luminary had been one of the Nine Luminaries of new Kunlun Mountain following the Great Calamity alongside the likes of the Earthly Sovereign, the Concealed Sovereign and the Exalted Gold Luminary Yan Xingtang, having played an important role in Daoism’s resurgence.

Looking at Yan Zhaoge, the Brocade Emperor asked, “I heard Southeast Cao mention that your sect seems to have a treasure that is related to the Exalted Rahu Luminary which is also controlled by

this Little Friend Feng?”

“It isn’t the Rahu Sabre,” Yan Zhaoge answered candidly, “Instead, it is a new sabre reforged from the remnants of the Rahu Sabre that was destroyed. While it is indeed somewhat related to the Exalted Rahu Luminary, it is still unclear how much this is the case.”

He looked thoughtfully at the darkness that was suppressing the ember, “From the looks of it now, the relation between them seems even greater than I had thought.”

The Brocade Emperor and the Encompassing Emperor both nodded slowly, the former extending a finger and lightly tapping on that clump of light.

It shook slightly, the black ember remaining weak whereas that inauspicious dimness seemed to be rippling to the side like water.

The dark aura transformed into a boundless, endless devilish qi of dark fire that was mournful whilst gloomy and looked even more ferocious and tyrannical than the flames all around them that formed the palace.

A figure gradually appeared amidst this devilish qi as a manifestation of martial true intent.

Yan Zhaoge saw that it was a black-clothed woman with short hair. She was not really beautiful and had hard-set, tough features.

Her entire body emanated a severe, stern air as her gaze was resolute, not wavering in the slightest.

While this was just an image, the killing intent still evoked chills as it shot over.

Yan Zhaoge had learnt much information from his previous visit to Kunlun Mountain’s Northern High Peak’s Jade Capital Crag.

He had viewed the images of all the Kunlun Nine Luminaries, his grandfather included.

The figure before him was precisely the Exalted Rahu Luminary, Jian Shunhua.

Like the Exalted Gold Luminary, she was one of the Nine Luminaries who was confirmed to be dead, having left behind countless legends. She had been a famed lady of steel known for her toughness.

“The Exalted Rahu Luminary died even before my grandfather, the Exalted Gold Luminary, did,” Yan Zhaoge surveyed the devilish palace of flame before them, “This looks like a battle accomplishment of hers from the past too.”

“It is just that...”

Yan Zhaoge frowned, “It does not feel as simple as that.”

Gazing at the image of the Exalted Rahu Luminary, the Encompassing Emperor felt as though that figure that was completely devoid of thought was uncompromisingly meeting his gaze while not shrinking back in the slightest.

Carefully sensing their environment, he then suddenly said after a while, “It is indeed not simple.”

Yan Zhaoge too pondered for a time before saying, “It seems like there once existed a mechanism here. While it is no longer here now, traces of it still remain.”

Beside them, the Brocade Emperor observed things a little before extending his palm and exerting force with it as much black devilish fire suddenly appeared from nowhere.

The devilish qi of black fire condensed, manifesting as numerous characters and symbols in mid-air.

Seeing these, the trio’s gazes flickered slightly.

“Haha...” The Brocade Emperor chuckled, “So this was something the Exalted Rahu Luminary prepared in an attempt to undergo rebirth after her death.”

The Encompassing Emperor shook his head slowly, “She wished to borrow the profundities of rebirth of the devils of the Nine Underworlds to complete her own rebirth? This is really...”

As she was an elder of Daoism, the Encompassing Emperor did not wish to openly criticise her.

Still, Yan Zhaoge and the Brocade Emperor both understood the implied meaning in his words.

The Exalted Rahu Luminary’s actions were basically equivalent to playing with fire!

Whether or not her scheme could succeed, even if it succeeded, just the slightest carelessness and she would immediately fall to the dark side, becoming a devil!

The greatest point of concern was this: Would she not mind becoming a devil in order to succeed?

Perhaps this was just a precautionary measure that might or might not be used. It would be best if this measure remained unused.

Still, the Exalted Rahu Luminary had really died more than two thousand years ago.

“From what was said about the temperament of the Exalted Rahu Luminary, she would probably disdain being reborn at the cost of becoming a devil,” Yan Zhaoge said, “What I fear is more of overconfidence on her part.”

Analysing those dark patterns of light, he murmured aloud, “It feels like this mechanism is not just related to the power of rebirth as it seems to possess some other use as well...”

“She was not just leaving a measure for rebirth in case of her death. Instead, she was even seeking to borrow her rebirth to wrest away the authority and strength of some great Devil!” Yan Zhaoge’s expression changed slightly as inspiration suddenly flashed through his mind.



Hearing this, the Encompassing Emperor's expression too changed.

This was playing with fire to an even greater extent!

That great Devil which had been able to catch the eye of the Exalted Rahu Luminary must have possessed extraordinary strength!

The Brocade Emperor's eyes radiated a strange glow as he too was rather taken aback.

"The Exalted Rahu Luminary, Jian Shunhua!" Yan Zhaoge put a hand on his head, "Should I say that you are ambitious, wishing to accomplish something even greater after your death when still alive?"

Really, none of the Kunlun Nine Luminaries was your simple, average character.

"I really even suspect now that maybe you sought death on purpose," Yan Zhaoge thought rather ill-manneredly.

He was really a little aggravated at this moment.

If this had been anytime else, he might have felt amused to the extent of even giving Jian Shunhua a mental thumbs-up.

However, even Feng Yunsheng had been drawn into this now.

The Encompassing Emperor frowned as he looked at the scene before them, "The mechanism has concluded now. What then was the result?"

# HSSB1090: Feng Yunsheng's message

---

Whether it was because of concern for Feng Yunsheng or they were curious if the plan of the Exalted Rahu Luminary Jian Shunhua had succeeded, everyone present was deeply interested in this matter.

Yan Zhaoge took a deep breath and closed his eyes.

A faint screen of light appeared near his body, gradually transforming into the blurry light of water which made everything appear white and black, losing their lustre.

As the light that resembled water seeped in, the time in the area seemed to slow and then fall still.

Seeing this, the Brocade Emperor and Encompassing Emperor both nodded inwardly, "Considering his age and cultivation base, his attainments in the Aeon Light Heavenly Scripture are unexpectedly high."

"Please assist, Emperors," Yan Zhaoge's voice sounded rather ethereal as it seemed fast at times whilst slow at others.

The Brocade Emperor and Encompassing Emperor did not refuse him as they moved in unison.

With their help, time seemingly flowed in reverse there as Yan Zhaoge circulated the Aeon Light Heavenly Scripture.

It was not that time was truly flowing in reverse. Even if it was, it would still be difficult to revert back to a few months or even a few years ago.

Still, the rippling light of time combined with the devilish qi of black fire amidst space, gradually forming a scene of light as it sought to reconstruct the images of the past.

Suddenly, white light flickered amidst space.

Yan Zhaoge's gaze was solemn, "A message left behind by

Yunsheng.”

As the white light appeared, a series of images were finally shown.

A familiar face appeared before Yan Zhaoge and Meng Wan.

Garbed in white and wielding a black sabre, her cascading hair simply tied up behind her back and her gaze focused, it was none other than Feng Yunsheng!

Feng Yunsheng was seated on the ground in the meditative position as the Extreme Yin Crown was emitting pure, clear radiance above her head, resembling the bright moon in the sky.

The Cold Sun Divine Sabre was placed horizontally across her knee, wisps of black qi extending from within which transformed into runes that wound around her body like chains.

In front of Feng Yunsheng, there was a huge black sun hovering in mid-air.

Meanwhile, the tiny ember of flame was completely suppressed by the dim darkness, rendered totally unable to move.

The huge black sun emitted black sunlight which shone on and illuminated the Cold Sun Divine Sabre.

Feng Yunsheng had a calm look on her face and a resolute gaze as she looked at the black sun.

A silhouette surfaced within the black sun. This was none other than the Exalted Rahu Luminary, Jian Shunhua.

Her expression was cold and stern as always as she calmly met Feng Yunsheng's gaze with a piercing gaze.

“I am not the reborn sabre spirit, and you also do not exist within the sabre. Why is this sabre so close to me?” Feng Yunsheng spoke relatively calmly, sounding neither panicked nor perturbed.

Jian Shunhua who was rumoured to be a person of few words spoke liberally in front of Feng Yunsheng, “It is true that you are

not the reborn sabre spirit. Still, a wisp of your soul is sealed within the remnant shell of the Rahu Sabre. This sabre should be called the rebirth of that split soul portion of yours. While it is not your clone, its mind is connected to yours as you can wield it like an arm.”

The pure moonlight suppressed the jet-black chains encircling Feng Yunsheng to some extent.

Still, resisting them mostly still depended on Feng Yunsheng’s own will.

She calmly asked, “Exalted Rahu Luminary, is it? While I admire senior’s flair from the past, this junior does not wish to become a shell through which someone else comes back from the dead.”

“A very outstanding young girl,” Not only was Jian Shunhua not vexed, an amused hint of approval even vaguely surfaced from her cold features, though it was gone in a flash.

The huge sun proceeded forward, seeking to gradually devour Feng Yunsheng’s body.

Feng Yunsheng did not resist as she sat unmoving where she was, simply guarding and stabilising her mind.

Seeing this, the Encompassing Emperor nodded slightly, “While the Exalted Rahu Luminary has been reborn, she is exceptionally weak due to having to ensure that she does not fall to the dark side.”

“This is not a contest between a True Immortal and a Seeing Divinity Martial Saint, a clash of martial abilities. Instead, it is an inner battle of will.”

Yan Zhaoge said nothing.

Feng Yunsheng had a resilient personality and firm will that was rare amongst all those he had seen before.

It was a strength that surpassed her age and the boundaries of

her cultivation base.

He did not worry about how Feng Yunsheng might fare against others.

Still, her opponent this time was no normal person, being someone who had left behind a glorious reputation for themselves in the grand annals of history.

This was someone who had planned for not just reviving after her death, but also to wrest away a devil's foundation that was even sturdier than her own.

Even her very death itself might have been a segment of her plan.

Also, how many could be certain that under the precondition of not becoming a devil, they would still succeed in the rebirth they sought following their deaths?

Even so, Jian Shunhua had dared to make such a gamble!

She might not have reached a state where she had been left with no choice at all but to make that gamble. What sustained her was not just a gambler's hope as it was instead an extremely firm will.

It was rumoured that her expression had never even changed as she had once suffered the Soul Nail Stab, one of the Seven Great Tortures like the Cold Marrow Needles!

What were Feng Yunsheng's chances as she faced such an opponent this time?

"In order to ensure that she does not fall to the dark side, the Exalted Rahu Luminary had to borrow a body in her rebirth mechanism," The Brocade Emperor appeared rather interested, "Still, from the looks of it now, it did not go as smoothly as she planned."

As the huge black sun enveloped Feng Yunsheng completely, a black solar eclipse symbol gradually appeared on her forehead.

Devilish qi of black fire vaguely circulated within her pupils as

well. Still, her gaze remained clear.

Feng Yunsheng suddenly roared, standing up as she chopped out with the Cold Sun Divine Sabre.

The Extreme Yin Crown that she wore shook, the pure moonlight transforming into a sabre-light which broke the huge black sun!

While the huge black sun was no more, the black solar eclipse symbol on Feng Yunsheng's forehead still remained as a dim yet brilliant glow leapt about her pupils too.

The white sabre-light left behind traces amidst space, resembling a passageway connecting towards Yan Zhaoge.

Yan Zhaoge's eyes met those of his lover across from him, even though he knew that she was unable to see him.

Still, Feng Yunsheng's gaze seemingly traversed time at this moment, arriving in the present.

"I do not know who will be able to see this," Feng Yunsheng said, "I am Feng Yunsheng, a disciple of Broad Creed Mountain from the World beyond Worlds' southeastern Yang Heaven Territory's Royal Reed Sea."

"As you can see, due to earlier, I am currently unable to fully control my body. At present, only half of the Exalted Rahu Luminary's mechanism has been completed. There is still another half which concerns a great Devil. I do not know which one specifically it is, but it is definitely not simple."

"Next, because of her, I will be heading deeper into the Nine Underworlds. Because I cannot fully control myself, I will be unable to leave traces behind to aid in pursuit as something left behind by my right hand could be wiped off by my own left hand the very next moment. Because of that, there is no need to look for me."

"I will leave as soon as possible. Otherwise, even this message may be eradicated by myself."

She slowly said, “If you are willing to help, Feng Yunsheng is deeply grateful. Please relay this message to my sect, my Master Soaring Cloud Fu and my husband Yan Zhaoge.”

“In these decades that I have lived, I have often faced failure, seldom seeing success as I have constantly caused new trouble for those related to me.”

Feng Yunsheng said solemnly, “Still, I will not lose this time.”

“Not because of gain and loss, not because of strength or weakness, but only because I will definitely come back to see you all!” She suddenly smiled brightly, “Zhaoge, I will definitely return. We haven’t even had our first night together yet.”

# HSSB1091: Eighth level of the Martial Saint realm, mid Immortal Bridge stage

---

The Encompassing Emperor, the Brocade Emperor and Meng Wan all turned to look at Yan Zhaoge.

Yan Zhaoge's gaze was distant as he looked at that illusory scene, not saying a word.

There, Feng Yunsheng cupped her fist towards space before valiantly turning and crossing the multiple layers of flames, vanishing without a trace within the devilish palace of flames.

As the white light faded, the images gradually disappeared too.

The reversed time regained its normalcy.

Gazing at the empty palace, Yan Zhaoge was silent for a long time.

“Little Friend Yan, as this matter concerns the Exalted Rahu Luminary's rebirth, this old man and the others of the World beyond Worlds must necessarily be concerned with it.”

“This must be reported to the Three Sovereigns, at the very least.”

After a long time, the Encompassing Emperor coughed, saying slowly, “This also involves a peak devil which has caught the eye of the arrogant Exalted Rahu Luminary. It would definitely be remarkable.”

“Although it will be difficult to pursue them like Little Friend Feng said, if there is a chance, we will definitely attempt to venture deeper into the Nine Underworlds to locate them. Hopefully, Little Friend Feng can be found as soon as possible.”

Yan Zhaoge's gaze flickered as he turned to look at the Encompassing Emperor.



The elder who had the looks of a child and the white hair of an old man looked at him calmly without any ripples in his gaze whatsoever.

“If you Majesties get involved in this matter, the chances of success will naturally increase greatly,” Yan Zhaoge said, “This Yan naturally wishes to find back my wife as soon as possible. Sorry for the expression, but this Yan has also been looking forward to our first night together.”

The Encompassing Emperor’s gaze flickered slightly, but he spoke no further.

While he rather admired this youth before him, as this matter that concerned the Exalted Rahu Luminary involved too many things, he had no choice but to approach it very seriously indeed.

The worst case scenario would be if Feng Yunsheng lost to Jian Shunhua, but Jian Shunhua lost too.

The one to come out on top of all this would be a third party, the devil that Jian Shunhua had been scheming against!

Whether it was Jian Shunhua or Feng Yunsheng who fell to the dark side, both would be extremely terrible scenarios.

The Encompassing Emperor naturally had to consider these possibilities.

Still, he similarly had to consider Yan Zhaoge and Broad Creed Mountain.

The youth before him had too many connections. Besides Kunlun Mountain’s Northern High Peak’s Jade Capital Crag’s Sword Sovereign, he was actually somewhat related to the Roving Jade Heavens as well.

Even with the Encompassing Emperor’s vast life experiences, he had to calm down and navigate this matter with the utmost vigilance now.

“Wan’er, it looks like we will have to stop here,” The Brocade Emperor just looked rather regretfully at Meng Wan, “I hope that your friend will be blessed by the heavens and turn calamity into fortune.”

Looking at the now empty palace, Meng Wan was feeling rather despondent too.

Hearing the Brocade Emperor’s words, she nodded, saying, “No need to worry, father. Your daughter understands. Now, I too am just hoping for senior apprentice-sister Feng’s safe return.”

Yan Zhaoge smiled, “Being able to see you when she returns will doubtlessly be a pleasant surprise. She will definitely be very happy.”

Now, he cupped his hands towards the Brocade Emperor and the Encompassing Emperor, “Please hold on for a moment.”

Next, Yan Zhaoge stepped forward, arriving before the dim darkness which was suppressing the black ember and extending a hand.

As he circulated the Faceless Devilish Scripture, Yan Zhaoge’s body turned completely illusory.

A green Buddha idol appeared above his head that had four sides and twelve arms.

Each of the four faces was totally blank with no features visible whatsoever.

The gazes of the Encompassing Emperor and Brocade Emperor flickered, “What an outstanding youngster. Extraordinary talent indeed.”

While they were not proficient in the Faceless Devilish Scripture, they naturally knew of the Faceless Heavenly Devil of the legends, bearing the true intent of no identity and no face as it actually held no fixed external form.

If a manifestation of this technique had an external form, a martial practitioner should be far from completion in their cultivation.

Otherwise, it would be that they had intentionally done so, integrating other martial concepts within.

This was the case with Yan Zhaoge right now. While he was projecting the profundities of the Faceless Devilish Scripture, he had no intention of falling to the dark side in becoming a devil.

The green Buddha idol's twelve arms extended forward in unison, converging towards the centre as they collectively captured and suppressed the dim darkness along with the ember.

Next, the Buddha idol slowly descended into the top of Yan Zhaoge's head.

"You must be careful, Little Friend Yan. That ember is the source of a devilish Emperor's revival at the end of the day," The Encompassing Emperor warned Yan Zhaoge though he did not stop him.

Yan Zhaoge smiled, "Thank you for worrying, Encompassing Emperor. Still, it is fine."

He closed his eyes as the acupoints of his entire body suddenly pulsed.

The eyes of the Encompassing Emperor and Brocade Emperor both emitted a strange glow as they saw this, "Oh?"

As Yan Zhaoge sat in the centre of the back hall of the devilish palace of black flame, his entire body suddenly glowed brilliantly.

Streams of bright radiance that resembled starlight were emitted from him in all directions, even penetrating through the flame-formed walls of the palace.

At this moment, radiance lit up within the gloomily lit devilish domain of the Nine Underworlds, resembling bright stars in the

night sky amidst the centre of the blazing flames and charred soil.

Yan Zhaoge's various acupoints were emitting a splendid radiance. Now, one of them suddenly dimmed and was extinguished.

Closely following that, there was a second, and then a third.

While the radiance of some of his acupoints was extinguished, the radiance of the remaining ones that were still glowing got increasingly bright and dazzling as they underwent a qualitative change.

As the radiance flickered, it was as though numerous stars were circulating within the true universe.

Yan Zhaoge's aura correspondingly skyrocketed in its entirety!

"He has actually ascended to the eighth level of the Martial Saint realm, the mid Immortal Bridge stage just like that," The Encompassing Emperor sighed lightly, "From what this old man heard, it should not have been long ago that he attained the Immortal Bridge stage. It was before his sect's opening ceremony, right?"

Besides admiration, there was also a regretful look in the Encompassing Emperor's gaze that was on Yan Zhaoge now.

This was naturally because Yan Zhaoge had heard the name of the Immeasurable Heavenly Lord back at Star Reflecting Lake.

The Encompassing Emperor shook his head as he looked at the Brocade Emperor, a rare look of dissatisfaction visible within his eyes.

While Yan Zhaoge's attitude over Feng Yunsheng's matter gave him a bit of a headache, this did not stop him from admiring Yan Zhaoge's talent.

He felt that it was a real pity indeed, how the Brocade Emperor had randomly destroyed a supreme genius of the World beyond

Worlds just like that.

The Brocade Emperor smiled, seemingly having forgotten completely about the events back at Star Reflecting Lake as he only said rather admiringly, “Your determination is laudable indeed.”

“Indeed...” The Encompassing Emperor shook his head, looking at Yan Zhaoge once more.

While it was not outwardly exhibited, Yan Zhaoge’s firm, resolute aura was evident to all.

The dissatisfaction and despondence within his heart did not translate to worry, vexation, uselessness and defeat as it instead erupted like a volcano, completely transforming into an uncompromising resolve with a sharp, piercing intent to unceasingly strive for his ultimate goal.

Yan Zhaoge’s accumulated foundation was incomparably substantial as there was no difficulty at all besides where major bottlenecks existed.

Still, he had never been hasty so as to preserve the stability of this rare path that he followed, stably and assuredly treading every single step.

Still, he no longer suppressed himself at this moment, ignoring any potential repercussions from refining the devilish fire as he simply advanced right there and then!

Seeing the calm expression on the face of this youth, the Encompassing Emperor really felt a headache coming on.

“I admire him even more now,” The Brocade Emperor smiled leisurely.

The Encompassing Emperor glanced at him, “He is different from you.”

The Brocade Emperor smiled, “There is nothing wrong with this being different. Little Red Lotus has a great impression of him as I

had once considered looking for him as a son-in-law. From the events that have played out, my appraisal was right indeed. This fella is not simply overflowing with talent.”

# HSSB1092: Sovereign of the Immortal Court

---

While the Brocade Emperor's tone was relaxed, it caused the Encompassing Emperor to glance at him again.

Now, Yan Zhaoge slowly concluded his cultivation session, the starlight emitted from his acupoints gradually being retracted in returning to his body.

As he opened his eyes and saw the Encompassing Emperor and Brocade Emperor, he smiled, "This Yan has been impetuous. Please mind not how laughable it is."

The Brocade Emperor and Encompassing Emperor both said, "It is okay."

Meng Wan smiled, "Congratulations on further advancing your cultivation base, Senior Brother Yan."

"Thank you, Junior Sister Meng," Yan Zhaoge stood up and said as he looked at the devilish palace of flame around them, "This place no longer holds anything of value now."

They left the palace composed of flame, the Encompassing Emperor saying after a time, "Influenced by the Exalted Rahu Luminary, Little Friend Feng has headed deeper into the Nine Underworlds and will be hard pressed to leave clues for us. Not only would it be difficult to go after her, it will also be much riskier if we continue moving forward."

The Nine Underworlds possessed numerous great devils at the end of the day.

The Encompassing Emperor looked at Yan Zhaoge and Meng Wan, "This old man believes that we should return to the World beyond Worlds and report this matter to the Three Sovereigns, letting them make a decision on how best to deal with this."

"At that time, if we are to venture into the depths of the Nine Underworlds, the leadership of the Three Sovereigns would aid us

greatly.”

Hearing this, Yan Zhaoge slowly nodded, “Thank you for empathising with this Yan’s feelings, Encompassing Emperor. I am not someone who does not know the weight of matters. Heading deeper into the Nine Underworlds without any leads whatsoever would be no different from sending a sheep into the mouth of a tiger. While I am worried about my wife, there seems to be nothing that can be done about this now.”

“Your words just now were wise and dependable. This Yan can raise no objection to them.”

Meng Wan agreed, “We have already troubled you by making you come this far. This junior will naturally abide by what you and father decide on.”

The Encompassing Emperor said, “No need to stand on ceremony, Little Friend Fu. We have gained much from our trip to the Nine Underworlds this time. We would not have known otherwise that the Exalted Rahu Luminary actually performed such a deed.”

He looked at the Brocade Emperor, who smiled, “While regrets are inevitable, things in this world never always go according to one’s will. This may be a destined tribulation.”

Hearing the Brocade Emperor’s words, the gazes of Yan Zhaoge and the Encompassing Emperor flickered slightly, their gazes moving between he and Meng Wan.

They ceased in their advance as they left that devilish palace of flame and attempted to go back the way they had come.

Along the way, Yan Zhaoge kept an eye on the Brocade Emperor’s movements.

Still, he seemed to be normal right now, at least from the surface.

The abnormal thing originated from the external world!



As Yan Zhaoge and the others were retracing their steps in leaving the Nine Underworlds, partway through their journey, a strong sense of foreboding suddenly arose in all their hearts!

A sense of crisis could be felt from all directions amidst this boundless, endless darkness!

Suddenly, majestic tides swept the area, rushing straight towards them!

That terrifying aura actually surpassed that of True Immortals who had already pushed open the door to Immortality.

The first thought that came to their minds was that despite already having kept as low key as possible, some more powerful devils of the Nine Underworlds had still been alerted to their presence at the end of the day.

Yet, a majestic voice next reverberated amidst space, “Where is Yin Tianxia’s descendant?”

“This Sovereign can clearly feel the aura of Yin Tianxia’s Immortal Artifact which stems from the orthodox Dim Radiant Twelve Arts.”

“A Sovereign of the Immortal Court,” The Encompassing Emperor’s face suddenly fell, “And not just one of them too!”

Yan Zhaoge’s pupils dilated abruptly, “Why would Sovereigns of the Immortal Court appear in the Nine Underworlds? Did they coincidentally discover me with the Dim Radiant Wheel, or is it that...”

Thoughts flashed through his mind as he turned to look at the Brocade Emperor.

The Brocade Emperor had a calm expression on his face as he smiled, “While the Sovereigns of the Immortal Court are formidable, they are still inferior to our orthodox Daoism’s Three Sovereigns at the end of the day. While I and Fellow Daoist Li may not be confident of obtaining victory over them, we are still

capable of playing around with them for a bit. Let us not get overly entangled in battle. It would be ideal if we can shake them off with the help of the environment of the Nine Underworlds.”

The Encompassing Emperor shot a deep glance at the Brocade Emperor before saying decisively, “Leaving comes first!”

He flicked his black sleeve, bringing Yan Zhaoge along in speeding towards another direction.

The Brocade Emperor performed the same action as he speedily left along with Meng Wan.

As frenzied tides swept the area behind them, the second person’s voice resounded, “Li Jun, Fu Yunchi, must things really get so ugly between us?”

“You were the ones who were blocking our path. It is us who should be finding fault with you,” The Encompassing Emperor said, “Does the Immortal Court intend to break our agreement?”

The first voice resounded, “Quibble not! Yin Tianxia sought his own death, and his descendants similarly cannot be forgiven! That is our agreement. If you insist on being mantises before the carriage today, do not blame me for showing you no mercy!”

The Encompassing Emperor’s tone was mild as he said, “We can only offend you here then.”

With that, he continued proceeding forward alongside the Brocade Emperor, transforming into a bright streak of light in traversing the darkness of the Nine Underworlds.

Yan Zhaoge did not mind being taken away along with the Encompassing Emperor. He observed the Brocade Emperor even as he looked behind him.

Roiling sand had actually arisen amidst space which had previously been dim and filled with devilish qi all around.

A boundless sea of sand that surged to the heavens roiled and

extended non-stop as it pursued Yan Zhaoge and the others.

Meanwhile, a phoenix was soaring in the air above the sea of sand.

It was different from the fire phoenix that Yan Zhaoge was used to seeing, that which originated from the lineage of the World beyond Worlds' Phoenix Ritual Mountain's Wutong Slope.

This phoenix was, shockingly, an ice phoenix.

It was small and intricate, merely being six foot tall when it was standing.

Spreading its wings, it did not seem conspicuous as it soared above the sea of sand as it was just like an unnoticeable tiny white dot.

Still, the sense of power that emanated from within was incomparably more powerful than when in the case of the late Zhuang Shen, a Human Exalt.

As compared to this ice phoenix, Zhuang Shen was really like a firefly before the bright moon.

“Before the Great Calamity, there was once an Ice Phoenix Emperor with his Ice Phoenix Rebirth Scripture,” Yan Zhaoge narrowed his eyes, “In the current Immortal Court, an expert who can claim the Sovereign title has already appeared from this lineage. Although it is of the Immortal Court, it is still remarkable indeed.”

Instead, Yan Zhaoge could not match that roiling sea of sand with any specific supreme martial art that he knew of.

While there were a few kinds which it bore a resemblance to, they were not completely the same.

From the looks of it now, it might be like the Dim Radiant Twelve Arts, being a brand new supreme martial art which had been created with reference to the crystallised intelligence of

predecessors.

While the foundation of the Immortal Court's martial practitioners was the treasured light of the power of faith, they did not lack supreme talents. Their high population was not simply for show.

Both sides battled, going wherever the fight took them.

The Brocade Emperor and the Encompassing Emperor had not the leisure to remain low key and conceal their movements now as the intense clash instantly drew the attention of the numerous devils of the Nine Underworlds, with more and more of them approaching the scene.

Finally, a similarly terrifying aura emanated from the distance, a frenzied, sinister roar resounding deafeningly from the distance. A great Devil of the Nine Underworlds which was equivalent to an Immortal realm expert in strength had been attracted over!

While they had no intention of teaming up, the experts of the Immortal Court and the Devil ended up catching them in a pincer.

The great Devil blocked the path of Yan Zhaoge's group as the two Sovereigns of the Immortal Court instantly made use of this chance to catch up to them.

The Encompassing Emperor flicked his sleeve, releasing Yan Zhaoge. The Brocade Emperor did the same with Meng Wan too.

The two began concentrating fully on this battle with their foes while Yan Zhaoge brought Meng Wan along in retreating to the side.

A free-for-all ensued as these three sides engaged in a heaven-roiling, earth-overturning battle amidst the devilish domain in this region of the Nine Underworlds.

# HSSB1093: A venomous tiger eats not its offspring?

---

Yan Zhaoge retreated to the side with Meng Wan even as he gazed at the messy battle situation.

The Immortal Court experts, the Devil of the Nine Underworld and the Encompassing Emperor and Brocade Emperor were embroiled in a free-for-all, attacking and defending against each of the other sides as they battled on.

That great Devil of the Nine Underworlds was gigantic like a mountain. It had four wings behind its back and six short, stout legs, its body resembling a big sack as no facial features were visible on it.

From its external appearance, it did somewhat resemble the legendary demonic beast, the Dijiang.

It was just that unlike the Dijiang, it did not resemble yellow soil, its body wreathed in crimson fire. This great Devil was completely pitch black in colour with its whole body surrounded by purplish-black devilish fire.

Its appearance was like a Dijiang had fallen to the dark side, instantly plummeting to the devilish dao.

Though this Devil was on its own, bubbles emerged from the purplish-black devilish fire that surrounded him.

The buzzing of electricity resounded from the surface of the bubbles with the light of thunder flickering as they were clearly formed of thunderbolts.

These bubbles drifted aimlessly, seemingly frail and unable to stand any powerful impact at all.

Yet, whenever these bubbles that resembled thunder-light exploded, they would then expand to form independent

dimensional spaces of their own, after which space shattered and launched even more terrifying, frenzied tides.

One bolt of thunder was like an entire world.

Dimensional space itself collapsed, time and space changing for the surrounding heavens and earth.

This great Devil that looked like a Dijiang did not clash head-on with its enemies as it merely caused interference from the side with its miraculous thunderbolt-related abilities.

As the Brocade Emperor and Encompassing Emperor as well as the two Sovereigns of the Immortal Court were busy battling one another, they were unable to do anything to this great Devil for now.

“It is actually Grand Illusory Spatial Thunder,” Yan Zhaoge gazed at the massive spheres of thunder that resembled bubbles, “Dijiangs are proficient in the dao of space in the first place. Now that this one has also refined Grand Illusory Spatial Thunder, it is really like wings have sprouted on a tiger.”

The Brocade Emperor and the others frowned as they gradually grew impatient while facing this great devil.

They were battling in the Nine Underworlds at the end of the day. If it dragged on for a long time, more peak devils of the Nine Underworlds would definitely be drawn over, even the stronger ones.

The Dijiang that was harassing them and they were hard pressed to get rid of could also expose their position at any moment.

This great Devil that had the form of a Dijiang was clearly a crafty individual as it battled deliberately rather than frenziedly and irrationally.

Just as they were all of the mind to first get rid of this great Devil, a disturbance suddenly resounded in the distance where devilish qi was abound.

A streak of crimson fire streaked through space, appearing within their fields of vision.

On seeing this, Yan Zhaoge and the Encompassing Emperor were both slightly taken aback.

“Mars Halberd?”

A blazing sea of fire cleansed the surrounding jet black devilish qi, with a divinity of flame which stood upon two blazing dragons at its centre. This was none other than the manifestation of Mars Halberd.

The giant that was enveloped in flame was not taken aback upon seeing the great Devil in the form of a Dijiang as he was instead surprised at seeing the two Sovereigns of the Immortal Court, “People of an external dao?”

That ice phoenix said, “Mars Halberd? To actually encounter you here in the Nine Underworlds. We will definitely not be leaving empty-handed today!”

He soared into the air, shaking off the Brocade Emperor and the Encompassing Emperor as he flew towards Mars Halberd.

Despite feeling startled, Mars Halberd remained fearless as he swept along boundless blazing fire which clashed with the opponent’s cold ice, a battle erupting between them.

Ice sealed the world for thousands of kilometres all around, a fiery light intermittently flickering within.

Meanwhile, while the Brocade Emperor and the Encompassing Emperor had one fewer opponent now, that crafty great Devil in the form of a Dijiang was now mainly targeting them as it effectively joined forces with that remaining expert of the Immortal Court.

A Sovereign was still a Sovereign at the end of the day. Despite being from the Immortal Court, he still possessed great strength nevertheless.

Whether it was Mars Halberd, the Brocade Emperor, the Encompassing Emperor or that Dijiang, all of them were peak experts. However, it would be difficult for any of them to face a Sovereign of the Immortal Court one versus one.

While they were of the Immortal Court, having been able to attain their current cultivation realms, it was obvious that they would definitely be outstanding figures.

Still, rather than the Encompassing Emperor or the Brocade Emperor, the main target of this Sovereign of the Immortal Court was really still Yan Zhaoge and the Dim Radiant Wheel!

Yan Zhaoge was fearless in the face of danger as after observing the overall situation, he instead neared the battlefield along with Meng Wan.

A bolt of Grand Illusory Spatial Thunder which had just broken apart exploded, causing the surrounding space and time to distort.

Yan Zhaoge properly grasped his chance as right after the thunderbolt had exploded, when its destructive power was at its weakest and its influence on space had still yet to fade, he charged straight into the chaotic space!

Red light vaguely appeared within his pupils as he secretly circulated the Immortal Trapping Sword and manoeuvred through the violent, haphazard currents of space in swiftly fleeing the battlefield.

A cold snort resounded behind them as all-encompassing yellow sand surged, doggedly pursuing them.

Still, devilish qi that surged to the heavens manifested, surrounding this enemy from all directions!

Just as that great Devil that resembled a Dijiang desired, more peak experts of the Nine Underworlds had finally come to reinforce it.

The battlefield instantly grew more chaotic, delaying that



Immortal Court Sovereign slightly during which time Yan Zhaoge and Meng Wan vanished from the spot.

Drifting amidst dimensional space, Yan Zhaoge and Meng Wan finally saw the scenes before them returning to normal as they were free of that earlier battlefield.

Sensing the fluctuations of devilish qi within the Nine Underworlds, Yan Zhaoge turned and looked towards a certain direction.

Streaks of light were still visibly flickering over there as the radiance of death was aglow.

Meng Wan said softly, “Thank you for saving me, Senior Brother Yan.”

“You’re welcome,” Yan Zhaoge answered offhand as he stared in that direction.

Meng Wan hesitated for a moment before asking, “Senior Brother Yan, my father, what exactly is...”

Yan Zhaoge pondered momentarily before telling Meng Wan what he knew and had guessed about the Brocade Emperor.

Despite having known initially that something was up, Meng Wan was still astonished, “He wants to kill me...and my elder sister?”

“This is still just a guess right now. Still, it shouldn’t be wrong. It is most likely that he would make his move here in the Nine Underworlds, even,” Yan Zhaoge said in a grave tone, “While it is said that a venomous tiger eats not its offspring, this tiger just isn’t in a very normal state of mind right now.”

He paused momentarily before elaborating, “Aside from you, he might also target me as well.”

“If he does so in the Nine Underworlds with none the wiser, all the blame can be pushed to the Devils of the Nine Underworlds.

There would be no place more suitable for him to make his move.”

Hearing this, Meng Wan asked, “Wouldn’t us leaving the Encompassing Emperor’s sight have made it more convenient for him to do so?”

Yan Zhaoge shrugged, “There was no choice. You can say that I have gotten you worse off. Those two Sovereigns of the Immortal Court were targeting me. They pose a greater threat than your father in definitely wanting to do me harm, whereas the Brocade Emperor’s mindset is more unpredictable right now.”

“No, Senior Brother Yan. How is it that you have gotten me worse off? If not for you saving me, even if father did nothing, I would probably have died right there and then in that earlier situation,” Meng Wan said, “It is me who is dragging you down.”

With her intelligence, after learning about the truth of the matter, she immediately realised, “Even if we get separated, father should still have a means of locating me. As you are travelling with me, that means you will be found by him too.”

As he brought her along in fleeing further away, Yan Zhaoge said, “If Yunsheng can see you upon her return, she will definitely be exceptionally happy and delighted.”

Meng Wan said softly, “There is a lot that you can give senior apprentice-sister Feng, Senior Brother Yan. There is no need for you to take risks because of me.”

“Rather than ‘what I would like to give her’...” Yan Zhaoge chuckled, “Don’t you think that satisfying ‘what she would like’ is better?”

Meng Wan appraised Yan Zhaoge thoughtfully with a deep look.

Before she could speak, Yan Zhaoge smiled, “Although I too knew that your father should be able to find you, isn’t this a little too fast? So he was indeed prepared for this?”

Immediately afterwards, illusory space suddenly shook as all-

encompassing purple qi surfaced within their surroundings!

# HSSB1094: Gigantic black Buddha!

---

Amidst the all-encompassing purple-qi, the handsome features of the Brocade Emperor, Fu Yunchi, were indistinctly visible.

As he executed the Grand Beginning Bright Emptiness Form, seeming illusory whilst also real, shifting space was incomparably easy for him.

Seeing this, Meng Wan instead grew calm, continuing to speak as she looked at Yan Zhaoge, “With my understanding of senior apprentice-sister Feng, while she loves to act spontaneously without prior discussion, she would definitely not like you taking on any unnecessary risks for her sake.”

“While I do like to take risks, I never act in a suicidal manner. Since I have committed myself to something, I would definitely have some level of confidence in it. It is the same this time too...” Gazing at the Brocade Emperor who was visible within that purple sea of clouds, Yan Zhaoge wondered aloud, “...Probably, I guess?”

He looked at the Brocade Emperor before gazing again at the distant battlefield, “Being able to survive a major calamity and see the Brocade Emperor again, this Yan really is lucky. I just wonder how the Encompassing Emperor is?”

While the Brocade Emperor’s aura was slightly weak at this moment, his expression was as per usual and even with a bit of geniality as it was like he had never experienced that earlier great battle at all.

Seeing Yan Zhaoge and Meng Wan, he smiled, “With the situation chaotic and all sides tied up, crisis instead lessens. Since you have already escaped, Fellow Daoist Li has no need to stay there and fight with the ones from the Immortal Court. So long as he is careful, he can surely still extricate himself.”

Yan Zhaoge raised his brows, “It is Mars Halberd who is in a

difficult situation?”

Though he was asking a question, Yan Zhaoge seemed certain of this.

From the words of that Sovereign of the Immortal Court in the form of an ice phoenix, the Immortal Court seemed to have Mars Halberd as a wanted fugitive too.

While the reason was unclear, Yan Zhaoge guessed that it was most likely related to the Exalted Fire Luminary.

Now that Yan Zhaoge and the Dim Radiant Wheel were gone, they would naturally focus completely on Mars Halberd.

The Encompassing Emperor would instead be ignored somewhat as they primarily stayed cautious of the numerous devils of the Nine Underworlds.

Now that Mars Halberd was the target of the two Sovereigns of the Immortal Court while also being harassed by great Devils of the Nine Underworlds whose motives were fickle, it was not just trouble that had befallen him. If he was even the least bit careless, he would be doomed to fall in the Nine Underworlds.

“Mars Halberd and I had arranged for another battle. I was originally going to battle against him after we had finished looking for Little Friend Feng and exited the Nine Underworlds.”

The Brocade Emperor said mildly, “Who would have thought that the Immortal Court might interfere, resulting in such a situation.”

Yan Zhaoge said after a while, “Previously, Mars Halberd’s attack sent me and your daughter, Fu Ting, to the Immortal Court, causing your daughter difficulties. That should have been unintentional on his part, though.”

The Brocade Emperor smiled, “I understand. It is just that I am inevitably unhappy with him. Even so, I still hope that nothing will happen to him. Regardless of whatever enmity exists between

us, we are all of orthodox Daoism at the end of the day.”

Yan Zhaoge watched him calmly, not saying anything.

A chill rose in Meng Wan's heart as her father whom she was already unfamiliar with in the first place felt even more foreign to her now.

She was not clear on the enmity between the Brocade Emperor and Mars Halberd, only knowing some parts of it from the earlier conversations between the Brocade Emperor, the Encompassing Emperor and Yan Zhaoge.

Still, with her intelligence and what Yan Zhaoge had told her earlier about the state the Brocade Emperor was currently in, it was not difficult for her to realise the truth of this matter.

In today's battle, the first victim to the Brocade Emperor's schemes was neither Yan Zhaoge nor her as it was instead Mars Halberd!

If in his normal state of mind, the Brocade Emperor would naturally not have done this kind of thing.

Yet, he was extremely unstable mentally right now as even his style of handling affairs diverged from his usual way.

The current Brocade Emperor had his mind split in two.

His feeling side hated and raged against Mars Halberd over what had happened to Fu Ting back then.

Still, his feeling side had its pride and arrogance as he would only engage in a proper battle to the death with Mars Halberd to decide a victor between them.

His unfeeling side saw Mars Halberd as a threat that it would be best to exterminate for good.

Still, as the whereabouts of the Exalted Fire Luminary were unknown, whether he failed or succeeded in exterminating him, it could ultimately lead to situations detrimental to him.

Therefore, the best method was to kill with a borrowed blade rather than acting himself.

Both these versions of him desired to kill Mars Halberd, just that their methods differed.

Meng Wan's heart grew extremely cold at the thought of what had just transpired.

Yan Zhaoge's guesses were gradually coming to fruition and being actualised.

In the inner struggle of the Brocade Emperor, it was indeed his unfeeling side that was gradually gaining the upper hand!

"Do not be panicked, Wan'er," The Brocade Emperor seemed to see through Meng Wan's thoughts as he suddenly smiled, "From the way you seem now, Little Friend Yan must have said much to you."

"A venomous tiger does not devour its offspring. The situation is still not as bad as you believe. Your father is unceasingly searching for a better method of resolving it."

The Brocade Emperor sighed, "It is just a pity that after having finally been able to reunite not long ago with much difficulty, our hearts have grown yet further apart."

"I do not blame you for this. This is from a problem with I, your father. It is just that some matters within this world really leave one feeling regretful yet helpless."

Meng Wan was startled, "Father..."

The Brocade Emperor smiled, raising a hand to stop her, "Relax, Wan'er. It's okay."

He gazed in Yan Zhaoge's direction, "I would instead ask-Why did you have to expose this matter, Little Friend Yan?"

"What difference does it make?" Yan Zhaoge spread his hands apart, "Even as you kill two birds with one stone, dealing with

Mars Halberd while shaking off the Encompassing Emperor, your next target can only be either me or your daughter.”

“If your daughter is your target, you yourself would expose things. If it is me, whether I wreck your happiness or not, won’t you still be wanting to kill me anyway?”

The Brocade Emperor was momentarily silent before he smiled widely, “Yes, I have been too full of myself. You lecture me rightly, Little Friend Yan.”

As he lowered himself from his lofty pedestal and spoke earnestly and politely, a strong premonition arose in Yan Zhaoge’s mind!

Indeed, the very next moment, the Brocade Emperor raised a hand before bringing it straight down towards him!

His upraised palm contained the combined qis of yin and yang.

Through his palm, he sent Meng Wan away while getting rid of the devilish qi around Yan Zhaoge’s body. Time became blurry with space no longer existing as all things returned to the primordial qis, yin and yang.

A massive Taiji diagram appeared between the heavens and earth of the dark devilish domain as it enveloped Yan Zhaoge.

Yan Zhaoge felt as if his body was spinning alongside this as even if he had myriad transformations, being infinitely capable, it seemed that it would still be difficult for him to escape this Taiji diagram.

This was the might of a True Immortal.

Yan Zhaoge had once personally experienced the Heaven Emperor in action in the Royal Reed Sea.

Still, as he had been protected by the Earth Mother Dao Ritual and the Later Earth Text back then, only now with that layer stripped away did he truly comprehend what the divide between mortal and Immortal was. It was like the difference between the



heavens and earth as even he was hard pressed to surpass it right now.

Still, Yan Zhaoge did not grow panicked.

He roared, resembling the enraged howls of countless devils of the deep abyss and also the chanting of numerous Buddhas of the blessed lands.

An ancient green Buddha with four faces and eight arms appeared above Yan Zhaoge's head once more.

It was just that this time, Yan Zhaoge's body was completely integrated within this Buddha idol.

The next moment, boundless devilish qi converged to coil around that ancient Buddha before congregating to form an even more gigantic black Buddha!

The massive black Buddha had the '卐' symbol that was circulating in reverse on its foreheads, chests and palms.

"Your action proves my guess," Yan Zhaoge's voice resounded from the mouth of that gigantic Buddha, "If you cultivate in the unfeeling dao, Brocade Emperor, to completely rid yourself of all future complications and reach a higher level, you will have to cultivate my father's Grand Simplicity Splendour Cloud as expected."

# HSSB1095: The real ace up Yan Zhaoge's sleeve

---

The massive black Buddha resembled a tribulation from the end of the world and the overlord of the devilish domain as it sat cross-legged between the heavens and earth of the Nine Underworlds.

It was just that this Buddha showed no propensity for peace and tranquillity whatsoever as a devilish qi that seemed to cause one to become crazed nourished and disrupted the area.

“Evaṃ mayā-śrutam, devils illuminate the myriad lifeforms.”

Yan Zhaoge's voice that resounded from the mouth of the gigantic Buddha was also different from usual as a sinister, vicious intent emanated from within.

Seeing the gigantic Buddha that was completely pitch black and had a reversed '卐' symbol on its foreheads, chests and palms, the Brocade Emperor too was rather taken aback, “You actually are proficient in the Faceless Devilish Scripture to this extent? I have never seen you exhibit signs of potentially plummeting to the devilish dao, though.”

He clicked his tongue in wonder, “Is it that you have truly concealed it well or is your mind so unwavering? Not falling to the dark side but still successfully cultivating the Faceless Devilish Scripture to this extent-this is a rare accomplishment indeed.”

The pitch black Buddha said, “As your current thoughts are too difficult to guess, this Yan would surely have to be careful. I would never have dared to enter the Nine Underworlds alongside you without having made any preparations beforehand. After all, you could easily kill someone covertly here.”

“This makes no difference,” The Brocade Emperor smiled, with no intention of showing mercy at all.

The massive Taiji diagram obscured the heavens and concealed

the sun, enveloping the heavens and earth of the Nine Underworlds as all things turned illusory and returned to primordial yin and yang.

The gigantic Buddha raised its palms simultaneously, the reversed '卐' symbols circulating with the boundless devilish sea and avowed to a path of no return forcibly blocking the Brocade Emperor's Taiji Yin Yang Palm.

Yan Zhaoge had not spent much time cultivating in the Faceless Devilish Scripture as he would indeed be unable to display such prowess under normal circumstances.

Still, they were in the Nine Underworlds right now.

Meanwhile, Yan Zhaoge's martial foundation was the Peerless Heavenly Scripture!

Extinguishing all things, birthing all things, accepting and encompassing all things.

This was the ultimate scripture that was most proficient at projecting other martial arts in this world!

Every acupoint within Yan Zhaoge's body was displaying the phenomenon of the peerless infinity of chaos at this moment.

Next, boundless devilish qi congregated within from the external world of the Nine Underworlds all around him, transforming into countless pitch black Buddhas.

The numerous Buddhas chanted, numerous devils roaring.

Yan Zhaoge completely combined his true essence with devilish qi at this moment, relying on peerless infinity to guard his core before he manifested the form of the Peerless Heavenly Devil.

This was something that he could only do in the Nine Underworlds. As boundless devilish qi surged, even as the gigantic Buddha was becoming more solemn and dignified, it was becoming eviler too!

“While you can gather devilish qi to guard your body and manifest the form of devils and Buddhas here, it is only an imitation of its appearance,” The Brocade Emperor said mildly, “A late Immortal Bridge Martial Saint or even Human Exalt who is versed in the Faceless Heavenly Scripture might already be unable to beat you as you normally are.”

“Right now, you are actually throwing away your advantage just to execute the Faceless Devilish Scripture. This is a totally self-defeating trade-off.”

The terrifying Taiji diagram pressured downwards unceasingly as the reversed ‘卐’ symbols on the surface of the gigantic Buddha’s body gradually ceased to rotate.

The body of the gigantic Buddha even began shaking non-stop, with fragments beginning to fly off.

“Even a Human Exalt who is proficient in the Faceless Devilish Scripture would naturally be unable to defeat me, even when in the Nine Underworlds.”

As if corroborating his words, the pitch black Buddha that Yan Zhaoge was manifested as now looked like it was soon to fall apart.

The pitch black Buddha spoke, “While this Yan has always been full of myself, I still possess that basic level of self-awareness at the very least. If I believed that I would be able to withstand you, the Brocade Emperor, just like that, that would not be me insulting you, but me asking for it.”

“So, you are waiting for this Grand Illusory Spatial Thunder?” The Brocade Emperor asked mildly.

As Yan Zhaoge was drawing devilish qi over, the surrounding boundless devilish qi of the Nine Underworlds was correspondingly converging as well.

Some more distant entities were drawn over too.

Now, amidst the dense devilish qi throughout the boundless

darkness, a strange light of thunder suddenly flickered.

The next moment, a clump of thunder-light that seemed crystalline appeared within their fields of vision.

Within this thunder-light was densely riddled layers upon layers of spatial wrinkles, stacked together in an alarming fashion.

Layers of thunder-light refracted and penetrated as it was like countless screens of light had stacked together to form a thundercloud that resembled a crystalline solid.

This crystalline solid was incomparable huge as it seemed only slightly smaller than Yan Zhaoge in his Devil-Buddha form.

It was none other than a thundercloud condensed from the Grand Illusory Spatial Thunder of the Nine Heavenly Immortal Thunders after it had been stacked and accumulated to a certain extent.

The spatial dimension formed of two sword-lights that after Yan Zhaoge and the others had encountered after having entered the Nine Underworlds had been formed because of this thundercloud.

It was just that the thundercloud had drifted off afterwards, leaving for another location.

Still, because that Dijiang who also bore Grand Illusory Spatial Thunder had been active in the vicinity, their thunderbolts had attracted each other with this thundercloud gradually approaching.

Now, as Yan Zhaoge drew devilish qi over and influenced the devilish qi cycle of their surroundings, the thundercloud formed of this Grand Illusory Spatial Thunder was drawn over close to he and the Brocade Emperor.

If such an oceanic amount of Grand Illusory Spatial Thunder from the thundercloud exploded, it was sufficient to completely shatter this region of the Nine Underworlds.

Even a True Emperor would be swept away by the chaotic flow of space to who knew where, even if he was able to withstand it.

Yan Zhaoge had naturally been paying attention to that Grand Illusory Spatial Thunder. Still, this had been noticed by the Brocade Emperor too.

He had been long since prepared for it as while casually suppressing the pitch black Buddha with one hand, he waved lightly towards that thundercloud with his other hand.

The Grand Beginning Bright Emptiness Form was not only used for self-protection.

As the Brocade Emperor waved his hand, amidst the changes in dimensional space, that thundercloud was instantly locked down where it was, unable to move any closer.

Now, however, that gigantic Buddha that already seemed on the brink of collapse suddenly chanted once more.

“Evaṃ mayā-śrutam, devils illuminate the myriad lifeforms!”

The Brocade Emperor’s initially perpetually calm expression suddenly changed at this moment!

It was as though something had exploded within his heart!

“...Heart’s Will Thunder?!” The Brocade Emperor blurted out.

This was none other than the strangest thunderbolt between the heavens and earth and another of the Nine Heavenly Immortal Thunders, the Heart’s Will Thunder!

The Grand Illusory Spatial Thunder had merely been a faint to obscure things.

Yan Zhaoge’s true trump card against the Brocade Emperor was this Heart’s Will Thunder!

Despite being a thunderbolt, it did not visibly exist in the form of electricity.

Within the entire wide universe, it was never visible to anyone as it only ever resounded at the very core of one's being, being an explosion of thunderbolts manifested of a person's thoughts!

The difficulty in using it against an enemy was how to cause heart thunder to explode within them.

If this succeeded, it would be hard to defend against externally. One's cultivation base would be meaningless as things would only depend on whether they could vanquish their own heart devil which had suddenly been drawn out to the fore.

Yan Zhaoge had given up his usual advantage and forcibly gathered devilish qi to simulate a rise of his cultivation base for the short term so as to get this thunder to explode in the Brocade Emperor's heart!

He had not pushed open the door to Immortality at the end of the day. If he had been facing other True Immortals, it would surely be difficult for him to succeed.

Still, it was different with the Brocade Emperor!

Even without the Heart's Will Thunder exploding now, there was already something up with the Brocade Emperor's mind.

In his current state, suffering this explosion was like encountering a nemesis for him!

The Brocade Emperor emitted a muffled groan as he helplessly stumbled backwards.

The swiftly circulating intermingling black and white that was the phenomenon of Taiji, Grand Ultimate and was manifested within his pupils actually vaguely showed signs of falling apart!

# HSSB1096: *Two madmen are worse than one*

---

The Brocade Emperor stumbled backwards, no longer able to suppress the pitch black Buddha that Yan Zhaoge was manifested as.

He frowned as black and white light intermittently flashed across his face, doing so countless times in a matter of seconds.

His soul which had already been unstable in the first place seemed about to be ripped apart at this moment.

The Heart's Will Thunder exploded at the very core of his being, stimulating that heart devil of his.

One's cultivation base no longer mattered at a time like this as it fully depended on them conquering and dispelling the devil in their hearts.

The Brocade Emperor's current problem had been caused by cultivation deviation as it was now as if oil had been added to the fire.

Even though he had already attained the Emperor realm a thousand years back, it was still tough for him now.

Yan Zhaoge said calmly, "You should not get so worked up, Brocade Emperor. This is the Nine Underworlds, after all, while the Heart Devil has always been in existence."

The 'heart devil' that he spoke of was not the inner devil of martial practitioners.

Instead, he was referring to the Heart Devil of the Six Supreme Devils of the Twelve Devilish Gods, one of the most powerful devils in the universe.

The Heart Devil had always existed since its birth as a great Devil that was destined never to be extinguished completely.

As long as lifeforms that possessed intelligence still existed



within this world, there was the possibility of the Heart Devil being nourished and reborn.

Just from this point alone, it was more terrifying than even the Six Ancestral Devils as an existence that could only ever be suppressed and never fully exterminated.

The Heart Devil would live eternally unless all lifeforms were extinguished.

No one knew if the Heart Devil was presently within the Nine Underworlds.

Still, if it was currently in the Nine Underworlds, the cultivation deviation of the Brocade Emperor, a True Immortal, with his inner devil running amok, might possibly attract this ancestor and source of all inner devils.

The Brocade Emperor was acting unpredictably and different from usual due to his unstable mind.

Still, whether it was his feeling side or his unfeeling side, neither would be willing to see that great Devil descend before their very eyes.

Gazing at Yan Zhaoge, he ceased to attack.

He flicked the sleeve of his robe which expanded, a flag appearing.

That large flag had Grand Commencement as its pole, Bright Emptiness of Grand Beginning as its flag surface and several streams of plain cloud qi surrounding it along with a gigantic black and white yin yang Taiji diagram that coiled around in the air.

As the great flag swayed, a majestic force manifested which virtually disrupted this devilish domain to send it back to earlier heaven times.

That majestic, graceful phenomena resembled the gap between the human and Immortal realms, with one only able to gaze

yearningly towards it as it was impossible to get close to and touch it.

Even monarchs amongst Sacred Artifacts like the Extreme Yang Seal and the Extreme Yin Crown were incomparable to it.

While the Grand Longevity Banner was also in the form of a flag and possessed a concept that was not really inferior to it, the quality of the artifact itself was on a different level, with such a gap being like a heavenly gulf which seemed impossible to surpass.

This was the Brocade Emperor's Immortal Artifact, the Four Grands Earlier Heaven Flag!

Back in his battle with Mars Halberd that year, he had originally been at a disadvantage, unable to defeat his opponent who had already been around thousands of years ago.

Afterwards, he had retrieved the Four Grands Earlier Heaven Flag, only then reversing the situation and ultimately defeating Mars Halberd as the victor of the contest.

Now, the great flag waved, enveloping the heavens and earth of the region in guarding the Brocade Emperor.

The Brocade Emperor entered the meditative position with his eyes closed, stabilising his mind and suppressing his inner devil.

Seeing this, Yan Zhaoge gave up on any further action as he dissipated the surging devilish qi.

He could do nothing against the Brocade Emperor who was guarded by the Four Grands Earlier Heaven Flag.

While the Brocade Emperor was currently undergoing cultivation deviation, if he truly ignored the potential crisis that was the descent of the Heart Devil, going all out even at risk of the consequences, he could still possess immense destructive power nevertheless.

Now that he had prevented the Brocade Emperor from attacking

any further, his initial goal was basically already achieved.

The pitch black Buddha vanished within the devilish domain of the Nine Underworlds, several streams of devilish qi dissipating as Yan Zhaoge's form reappeared.

He did not let down his guard, though. Now was still far from the time when he could relax.

That cloud of Grand Illusory Spatial Thunder instantly approached once more now that it was no longer being obstructed by the Brocade Emperor.

Still, because it had previously been suppressed by the Brocade Emperor's Grand Beginning Bright Emptiness Form and the Brocade Emperor had suddenly retreated after being struck by Heart's Will Thunder, the thundercloud was affected by this as it instantly showed signs of exploding!

Yan Zhaoge grabbed Meng Wan and shot towards the side.

Yet, the Grand Illusory Spatial Thunder exploded before they could fully get away.

The thundercloud did not explode completely. Still, bolts upon bolts of thunder that had originally folded in on themselves as they were compressed within a tight space now expanded outwards.

Within a mere instant, countless dimensions of space expanded non-stop both internally and externally, spreading like ripples of water as they seemed infinite and endless.

The surrounding space grew chaotic as even Yan Zhaoge was only able to barely withstand it despite being versed in the Immortal Trapping Sword.

The Brocade Emperor still sat in the meditative position with his eyes closed beneath the protection of the Four Grands Earlier Heaven Flag, relying fully on it to guard himself. Even so, beneath the multi-layered explosion of Grand Illusory Spatial Thunder, it was barely able to remain afloat.

Yan Zhaoge similarly stabilised himself at his present location lest he and Meng Wan be swept off to who knew where.

The explosion of that Grand Illusory Spatial Thunder seemed endless as it went on without pause, showing no signs of stopping whatsoever.

Yan Zhaoge was not concerned about this, though.

While the Brocade Emperor might be able to stabilise his mind as time went by, suppressing the restless inner devil within his heart and regaining his offensive capabilities, Yan Zhaoge would be able to protect himself in the Nine Underworlds so long as he possessed the Heart's Will Thunder.

Protected by the Four Grands Earlier Heaven Flag, the Brocade Emperor was much less threatened by the Heart's Will Thunder. Yet, he was still hard pressed to withstand this power which came from within.

After all, the source of this was his mind which had already been unstable in the first place.

It was just that there were still many other threats in the Nine Underworlds besides the Brocade Emperor at the end of the day.

The aftershocks of their conflict and the disturbance caused by the Grand Illusory Spatial Thunder would definitely alert the numerous devils of the Nine Underworlds to their presence.

The movements of the two Sovereigns of the Immortal Court a distance away were also of concern to them.

Yan Zhaoge stabilised himself amidst the chaotic layers of space caused by the Grand Illusory Spatial Thunder, attempting to distinguish directions.

The heavens and earth of the Nine Underworlds were ripped apart alongside the spreading of the expanding space, forming numerous spatial crevices leading to unknowable locations all about the Nine Underworlds.

Still, the cloud of Grand Illusory Spatial Thunder had not exploded completely at the end of the day.

Therefore, the chaotic flows of space slowly weakened as time passed, gradually falling still.

Yet, Yan Zhaoge's heart suddenly jolted as he looked towards one of the spatial crevices.

A powerful aura suddenly surged from within.

A figure slowly flew out from that distorted spatial crevice.

He was a relatively handsome youth who was garbed in purple and had pale skin, appearing lazy and uninterested towards everything.

Struggling out from the spatial crevice and scanning the scene before him, his gaze suddenly lit up with some satisfaction.

"Oh, the paths that cross in life!" This youth exclaimed emotionally.

This was none other than the Upper Exalt, Chen Qianhua, who had previously entered the Nine Underworlds!

From him, Yan Zhaoge could clearly feel a powerful aura that was comparable to those of the Brocade Emperor and the Encompassing Emperor!

Now that he was in the Nine Underworlds and not a lower world, the Upper Exalt was that most powerful Martial Saint who presided arrogantly over the entire World beyond Worlds.

# HSSB1097: Being surprised by others

---

Tenth level Martial Saints were known as Human Immortals, or Human Exalts.

Right now, the term Human Exalt might be most appropriate when conferred upon Chen Qianhua.

Still, Yan Zhaoge did not feel happy at all as he looked at this Upper Exalt.

He put a hand to his forehead, “The ancients spoke rightly in that a thousand cups of wine are too few for the best of acquaintances, but...”

Yan Zhaoge shook his head, looking pointedly towards Chen Qianhua, “But, even a single sentence feels excessive with someone you do not connect with.”

Chen Qianhua first glanced curiously at the Brocade Emperor.

The Brocade Emperor seemed oblivious to his arrival as he remained with his eyes closed where he was.

“Huh...” Chen Qianhua clicked his tongue, next no longer paying attention as he returned his gaze to Yan Zhaoge and smiled, “You have done much indeed over the matter of the Brocade Emperor.”

Yan Zhaoge chortled, “It feels like you are more concerned about this matter than I am.”

“No, no, no,” Chen Qianhua repeatedly shook his head in denial, “That was before.”

He gazed at Yan Zhaoge, “Now, I feel that you are far more interesting than him.”

Yan Zhaoge raised his brows slightly, at which Chen Qianhua said, “Previously, I felt that it would be better if the Brocade Emperor remained in this state.”

“As for you and most others, you probably desire that he does not

continue going on like how he is now.”

Chen Qianhua smiled, “Still, while you can agree on that, whether you would prefer a more feeling and emotional Brocade Emperor or an unfeeling, cold-hearted one would probably differ according to the person.”

“As for your intentions...” Chen Qianhua’s gaze shifted between Yan Zhaoge and Meng Wan, “From the looks of it, you do not wish to see an unfeeling, cold-blooded Brocade Emperor?”

Yan Zhaoge narrowed his eyes into slits, light flickering within his eyes, “From what you say, could it be that you wish to help the Brocade Emperor walk the unfeeling path?”

Chen Qianhua nodded as if it was only natural, “Certainly.”

He was totally unconcerned whichever path the Brocade Emperor walked.

Like he said, he was now interested in having Yan Zhaoge as an opponent and no longer the Brocade Emperor.

When he was interested in the Brocade Emperor, he would oppose him.

If the Brocade Emperor wished to rid himself of this dysfunctional state, Chen Qianhua would do his best to impede him.

Still, now that he found Yan Zhaoge more interesting than the Brocade Emperor, he would switch to helping the Brocade Emperor whose unfeeling side was increasingly gaining the upper hand, hence opposing Yan Zhaoge.

The Brocade Emperor was a chess piece within his mind at this moment as he competed with Yan Zhaoge.

As someone who saw a True Immortal in this manner, rather than calling Chen Qianhua arrogant, one should really call him a madman.

“So, the person I want to kill now is not you,” Chen Qianhua looked towards Meng Wan, “Instead, this young lady is the one I want to kill. After killing her and Fu Ting too, the Brocade Emperor will have no obstacles in pursuing the unfeeling dao.”

“Are you prepared to protect her? What do you intend to do?”

Looking excited for once, Chen Qianhua’s gaze shifted between Yan Zhaoge and Meng Wan before he suddenly laughed, “Heart’s Will Thunder is useless against me.”

Unlike the Brocade Emperor who had suffered cultivation deviation with his mind being split into two, the way Chen Qianhua was acting was completely congruent with his inner nature.

From the outside, at least, there seemed to be no flaw in his mental defences.

To forcibly stimulate and awaken his heart devil through Heart’s Will Thunder, someone whose cultivation base was noticeably higher than his would be required.

Additionally, Yan Zhaoge deeply doubted that a person like this truly possessed any heart devil.

He was also more concerned about the fact that Chen Qianhua had managed to discern that the Brocade Emperor’s current plight had been caused by Heart’s Will Thunder with a single glance despite the fact that he had arrived after the Brocade Emperor had already gradually regained mental stability, through the chaotic flows of space.

As Yan Zhaoge’s gaze met Chen Qianhua’s, looking at his eyes that were shining slightly, his heart jolted as he vaguely sensed that something was out of the ordinary.

Even as he pondered about this, Chen Qianhua was smiling as he strode forth towards he and Meng Wan, “I won’t kill you, Yan Zhaoge. Without you, how dull would this world be?”



“Come, let me see how you intend to protect this young lady. Give me more pleasant surprises.”

With that, he raised a hand, unleashing a Cyclic Heavenly Seal towards Meng Wan from overhead!

As Chen Qianhua attacked now, the impact was completely different from in the Eight Extremities World back then.

Beneath that Cyclic Heavenly Seal, the heavens and earth were instantly overturned.

Yan Zhaoge looked calmly at Chen Qianhua, smacking his lips, “Rather than me, someone else will surprise you.”

Even as he said this, the Brocade Emperor’s voice suddenly resounded, “Little Friend Chen, aren’t you extending your reach too far?”

Chen Qianhua raised his brows, looking at the Brocade Emperor, “If I remember correctly, Brocade Emperor, all that is needed is for your two daughters to vanish from this world. You do not have to do the deed yourself.”

The Brocade Emperor Fu Yunchi had already reopened his eyes beneath the protection of the Four Grands Earlier Heaven Flag as he now said, “That has nothing to do with you.”

Amidst his words, he suddenly arrived before Chen Qianhua, raising his palm in blocking that Cyclic Heavenly Seal!

The Taiji Yin Yang Palm of the Grand Clear lineage battled the Cyclic Heavenly Seal of the Jade Clear lineage.

Chen Qianhua’s palm lightened as he was jolted flying upwards into the air by the Brocade Emperor.

“You are indeed much more interesting than you were before, Brocade Emperor,” Chen Qianhua’s expression did not change as he looked down on the Brocade Emperor through the corner of his eyes, “If you were truly on the unfeeling path, you would only take

benefits and detriments into consideration rather than feel dissatisfied and unhappy from someone beating you to your prey.”

As he spoke, he raised his other hand as well, combining the Cyclic Heavenly Seal with the Earth Encompassing Seal, his fist intent massive as magnificent earth as it pressured the Taiji diagram down below.

Where the three palms clashed, a long crevice was instantly ripped amidst space which extended far into the distance, seemingly without end.

The nearby heavens and earth of the Nine Underworlds seemed to be ripped in two at this moment.

“I originally thought that your path had gradually already been set. From the looks of it now, though, it is still wavering and uncertain.”

Chen Qianhua suddenly laughed, “Could it be the effects of the Heart’s Will Thunder?”

Bending over with laughter, he turned to look at Yan Zhaoge, “He had originally already been leaning towards one side. Now, however, he has regained his original, conflicted state. Isn’t this the situation that you would not want to see the most? Would you see this as a gain or a loss?”

Yan Zhaoge crossed his arms, smiling relaxedly, “It is still too early to say this.”

The Brocade Emperor said mildly, “You speak too much, Little Friend Chen.”

The Taiji diagram on his palm rotated, restricting Chen Qianhua’s palms.

Then, he raised his other hand, bringing it down towards Chen Qianhua.

“Just as Yan Zhaoge said, you have really given me a pleasant

surprise, Brocade Emperor,” Despite saying so, Chen Qianhua seemed to have foreseen this as his figure suddenly changed from real to illusory, breaking free of that suction force emitted by the Brocade Emperor’s palm with the Grand Beginning Bright Emptiness Form.

The Brocade Emperor said nothing, simply making a fist seal with his other hand that was striking at Chen Qianhua as he executed the Grand Beginning Bright Emptiness Form as well.

Affected by this, Chen Qianhua’s figure instantly returned from illusory to real.

Yet, for some reason, he leapt towards Brocade Emperor who was also executing the Grand Beginning Bright Emptiness Form.

Strange laughter resounded as Chen Qianhua simultaneously struck outwards with his palms, golden flames suddenly surging.

Where the flames passed, they shockingly blazed through the Bright Emptiness of Grand Beginning!

“The essence of earlier heaven’s departed fire? Earlier Heaven Departed Fire Divine Palm?” The Brocade Emperor was slightly astonished.

The Earlier Heaven Departed Fire Divine Palm was a peak supreme martial art of pre-Great Calamity times. Legend had it that it originated from a bigwig of the era of the Investiture of the Gods, Daoist Suppressing Land.

Chen Qianhua’s palm force manifested the essence of earlier heaven’s departed fire, forcibly blazing right through the Bright Emptiness of Grand Beginning as it arrived before the Brocade Emperor.

## HSSB1098: The same method once more

---

Despite his surprise at how Chen Qianhua even knew a long lost supreme martial art like the Earlier Heaven Departed Fire Divine Palm, considering the breadth of his knowledge, the Brocade Emperor was able to easily accept it.

He remained unmoving where he was. While the essence of earlier heaven departed fire was powerful indeed, it would not be able to trouble a True Immortal like him unless it was used by another person of the Immortal realm.

Indeed, those golden flames that incinerated the heavens and extinguished the earth penetrated through Grand Beginning, yet were unable to injure the Brocade Emperor's body in the slightest.

The body of a True Immortal was leakless and immeasurable as it was difficult for any power of mortals to harm it any longer. They were not reputed to be this formidable for nothing!

Still, Chen Qianhua had similarly long foreseen this as he spun, arriving behind the Brocade Emperor before punching towards the back of his neck.

His fist-intent manifested as a sceptre that was promptly swung towards the Brocade Emperor!

The essence of earlier heaven departed fire had only been a feint. This was his true killing move.

Yan Zhaoge's pupils dilated slightly as he spectated the battle and saw this scene.

Despite being a Martial Saint, Chen Qianhua actually appeared faster in switching techniques as compared to the Brocade Emperor, a True Immortal.

It was not that his movements were faster. Instead, it seemed like he was foreseeing every move and thus grasping the advantage.

Back in the Vast Ocean World, Yan Zhaoge had once seen a martial art known as the Spirit Rhino Fist.

Despite looking similar, the two were actually worlds apart.

One must know that between the Brocade Emperor and Chen Qianhua existed a heavenly gulf which was the gap between the human and Immortal realms!

Being able to foresee his opponent's actions even when it was the Brocade Emperor he was facing, just how might the battles between Chen Qianhua and opponents of the same cultivation level or lower unfold?

While this person was enshrouded by a fog of mystery, Yan Zhaoge felt like things were gradually becoming clearer, the clouds parting as he saw the light of day.

The Brocade Emperor did not seem all that concerned by Chen Qianhua's miraculous apparent foreknowledge.

Still, sensing the sceptre which was striking at him from behind, his gaze turned slightly cold.

While he would not be wounded by this, he would be forced into taking a few steps back, causing him to lose face.

More importantly, this sceptre technique was also a supreme martial art of the Grand Clear lineage!

Besides the Grand Beginning Bright Emptiness Form, streams of plain cloud qi circulated about the Brocade Emperor's body as he executed the Grand Plainness Immeasurable Body as well.

As the two Grands of Grand Beginning and Grand Simplicity combined, a mighty defensive power manifested which forcibly blocked Chen Qianhua's blow. The Brocade Emperor did not even falter in the least as he next abruptly turned and clawed towards Chen Qianhua!

Having failed to achieve success with this single move, Chen

Qianhua had already leisurely retreated once more.

Still, the Brocade Emperor's gaze was calm and heavy this time as he pointed outwards with a finger.

He moved slowly as he appeared totally nonchalant.

Still, this finger disregarded both space and time, arriving right before Chen Qianhua despite having been launched later!

Of the earlier heaven Five Cosmos Grand Manifestations, the Grand Commencement Divine Finger!

Known also as the Grand Supreme Oneworld Divine Finger, it bore the formless, intangible concept of Grand Commencement, projecting the Oneworld of before the heavens and earth had been split apart as it was profound beyond compare.

At virtually the same instant that the Brocade Emperor pointed outwards with his finger, his fingertip arrived before Chen Qianhua's forehead!

Chen Qianhua uttered a yell, the power of the Jade Clear direct lineage's Later Heaven Six Scriptures congregating and projecting the foundation of the world.

Mighty defensive power and recuperative capabilities simultaneously exerted their effects as this time, it was his turn to forcibly withstand an attack of the Brocade Emperor's.

Beneath the powerful might of the Grand Commencement Divine Finger, Chen Qianhua's foundation of the world dissipated before reforming, reformed before dissipating as it pulsed ceaselessly.

The Brocade Emperor's finger proceeded forth without end, yet was eternally mere inches away from Chen Qianhua's forehead!

The combination of the Jade Clear lineage's Later Heaven Six Scriptures which resulted in the projection of the foundation of the world could bear and withstand countless earlier heaven supreme martial arts.

As the Brocade Emperor's cultivation base was greater, he was still able to hold the upper hand in suppressing Chen Qianhua.

Now, however, Chen Qianhua tilted his head slightly, smiling at the Brocade Emperor.

He brought his palms together, streams of qi intermingling that were red or white.

Seeing this, the gazes of Yan Zhaoge and the Brocade Emperor flickered, "Bright Red Tribulation Scripture? He even knows supreme martial arts of the Prime Clear direct lineage?"

The direct lineage martial arts of the Three Clear lineages each numbered ten.

The Jade Clear lineage had the ten Primordial Heavenly Scriptures while the Grand Clear lineage had the Earlier Heaven Five Grands in the form of the Grand Cosmos Five Manifestations along with the Later Heaven Five Supremes.

Meanwhile, besides the Numinous Treasure Four Swords and a final secret art, prior to the Four Swords, the Prime Clear direct lineage had Five Scriptures which narrated the variations of five tribulations of the era's start.

The Numinous Treasure Four Swords were both famous and powerful while the New Era Five Scriptures had mostly been lost long ago such that few still knew about their existence now.

The founder of the Prime Clear lineage, the Lord of Numinous Treasure, did not just signify destruction in itself as he signified going from being to unbeing.

There first had to be 'being' for an 'unbeing' state to exist.

The Lord of Numinous Treasure was the manifestation of the world's 'being'.

The New Era Five Scriptures narrated the process between earlier heaven and later heaven.

The Numinous Treasure Four Swords signified going from being to unbeing when all things returned to nothingness with all lifeforms destroyed alongside time and space.

The final art narrated the concept of ‘unbeing’.

Amongst the Five Scriptures, this was the Bright Red Tribulation Scripture which narrated the dao of tribulation from bright redness, originating from yin and yang intermingling and being born.

The Three Purities existed simultaneously as all Daoist arts were connected in some way or another. The principles of the Bright Red Tribulation Scripture possessed similar miraculous subtleties to the Yin Yang Heavenly Scripture of the Jade Clear lineage’s Primordial Heavenly Scriptures and the Taiji Yin Yang Palm of Grand Ultimate of the Grand Clear lineage’s Earlier Heaven Five Grands.

The Bright Red Yin Yang Change of the World beyond Worlds’ northwestern Red Sea’s lineage was descended of Red Essence One. Still, its principles were somewhat similar and connected to those within the Bright Red Tribulation Scripture.

Now, Chen Qianhua first withstood the Brocade Emperor’s Grand Commencement Divine Finger with his foundation of the world before executing another supreme martial art, the Bright Red Tribulation Scripture.

He used the Cyclic Heavenly Scripture as a connector, starting from Grand Commencement and going all the way from earlier heaven to later heaven times.

Along with the changes in life and creation, while Chen Qianhua was unable to fully rid the Grand Commencement Divine Finger of its might, he was still freed from the suppression of the Brocade Emperor.

As Yan Zhaoge spectated this, the corners of his mouth arced



slightly upwards in a smile.

Chen Qianhua's actions were somewhat similar to the reversion to earlier heaven times from when he executed the Cyclic Heavenly Seal.

It was just that he caused a reversion to earlier heaven times with the Cyclic Heavenly Seal, whereas Chen Qianhua went along with the flow, guiding earlier heaven into later heaven.

While this person had not been able to integrate the various supreme martial arts into one, facing this current situation, it was indeed a miraculous means of dispelling the Brocade Emperor's attack. After all, from the looks of it, Chen Qianhua was not versed in the Heaven Opening Scripture.

However this Upper Exalt's personality was, his martial prowess was indeed something.

While he was suffering the misfortune of cultivation deviation and destabilised by Heart's Will Thunder, the Brocade Emperor's cultivation base was still domineering as his leakless, immeasurable body of a True Immortal swept through the mortal realm.

Yet, he could still do nothing to this young opponent.

Every inch of his reputation was well deserved indeed. The former Heavenly Young Master and the current Upper Exalt, Chen Qianhua, was truly able to resist True Immortals as only a mere mortal!

Even throughout all of history, his strength was hard to come by indeed.

While Chen Qianhua was unable to break through the defences of the leakless body of an Immortal, the lofty Emperor was hard pressed to defeat him as well.

Neither side was able to seize a decisive advantage.

If they continued dragging it out just like that, while Chen Qianhua possessed vigorous true essence, it would still appear rather lacking as compared to that of the Brocade Emperor who was already an Immortal.

Indeed, his gaze flickered slightly, suddenly erupting with a shocking glow.

A subtle, formless power condensed into a tangible glow, spurting out from Chen Qianhua's eyes to land on the Brocade Emperor!

"Heart's Will Thunder...Heart's Will Heavenly Scripture, heh!" The Brocade Emperor smiled coldly.

Chen Qianhua had unleashed the might of the Heart's Will Heavenly Scripture of the Primordial Heavenly Scripture's Later Heaven Six Scriptures to the maximum as he went all out in this blow.

The Heart's Will Heavenly Scripture narrated the dao of the variations in the souls of all living beings in later heaven.

As it was executed by Chen Qianhua now, it seemed to aim for the Brocade Emperor's weak point as had just been struck by Yan Zhaoge's Heart's Will Thunder earlier.

Still, with the Brocade Emperor's vast combat experience, having suffered greatly against the Heart's Will Thunder earlier, after having sensed earlier in their fight that Chen Qianhua was versed in the Heart's Will Heavenly Scripture, he had constantly been prepared for the possibility of this being used.

As Chen Qianhua unleashed a full-powered attack with the Heart's Will Heavenly Scripture at this moment, the Brocade Emperor did not retreat as he rampantly exerted more force, continuing to attack Chen Qianhua ferociously with the Grand Commencement Divine Finger.

As Chen Qianhua went all out in stimulating the Heart's Will

Heavenly Scripture, the force of the combined Later Heaven Six Scriptures from earlier lost its equilibrium with the foundation of the world diminishing alongside the weakening of his defences!

# HSSB1099: Strong exterior, weak interior

---

Chen Qianhua had repeated the method that Yan Zhaoge had earlier used to deal with the Brocade Emperor.

True Immortals were leakless as those in the mortal realm were hard pressed to wound them.

Since the Brocade Emperor had such a deficiency, he would definitely make good use of it.

Still, the experienced Brocade Emperor had been long prepared for this as he counterattacked fiercely.

Chen Qianhua's gaze flickered slightly as he seemed unconcerned by this.

Because attacking with the Heart's Will Heavenly Scripture had weakened his foundation of the world formed of the combined Later Heaven Six Scriptures, he was hard pressed to block the Brocade Emperor's Grand Commencement Divine Finger the same way he had just earlier.

Still, he was neither flustered nor panicked as he emitted a long roar.

Endless devilish qi began converging towards Chen Qianhua from the surrounding Nine Underworlds.

The jet-black devilish avatar appeared again between the heavens and earth, resembling an ancient devilish domain and divine mountain which had existed ever since ancient times, indestructible and unshakeable.

The Nine Underworlds' devilish domain originated from the second Ancestral Devil of the Twelve Devilish Gods, the Existence Creation Heavenly Devil. Though it had died, its devilish arts had been left behind, with their concepts analysed to form a martial scripture known as the Existence Creation Devilish Scripture.

The scripture recorded eight supreme martial arts of the devilish dao which consisted of the eight trigrams of Heaven, Earth, Wind, Thunder, Water, Fire, Lake and Mountain, hence being known as the Eight Ultimates of Creation.

One of these, manifesting the trigram of earth, was the Immovable Devilish Body, a peak defensive martial art of the devilish dao.

This was precisely what Chen Qianhua was executing at this moment.

The Nine Underworlds was formed of the corpse of the Existence Creation Heavenly Devil in the first place. As this devilish art was executed in the Nine Underworlds, boundless devilish qi was drawn over to bolster the self which resulted in even more shocking defensive power.

While it was inferior to the foundation of the world formed of the combined power of the Jade Clear lineage's Later Heaven Six Scriptures, it still made for a watertight defence.

The Brocade Emperor's Grand Commencement Divine Finger was truly powerful as it successively broke through the Grand Beginning Bright Emptiness Form, the bright red qis of yin and yang and the Cyclic Heavenly Seal.

It then penetrated through the weakened foundation of the world before finally attacking the Immovable Devilish Body.

Still, it had dwindled greatly due to the numerous layers of defence as it was clearly running out of power.

While cracks appeared on the massive devilish avatar that was dense as a mountain, it ultimately was not shattered by this finger of the Brocade Emperor's.

Now, Chen Qianhua's attack with the Heart's Will Heavenly Scripture began taking effect on the Brocade Emperor too.

If he could create chaos in the Brocade Emperor's mind again,

Chen Qianhua would have the chance to seize the upper hand.

He was certainly aware that with the Brocade Emperor's capabilities, just using the Heart's Will Heavenly Scripture alone would merely result in a situation where both sides received damage.

This Immovable Devilish Body that had suddenly been activated by him as he used defence as offence was crucial to his victory in this battle.

Still, the current Brocade Emperor was indeed very capable of giving 'pleasant surprises'.

A profound glow suddenly flickered before a massive flag that concealed the heavens appeared.

It was the Immortal Artifact, the Four Grands Earlier Heaven Flag!

A True Immortal was actually utilising an Immortal Artifact in a battle against a Martial Saint!

Even though this Martial Saint was the World beyond Worlds' number one Martial Saint, Chen Qianhua, this action of the Brocade Emperor's was shocking as he cared not about his face at all.

Still, for he who was suffering from cultivation deviation and was not in a right state of mind, it did not seem all that unexpected when one thought about it.

That Chen Qianhua had been able to cause an Emperor to act shamelessly should itself be a cause for pride for him.

It was just that if an Emperor who had pushed open the door to Immorality were really to throw aside his status and act however he wanted, it would really be a force that those in the mortal realm were incapable of resisting.

In the legendary battle when four Human Exalts of the Prime

Clear lineage had slain an Immortal with the help of the Immortal Exterminating Formation, the opponent had actually been bare-handed.

The protection of the Four Grands Earlier Heaven Flag had no way of resisting that attack which came from deep within at all.

It was the Brocade Emperor himself who was problematic and therefore vulnerable.

His gaze flickered slightly as his mind was somewhat unstable, though still not as severe as when he had suffered Yan Zhaoge's Heart's Will Thunder earlier as he was still able to do battle.

Looking at the drifting Four Grands Earlier Heaven Flag, Chen Qianhua did not have any intention of exhibiting mockery, disdain or dissatisfaction.

Instead, his eyes glowed as he appeared overjoyed, "Brocade Emperor, the way you are now is unprecedentedly, perfect! It is almost at the point where I can't even bear to help you into the unfeeling dao anymore for the sake of competing with Yan Zhaoge!"

There was no change in the Brocade Emperor's expression as he seemed totally unmoved. He directly waved the Four Grands Earlier Heaven Flag, bringing it down towards Chen Qianhua.

Chen Qianhua was neither panicked nor flustered as he just pointed outwards behind him.

In that direction was none other than that thundercloud of Grand Illusory Spatial Thunder from earlier which had not exploded completely.

While Chen Qianhua had a strange temperament as he did whatever he liked, he was always very meticulous with respect to the details once he had set his mind on something.

This thundercloud had been within his calculations all along.

As Chen Qianhua clashed with a powerful enemy in the form of the Brocade Emperor, while he had to constantly shift and evade, he was still able to maintain his position in between the thundercloud and the Brocade Emperor.

His back was to the thundercloud as he would be able to control and utilise it at any time.

Chen Qianhua had also considered the possibility of Yan Zhaoge interfering in this battle.

He had similarly positioned himself such that he was blocking Yan Zhaoge from the thundercloud.

A major part of him being at a disadvantage more of the time in his battle with the Brocade Emperor could be attributed to the fact that he had limited his own space for movement.

In a contest between experts, a single inch could spell the difference between victory and defeat.

Chen Qianhua's actions could be considered a bold demonstration of great skill.

Still, just as he was about to control the thundercloud and use it to block the Four Grands Earlier Heaven Flag, someone suddenly made a move!

Having previously been spectating and warily staying out of things, Yan Zhaoge's figure suddenly flashed as he arrived below Chen Qianhua.

Boundless devilish qi also agglomerated about Yan Zhaoge at this moment.

The next instant, yet another jet-black devilish avatar had appeared within the devilish domain of the Nine Underworlds!

This avatar was not like the pitch black Buddha idol that Yan Zhaoge had previously manifested as, instead being similar to the avatar manifested by Chen Qianhua with the Immovable Devilish



Body.

This was also a manifestation of the Existence Creation Heavenly Devil!

Roiling thunder rumbled, surging up straight towards Chen Qianhua.

“This is also a martial art of the Eight Ultimates of Creation of the devilish dao?” Chen Qianhua was momentarily taken aback, “The one that corresponds to thunder?”

It was none other than the Eight Desolates Thunder Palm, a devilish art that existed alongside the Immovable Devilish Body as one of the Eight Ultimates of Creation that ultimately originated from the Existence Creation Heavenly Devil.

This blow was unable to break through Chen Qianhua’s Immovable Devilish Body.

Still, the Brocade Emperor who was attacking Chen Qianhua suddenly sensed that the Immovable Devilish Body which had been incomparably sturdy as it resembled an eternal divine mountain a moment ago had suddenly weakened greatly.

While it still seemed sturdy, an unconcealable feeling of weakness emanated from within.

“Mountain Above Thunder Below, Duo-Trigram?” Chen Qianhua’s gaze flickered as he instantly sensed the principles behind what he had been affected by.

Of the Eight Trigrams, this was the Duo-Trigram formed of Mountain Above Thunder Below, the two yangs conflicting externally as the interior was abandoned for the exterior, leading to a deficiency of nourishment that could not be overlooked.

This manifested the phenomenon wherein it was tough on the outside but soft on the inside, having a shell that was far weaker than it looked!

While the Eight Desolates Thunder Palm was unable to break through the Immovable Devilish Body, it caused the latter to become incomparably fragile as it suffered other attacks from the external world.

Now, the Four Grands Earlier Heaven Flag waved downwards as it instantly sent Chen Qianhua spewing out blood as he flew backwards!

Behind him, the Grand Illusory Spatial Thunder that he himself had induced to explode ran totally amok as it transformed into numerous spatial vortexes that devoured him.

The backup move that he himself had prepared had now become a weapon used by another to do him harm.

The injured Chen Qianhua was hard pressed to break free of the chaotic flows of space as he could only be devoured by a spatial vortex.

Gazing back one final time, he saw Yan Zhaoge taking the form of that massive pitch black Buddha once more.

As the Brocade Emperor attacked Chen Qianhua with the Four Grands Earlier Heaven Flag rather than continuing to protect himself, Yan Zhaoge chanted once more, “Evaṃ mayā-śrutam, devils illuminate the myriad lifeforms!”

Yet another bolt of Heart’s Will Thunder streaked towards the Brocade Emperor!

Having suffered a first bolt of Heart’s Will Thunder before being attacked with the Heart’s Will Heavenly Scripture by Chen Qianhua, the Brocade Emperor ate a third successive strike now!

# HSSB1100: Yin and yang of Taiji, black and white Brocade Emperors

---

The Brocade Emperor was left in a dishevelled, harried state by that bolt of thunder.

Seeing this, Chen Qianhua stared wide-eyed from amidst the spatial vortex that was devouring him.

Even Meng Wan whom Yan Zhaoge had been protecting earlier was left dumbfounded.

While he had fought the Brocade Emperor earlier, he could be considered his helper as he opposed Chen Qianhua, his opponent, now.

Worried that the Brocade Emperor and Chen Qianhua might suddenly change their minds, Yan Zhaoge had previously been a mere spectator by the sidelines, silently observing their battle.

It had been perfectly logical for him to do so, and perfectly logical for him to attack Chen Qianhua too.

Chen Qianhua posed a more direct threat to him than the Brocade Emperor who was clearly in a problematic state due to cultivation deviation.

Still, Meng Wan was inevitably rather taken aback by how he immediately attacked the Brocade Emperor after attacking Chen Qianhua.

While it was not rare to see people who were friends one moment and then one's enemy the next, although Chen Qianhua seemed about to be devoured by the spatial vortex, it was not like he had no way at all of getting out of it.

Who knew if this mysterious Upper Exalt had other trump cards?

After helping the Brocade Emperor to break through Chen Qianhua's defences, Yan Zhaoge had then wholly unceremoniously

sent the Brocade Emperor a bolt of Heart's Will Thunder while he was using the Four Grands Earlier Heaven Flag to attack Chen Qianhua.

He had grasped this opportunity with the utmost precision as it could not have been any more perfect.

One could only say that he changed his face quicker than flipping the pages of a book.

No one would find it surprising at all if such a thing had been done by Chen Qianhua as the currently mentally unstable Brocade Emperor acting this way would also not be so unexpected.

Having previously seemed to have a decent bottom line despite perhaps not being all that morally upright, Yan Zhaoge ended up playing this even more naturally than that Emperor and Exalt now.

He seemed to have been targeting both the Brocade Emperor and Chen Qianhua right from the start.

This was even more arrogant than Chen Qianhua who had clashed frontally with the Brocade Emperor.

On seeing this, Chen Qianhua's eyes glowed, his spirits high as they had never been before.

He desperately wished to see what Yan Zhaoge would do next.

Yet, the spatial vortexes formed from the explosion of the Grand Illusory Spatial Thunder had already enveloped him.

The chaotic torrents induced by the complete explosion of such a massive cloud of Grand Illusory Spatial Thunder would be difficult to subvert even by a True Immortal.

He could only helplessly watch on as Yan Zhaoge and the Brocade Emperor vanished from his vision.

“Hey!” Despite having been heavily injured by Yan Zhaoge in the Eight Extremities World previously, also having been wounded by

the Brocade Emperor with the Four Grands Earlier Heaven Flag just earlier, Chen Qianhua had never appeared dissatisfied or defeated in the least as he had instead seemed greatly entertained.

At this moment, however, he appeared exceptionally dissatisfied.

Yet, regardless of his wishes, Chen Qianhua could only be devoured by the chaotic flows of space, vanishing in an instant.

Now that this uncertain variable was confirmed to be no more, Yan Zhaoge no longer paid any attention to it as he focused all his attention on the Brocade Emperor before him.

Guarded by the Four Grands Earlier Heaven Flag as he had been, the efficiency of the Heart's Will Thunder would be diminished greatly as Yan Zhaoge would be hard pressed to threaten him.

In suddenly attacking as the Brocade Emperor was attacking Chen Qianhua with the Four Grands Earlier Heaven Flag, Yan Zhaoge possessed a definite chance of succeeding with this manoeuvre.

Adding on his first thunderbolt from earlier, this was the third strike.

Yan Zhaoge and Chen Qianhua had both targeted the Brocade Emperor's current mental vulnerability as if successively acting to compromise it.

Chen Qianhua's attack had also become a part of Yan Zhaoge's plan.

As for the ethical issue of backstabbing an ally of sorts, Yan Zhaoge naturally ignored this.

He was currently unleashing Heart's Will Thunder with all his might.

The Brocade Emperor emitted a muffled groan as Taiji diagrams appeared within his pupils that rotated swiftly.

Yet, the representative black and white fishes of yin and yang

that embraced each other shattered amidst their high-speed rotation!

As the final boundary was broken, the Brocade Emperor roared towards the heavens before losing his mortal form, transforming into a massive Taiji diagram that encompassed the heavens and earth.

Meng Wan gazed upwards at that Taiji diagram, shocked.

“Pushing open the door to Immortality, no longer being mortal,” Yan Zhaoge too gazed at that Taiji diagram, “Many laws of the human realm can still be applicable for True Immortals, yet many may not be. What decides everything is still the True Immortal themselves rather than laws any longer.”

“Therefore, Immortals can also possess bodies of flesh and blood, having children and such, yet could also lose their mortal bodies along with the characteristics of the myriad lifeforms.”

“Whichever the case, it all depends on they themselves. Thus, transformations are actually not that surprising.”

Yan Zhaoge casually said, “It is not simply that failing the Immortal Mortality Tribulation sees one perish with their dao dissipated, yet with them entering new heavens and earth if they succeed.”

He could already basically know what transformations were going to happen with the Brocade Emperor with this.

Right now, that massive Taiji diagram of yin and yang was rotating rapidly.

Then, the black and white Taiji diagram similarly began being pulled to the sides by a tearing force, gradually losing its original form as a result.

Finally, the black and white fishes of yin and yang separated for good, one black and one white going their separate ways as they split apart to become independent!

The rampant devilish qi of the Nine Underworlds that was in the vicinity began frenziedly converging towards the black and white fishes of yin and yang, forming two massive masses of qi between the heavens and earth.

The rate at which the devilish qi was being drawn over was even fiercer and more rapid than when Yan Zhaoge and Chen Qianhua had executed devilish martial arts and manifested avatars earlier.

Meng Wan appeared to have thought of something as she abruptly spun, looking at Yan Zhaoge.

Yan Zhaoge's gaze was fixated on the two masses of qi, one white and one black, as it did not waver in the slightest.

Still, sensing the shock and uncertainty that Meng Wan was feeling, he nodded slightly in confirming her guess.

Seeing Yan Zhaoge nod, Meng Wan had a disbelieving expression on her face as she looked at those two massive masses of qi once more.

Those two masses of black and white qi began revolving about a certain fixed point amidst space.

Streaks of light surged from them as the Four Grands Earlier Heaven Flag similarly trembled up above.

As the light grew more and more brilliant, the shaking of the Four Grands Earlier Heaven Flag grew increasingly evident.

When the light had attained its maximum radiance, both the masses of qi gradually expanded.

Vast purple qi surged in all directions from both of them, instantly suffusing a vast area.

The two purple oceans of cloud qi extended unceasingly into the distance, a vacuum forming between them as they were clearly and distinctly in opposition to each other.

The shaking of the Four Grands Earlier Heaven Flag was even

more evident and intense up above.

Gazing over, Yan Zhaoge and Meng Wan saw a figure appear at the centre of each of the two seas of cloud qi.

One of them was garbed in white, while the other was garbed in black.

Both their appearances were exactly the same as they differed in no way whatsoever.

They were both extraordinarily handsome and elegant, being none other than the Brocade Emperor.

Two Brocade Emperors, a white-clothed one and a black-clothed one, appeared before Yan Zhaoge and Meng Wan.

The two Brocade Emperors were both stationary with their eyes closed, neither speaking nor moving.

Gazing at such an incredible scene, Meng Wan was left completely at a loss for words.

She looked at Yan Zhaoge who shook his head, "Wait. Don't approach them first."

The earlier great battle had stirred up the Nine Underworlds greatly, drawing many evil Devils of the Nine Underworlds over.

Some of them with violent temperaments and irrational consciousnesses were already lunging over.

Within the purple seas of clouds, though the two Brocade Emperors still had their eyes closed, they simultaneously made a move.

The exact same action, the exact same time. Both their right palms waved outwards with a flourish.

Instantly, formless blades seemed to slice through the world, chopping all the incoming devils of the Nine Underworlds in two!

Lacking in great devils that were comparable to human experts of



the Immortal realm, the remaining devils beat a hasty retreat as they saw this.

And now, the two Brocade Emperors opened their eyes in unison.

# Table of Contents

## [History's Strongest Senior Brother](#)

[Synopsis](#)

[Copyright](#)

[HSSB 1001: Yan Di](#)

[HSSB 1002: The momentum lies with me, I am unstoppable](#)

[HSSB 1003: Humans versus Immortals](#)

[HSSB 1004: The imperious embryonic Immortal Artifact](#)

[HSSB 1005: Dim Radiant Twelve Arts](#)

[HSSB 1006: Ten great Sacred Artifacts](#)

[HSSB 1007: A newly ascended legend or a fleeting shooting star](#)

[HSSB 1008: The Yan Family's wives](#)

[HSSB 1009: Martial Saint retainer](#)

[HSSB 1010: A terrifying person](#)

[HSSB 1011: Seventh level of the Martial Saint realm, early Immortal Bridge stage](#)

[HSSB 1012: Official opening ceremony, Broad Creed Mountain gives invitations](#)

[HSSB 1013: The Exalts return](#)

[HSSB 1014: The phoenix weeps blood](#)

[HSSB 1015: Seeking assistance](#)

[HSSB 1016: Unprecedented event in the Royal Reed Sea](#)

[HSSB 1017: A big stage, I like it](#)

[HSSB 1018: A visitor, Earthly Young Master](#)

[HSSB 1019: Young Chief Yan and Second Young Master Chen](#)

[HSSB 1020: Even without me, my legend lives on](#)

[HSSB 1021: Everything rests on today](#)

[HSSB 1022: Broad Creed Mountain's opening ceremony](#)

[HSSB 1023: Six Exalts gather at Broad Creed Mountain](#)

[HSSB 1024: Some things can and cannot be done](#)

[HSSB 1025: Battle of Human Exalts](#)

[HSSB 1026: Immortal Bridge VS Human Exalt](#)

[HSSB 1027: Sabre breaking yin yang cleaving Red Sea](#)

[HSSB 1028: Palm pressuring heaven earth suppressing fiery phoenix](#)

[HSSB 1029: Skill shocking an Exalt!](#)

[HSSB 1030: Taiyi Fist](#)

[HSSB 1031: The beaten phoenix](#)

[HSSB 1032: The Heaven Emperor descends](#)

[HSSB 1033: The focal point of the battlefield](#)  
[HSSB 1034: The river flows again](#)  
[HSSB 1035: The most impossible figure appears](#)  
[HSSB 1036: Yan Zhaoge's counterattack](#)  
[HSSB 1037: Earth Mother Dao Ritual, Later Earth Text!](#)  
[HSSB 1038: Stomping on the shoulders of an Emperor](#)  
[HSSB 1039: The arrogant, domineering Yan Zhaoge](#)  
[HSSB 1040: A Human Exalt as a junior apprentice-nephew](#)  
[HSSB 1041: Not just a single great backer!](#)  
[HSSB 1042: So what if we are overbearing!](#)  
[HSSB 1043: An Exalt perishes](#)  
[HSSB 1044: Father and son, Duo Fallen Deities they are](#)  
[HSSB 1045: Gradually becoming the well-deserved East Peak of Daoism](#)  
[HSSB 1046: Shallow water cannot sustain true dragons](#)  
[HSSB 1047: Kunlun's God Shocking Dragon, Youth Enlightening Eight Sects](#)  
[HSSB 1048: Geniuses of Daoism](#)  
[HSSB 1049: The reason behind seeking to capture Xue Chuqing](#)  
[HSSB 1050: Millennia old secret](#)  
[HSSB 1051: To, Kunlun Mountain!](#)  
[HSSB 1052: Things still aren't over yet](#)  
[HSSB 1053: Head of the Ten Exalts](#)  
[HSSB 1054: Because I find it interesting](#)  
[HSSB 1055: Where it all began](#)  
[HSSB 1056: Scheming while fleeing](#)  
[HSSB 1057: A deep valley within Kunlun Mountain](#)  
[HSSB 1058: Affecting the entire World beyond Worlds](#)  
[HSSB 1059: Arms dealer Yan Zhaoge](#)  
[HSSB 1060: Hidden Sea Sword, Wind Thunder Manor](#)  
[HSSB 1061: Conquest](#)  
[HSSB 1062: Skills suppressing all around](#)  
[HSSB 1063: A Fallen Deity who pointlessly dabbles in everything](#)  
[HSSB 1064: Amongst thousands, two have sailed](#)  
[HSSB 1065: The compromised Emperor](#)  
[HSSB 1066: Difficult to identify as friend or foe](#)  
[HSSB 1067: The dead are departed](#)  
[HSSB 1068: A meeting long overdue](#)  
[HSSB 1069: The madman whose actions are hard to predict](#)  
[HSSB 1070: The Brocade Emperor descends to the Eight Extremities World](#)  
[HSSB 1071: Thoughts regarding the Sacred Sun Clan?](#)

[HSSB 1072: Feng Yunsheng's whereabouts](#)  
[HSSB 1073: True problem](#)  
[HSSB 1074: Fulfilling another's wishes](#)  
[HSSB1075: Fallen Deity VS Heavenly Young Master](#)  
[HSSB1076: Do whatever you want. If I change my technique, I lose](#)  
[HSSB1077: Like swatting a fly](#)  
[HSSB1078: Superior in all aspects](#)  
[HSSB1079: Grand Longevity Banner](#)  
[HSSB1080: The fun in swatting flies](#)  
[HSSB1081: Dense Encompassing Emperor](#)  
[HSSB1082: Land of tranquil stream](#)  
[HSSB1083: Grand Illusory Spatial Thunder](#)  
[HSSB1084: Searching the Nine Underworlds](#)  
[HSSB1085: Sword God, Sword Devil](#)  
[HSSB1086: Twelve Devilish Gods](#)  
[HSSB1087: The peak of the Devils](#)  
[HSSB1088: The dead Emperor of the devilish dao](#)  
[HSSB1089: A light burning after death, abstruse mysteries left through millennia](#)  
[HSSB1090: Feng Yunsheng's message](#)  
[HSSB1091: Eighth level of the Martial Saint realm, mid Immortal Bridge stage](#)  
[HSSB1092: Sovereign of the Immortal Court](#)  
[HSSB1093: A venomous tiger eats not its offspring?](#)  
[HSSB1094: Gigantic black Buddha!](#)  
[HSSB1095: The real ace up Yan Zhaoge's sleeve](#)  
[HSSB1096: Two madmen are worse than one](#)  
[HSSB1097: Being surprised by others](#)  
[HSSB1098: The same method once more](#)  
[HSSB1099: Strong exterior, weak interior](#)  
[HSSB1100: Yin and yang of Taiji, black and white Brocade Emperors](#)